

## ATHEIST ENGINEER DISCOVERS EVIDENCE GOD'S REAL!

My successful life as an 11-year atheist turned empty and meaningless, putting me into a nosedive toward suicide. What evidence saved me to find a joyful, purposeful life?

Tom L. Hodges 12/02/11 (Rev. 7/25/19)

My liberation from atheism is presented as percentages of an aircraft's blind, but hopeful, climb up through the dark, heavy, overcast of doubt into bright sunshine!

### Objectives:

1. That our Lord may use His evidence to lovingly point skeptics towards Heaven.
2. To better equip Christians to share their faith without fear among skeptics.
3. To encourage those considering a missionary career by learning how God overcame this 53-year missionary veteran couple's greatest fear before entering training: **"Who'd support us?"**  
Click [here](#) to jump to Chapter 6: **'Called to missions! Who, Us?'**

**You needn't read every page! Over 70% of this book is optional appendices, etc.** accessed by 'jumps' to what you find interesting! A left click on [blue bolded underlined](#) text will take you there. *ONLINE VERSION return from jumps require you to enter your jump page number on the toolbar in 'current page'. DOWNLOAD VERSION return is more precise, See [PDF Download.](#)*

[Evidence backed by science](#), not 'touchy-feely' religious opinions, prove the Bible is God's word and that [Jesus did rise from the dead on the third day](#), validating all His claims!

[Author's 'Fast Track' Testimony: Six Questions Light My Way](#) 

[What's New and Some Highlights](#) **In a hurry?** [Three-Minute Overview of This Book](#)

[Skeptic 'Fast Track'](#) answer dozens of hard questions about God and document scientific evidence for intelligent creation as opposed to accidental evolution. (Includes atheists and other doubters.)

['Reasons'](#) why we all need God, followed by how we can know if we're heading for Heaven one day. **Surprise!** It's not by trying our best to be good or by church attendance!

**NOTES:** *You'll find some repeats of important information since jumps allow you to skip around and not read every page. Some new material may not yet be fully proofed.*

**Jump to:** [Table of Contents](#)



The author at a summer airshow with the same types of intercept and missile guidance radars in the F3D, F3H, and F4H jets which he helped engineer for the Navy.

Below: The USS Ranger, steaming under the Golden Gate Bridge, was the home of the author's squadron, VF-92, the 'Silver Kings'.



**Note:** I don't expect everyone to fully understand every detail of scientific evidence supporting God's existence. I do expect readers to understand that nature's astronomically complex designs are so far beyond the capability of man or accidental evolution, that they demand a divine Creator. (Some evidence, not available years ago during my search, is included to enhance your search for God.)

### PDF Download

**IF PDF TOOL BAR IS INVISIBLE:** Full screen, click anywhere to show Tool Bar for download to your Kindle, iPhone, etc.. Older PDFs require you to hover over lower center screen.

**Downloaded PDF: If ALT + LEFT ARROW fail to take you back to the 'jump' line,** click text to restore focus and retry. If that fails, Windows is calling 'Edge' to read PDFs instead of 'Adobe'. For a fix, click: [Help With Jumps and URLs](#). Otherwise, use the same return from jumps used in the online version: **Note** jump page before jumping. **Jump. To return,** enter the jump page number into the PDF 'current page' on the toolbar. It will take you back to the jump page.

**INTERNET URLs:** You may go directly to an Internet site URL, like <https://crev.info> with just a left mouse click. A few sites require you to *copy or type the URL into your Internet browser*. *Reminder: Links with an @ symbol are emails so you must copy or enter an email address.*

**Suggestions, questions, and corrections welcomed:** [EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com](mailto:EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com).

\*\*\*\*\*

### WHAT'S NEW and SOME HIGHLIGHTS

(Reminder: bold blue underlined words are clickable jumps. ALT +Left Arrow to return)

- **In a Hurry?** ~[Three-Minute Overview of This Book!](#) Jumps take you to more.
- **New [Appendix H: "I'm a skeptic/atheist because ..."](#)**. Seven Basic Types: including one who became an atheist because of Santa Claus!
- **Jewish?** Click [here](#). Jim Jacob, a prominent Jewish lawyer, presents evidence both pro and con for Yeshua's resurrection. Decide for yourself.
- **[Evolution 'Thought Bomb'](#):** Could one question blow evolution out of the water?
- **[Skeptic/atheist 'Fast Track'](#)**  
"Why should anyone care about believing in an unseen God? Aren't scientists too intelligent to believe in God and a hereafter? Doesn't the existence of evil disprove a loving God?" You'll also find answers to 36 skeptic/atheist questions here!  
→If you like online videos, you'll enjoy **[The Atheist Delusion](#)** <sup>96</sup> (15 million viewers) which was created to rebut probably the most widely read atheist 'manifesto' in the world: **[The God Delusion](#)** by Richard Dawkins!
- **[DNA Computer](#)** is 1,782 times smarter than man-made computers!
- **[Five Steps to Finding God's Real, Based on His Promise of Jeremiah 29:13](#)**
- **[Does Formal Logic Disprove God? Evil and Suffering? No absolute truth?](#)**
- **[More Skeptic's Questions Answered \(36!\) Short Videos](#)** <sup>78, 96, Y</sup>, **Super Answers!**
- **[The Premier Site](#)** for Examining the Latest Discoveries in Evolution: Fossils, biology, origins, geology, and a great mini-logic course: 'Baloney Detector'!
- **[Who is God that I should obey Him?](#)** Five reasons, followed by, 'If there's a Heaven, then [how good must I be?](#)'
- **[More evidence validating the Bible as God's Word! Our calendar validates Jesus](#)**



- **Evolution: Dates**, why 'scientific' dates of millions of years cannot be trusted. The '**evolution preventer**' in our cells.
- **Intelligent design of our universe is both observable and testable. Evolution is not. Earth moves 9 directions at once. Human body functions incredible!**
- **UMPIRE (Mr. Science): 1, 2, 3 STRIKES! Evolution, 'Yer Out'!** (Click: **more**)
- **Earth** hurtles through space at incredible speed in nine directions! An **amazing** sun!
- **Seeking Allah, finding Jesus.** Testimony of how a Muslim evolutionist found Christ.
- **Forgiving** those who hurt you: Why? What is forgiveness? How? Outstanding examples.
- **Fantastic 'Romans 8:28' Results From a Shooting**
- Improvements were made in **Appendix B** (suffering) and **Appendix E** (Christian soldier's '**Steps to Holy Courage Born of Faith**', **Vets: Share Christ the 'Fun Way'** and **Help those with Combat Veteran's PTSD.** Also see the improved **Christ's Bell.**
- **Share Jesus Without Fear:** a witnessing New Testament with answers to 36 objections. <sup>97</sup>
- New brief humorous illustrations: **Sherlock Holmes** and **red-neck Romans 8:28!**
- Author's free testimony leaflet, **ATHEIST ENGINEER'S FLIGHT TOWARD SUICIDE.**

**How to plant a delightful spiritual garden!**

('Jump' links are provided to bypass technical details if desired.)

\*\*\*\*\*

**My Former Atheist's View of Life: 'Reverse Thinking'**

*When read top to bottom, this narrative is an excellent description of my previous 11 years as a lost, indifferent, 'free', but miserable atheist.*

-----  
I will live my life according to these beliefs

**God does not exist**

It is just foolish to think

That there is a God with a cosmic plan

That an all-powerful God brings purpose to pain and suffering in the world

It's a comforting thought, however

but it's only wishful thinking

People can do as they please without eternal consequences

The idea that

I am deserving of Hell

Because of sin

Is a lie meant to make me a slave to those in power

**"The more you have, the happier you will be";**

Our existence has no grand meaning or purpose

In a world with no God

There is freedom to be who I want to be

But with God

Everything is fine

It is ridiculous to think

I am lost and in need of saving

-----  
Now read this backwards, bottom to top, left to right.

Watch the flower in this video of Reverse Thinking as it's read backwards!

<http://www.dvmfilm.com/shop/4idr89zssacems981dy4xrct45iwue>)

By kind permission of David D. Dietrich, <http://www.dvmfilm.com/blog>.

=====

### DEDICATIONS

**To Irene, my wonderful wife** whose support and love have encouraged me for 56 years. Fifty three of those years have been enjoyed together in missionary service in three countries.

**To the memory of my patient, praying mother**, who lived an exemplary Christian life despite much heartache, physical suffering, and privation. She lived to see Proverbs 22:6 fulfilled in the life of her atheist son (me) who was later blessed to serve as a missionary. Mom was always my number one encourager. She also encouraged many others like this stressed mother of a brain-damaged child. <sup>A</sup>

**To Marine Corporal Stevens**, with whom I served in 1955. He lived such a courageous Christian life in a hostile environment that he became a 'living letter from Christ' to me that I didn't really 'read' until eight years later! (2 Corinthians 3:2 LB) After over 61 years, Stevens still has no idea of the great effect his zeal and faithfulness had upon me. My utmost gratitude and blessings to you, Corporal Stevens, wherever you are. I look forward to meeting you in Heaven one day.

**To the memory of Rev. Ben Munroe**, former pastor of a great Oxnard (CA) church. His patience answering a jillion questions about God and the loan of helpful books in 1962 were instrumental in helping me to find Christ. We're so thankful that he had baptized and nurtured my wife Irene for around two years before I arrived. We're also very grateful for the spiritual help, encouragement, and nurturing by so many of the members of this church to whom we are deeply indebted, especially to the Azbells, counsellors for the College-Career class of 1962, and Lamar Houser, leader of our class, who 34 years later encouraged me to enter Bible translation technology!

**To Joy Rosenfeld**, a fellow missionary, whose encouragement and persistence encouraged the writing of this book in 2011. (My serious auto accident was the final 'nudge'.)

=====

### → ~THREE-MINUTE OVERVIEW \*: *Scientific Evidence God is Real, Jesus powerfully validated, and how I discovered all this to be true!*

1. **INTELLIGENT DESIGN**, evident in our whole universe, mightily proclaims a Creator-God! *Super-colossal complexity* of life disproves accidental evolution. Evolution brazenly defies the proven mathematics of probability, as microbiologist Dr. Frank Coppedge and others demonstrate. ([More](#)) *Mathematical precision of enormously complex intelligent design is seen in the DNA of all life.* ([More](#)) *Add fantastic predictability of astronomy.* ([More](#))

*Evolution has never been proven but became 'fact' in schools by replacing the Bible during the sexual revolution of the '60s.*

**Umpire (science):  $E=mc^2$ , Periodic Table, Atoms!**

**"Three strikes! Evolution, 'yer out'!** ([More](#)) and **22 More reasons**)

2. **A CONSCIENCE:** *the 'receiver' to hear God's voice to know right from wrong, is given to even the heathen in far off jungles.* <sup>1</sup> *This, plus God's handiwork, our universe, leaves us without excuse to deny His existence. (Romans 2:14,15, Romans 1:20)*
3. **JESUS' MIRACLES, PLUS RESURRECTION, PROVE HE WAS UNIQUELY SENT BY GOD.** *After crucifixion, He was speared, buried, and rose the third day, prophesied by Scripture over 700 years before, which was verified by the Dead Sea Scrolls.* ([More](#) and [More](#))

- 4. **HOW I DISCOVERED ALL THE ABOVE IS TRUE: Author's 'Fast Tract' Testimony** several lines below. ([More](#)) for full testimony.
- 5. **SKEPTIC'S 'FAST TRACK':** Followed by answers to 36 hard questions: Why does God permit evil and suffering? How could a loving God send people to hell?, etc.. ([More](#))
- 6. **ULTIMATE PURPOSE of OUR BRIEF EARTHLY LIFE:** To know God through the love and forgiveness of Jesus Christ that we may enjoy God's love forever in Heaven. Though most of us don't feel we're evil enough to suffer God's eternal wrath, yet we're also not good enough to deserve His Heaven either! How good would we have to be? Click [here](#).

While on earth, we may store up eternal treasures of everlasting joy in Heaven and enjoy God's presence forever. If we also become 'ministers of reconciliation', we can help bring lost loved ones, and others, with us! This life is only a '[stepping stone](#)' (←click) to the eternal one God has planned for us: '[fullness of joy and pleasures forevermore](#)'! (Matthew 6:10, 2 Corinthians 5:14-21. Psalm; 16:11). ([More](#))

'Hear' our amazing 'position and possessions' we are gifted in Christ: 'Ring' **Christ's Bell** by clicking [here](#).



(\*About three minutes reading time without taking jumps.)

\*\*\*\*\*

## T A B L E o f C O N T E N T S

If you're in a hurry, a *Three Minute Overview* of this book is available just above this section. The **Author's 'Fast Track' Testimony** is below.

We invite your comments, corrections, or questions: [EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com](mailto:EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com)

=====

### HELP WITH JUMPS AND URLS...191.

→**SKEPTICS, LET'S EXPLORE!** (Click [here](#): Jumps to APPENDIX A for preview below, then from there, jump down to the 'FAST Track'.)

→**AUTHOR'S 'FAST TRACK' TESTIMONY:**

**Six Questions Light my Way from Atheism to  Christ! ..... 91.**

=====

### **1. PRE-FLIGHT ..... 10.**

- My life's in a mess, heading towards suicide ● **Impossible Pie!**
- How can we know God's love? ● God's Recall: Acronyms for S.I.N. and B.I.B.L.E.
- What if the 'bad' is just too good to give up?

### **2. THE FLIGHT ..... 12.**

- Nearly 'crashed on takeoff' in the church parking lot! ● Successful field engineer for the Navy, but ... ● God's new 'flight plan' I *ignored for eight years*
- Corporal Stevens, a '[living letter](#)' from Christ ● A pastor told me, "[Find the answers for yourself!](#)" *Life without God is like an unsharpened pencil – no point!*



### **3. PENETRATING HEAVY OVERCAST of DOUBT but ONLY to 99% ..... 16.**

**Evidence search** as percentages of an aircraft climbing through overcast.

- To 30% - **Evolution, is it true?:**
  - Not proven! **22 reasons!** Did Darwin 'cheat' by starting evolution with an already evolved creature? His own 'fossil-series' proof is also still missing after ~160 years!
  - **Why a few 'missing links' do not prove evolution.**
  - **Dates of 'millions of years'** are invalid; they're based on unprovable assumptions.
  - Is there evidence for a younger earth only thousands of years old?
  - **Two noted atheistic scientists, Crick and Sagan, proved evolution impossible! HOW and WHY? Click [here](#).**
  - **927 prominent scientists, religious and non-religious, who reject evolution** for purely scientific reasons at this citation! <sup>82</sup>
  - **Ralph Muncaster, a 15-year 'hard-core' atheist, 'dismantles' evolution.** [u](#)
  - **Self-creation of our universe (without a God) can never be proven** because data before 'Planck time' is meaningless. Why? More [here](#) and in **Appendix F-1**.
  - **And where did that come from? Who made God? Evolutionary trickery ...**
  - **Can science alone prove God? Disprove Him? I found out; read on.**
- To 50% - **Scientific Evidence:**
  - [Sherlock Holmes vignette](#) & how your home proves God exists.
  - Leading scientists who documented evidence for a real God.
  - **UMPIRE (Mr. Science): 1, 2, 3 STRIKES! Evolution, 'Yer Out!' Click [here](#).**
  - Einstein's  $E = mc^2$  is simple but powerful evidence for intelligent creation!  
*'Light-speed ruler'* that reveals an incredibly vast universe, atoms are miniature solar systems, nature's cycles, and spectacular bird migrations.
  - **Tekkie Candy:** Einstein's greatest blunder!
- To 55% - **Justice:** The lack of real justice in this world helped point me to an afterlife.
- To 75% - **Bible:** proofs of authenticity from the ancient **Dead Sea Scrolls**, laws of the mathematical probability of prophecy, choosing death over denial, and **'Living evidence':** Lives transformed, including 5,000 from three cannibal tribes!
  - Are modern Jewish sin sacrifices still acceptable to God? If not, Why?
  - **445 Year-Old Prophecy of Messiah's first coming within two days, verified by NASA!**
  - Atheist Josh McDowell sought evidence to debunk Bible. Evidence proved the opposite!
  - How do we know prophecies were not written after the event (a cheat)?
  - More evidence includes the biblical corroboration by other ancient manuscripts.
  - How about the considerable time gap between gospel events and their documentation?
  - Why so many modern translations? Which is the right one?
- ◆ To 99% - **Finding powerful evidence of Jesus' resurrection.**
  - **IF you're Jewish**, click [here](#) for a Jewish lawyer's analysis, pro and con; you decide.
  - **Why must you believe in Jesus' resurrection in order to make it to Heaven?**
  - Even Jesus' own disciples didn't believe He'd return from the dead until He appeared to them for 40 days afterwards.
  - Earthquake, non-eclipse darkness, cemetery of people resurrected but not as 'zombies'
  - Spooky happenings in the Jewish temple for 40 years following Jesus' resurrection recorded in the Jewish Talmud. <sup>62</sup>
  - **Five atheists** and **Eight Scientists** who just followed the evidence that proved Jesus' resurrection. Lee Strobel, former 15-year atheist, cites nine sources verifying Jesus' resurrection, from both inside and outside the Bible.

### **4. SURPRISING FINAL 1% to BREAK-THROUGH INTO SUNNY SKIES! ..47.**

- **What right does God have to tell us how to live our lives?** ● Still 'fence-sitting'?
- Why scientific evidence alone is insufficient to know God ● Three 'Do-Overs' after death Reincarnation and the Bridey Murphy hoax? Fly now, pay later? Yank 'Mobster Mugsie' out of hell right into Heaven without repentance? ● HOW good must we be for Heaven?
- **OMG** = Three Stooges-type eye poke at God ♥ For God so loved ... Me! ● Guilty, convicted, but set free ● A new day dawns ● How I learned to resist temptation: the 'Three-Step **SSR** Rapid Response': **SEE IT, SMASH IT, RE-SEIZE CONTROL**
- **SURPRISE! Everyone already has eternal life in 'smoking' or 'non-smoking'!**

## **5. THE MYSTERY of the AGES – DISCOVERED! ..... 57.**

- **Our ultimate purpose for existing** ● Real fulfillment ● *Billy Graham's faith wavered, seriously: how he recovered.* ● Parachute example for unanswered questions ● Christians are God's workmanship, therefore our prayer at the beginning of each day should be: "Lord, may I and the work that I will do for You today be *shimmering reflections* of Your handiwork!" (Ephesians 2:10)



## **6. CALLED to MISSIONS! WHO, US? ..... 59.**

- Who was the 'mystery beauty' who nearly ran over me at church? ● Crisis Decision!
- The Call ● Whoops! Another major problem ● Who'd want to support us?
- Failure: God's opportunity ● God's miracle ● Overseas but discouraged, ready to quit
- New exciting call to Bible translation technology! ● The three-fingered cloud
- 'Gift of gratitude' for Speech Analyzer which helped crack an extremely difficult tonal language making Bible translation possible for the Dhao, a remote Pacific island tribe.

## **GLOSSARY of BASIC CHRISTIAN TERMS ..... 73.**

## **APPENDIX A: ..... 75.**

### **Skeptic 'Fast Track':**

- Seven types of skeptics/atheists with an in-depth reply for each. Includes Peter Hitchens, a former raging, Bible-burning atheist. Does evil prove there's no God? Does science render Him unnecessary? Santa made me an atheist! (true testimony). **Lost a loved one whose spiritual condition was not clear?** More.
- Brief recap of basic evidence for God.
- Skeptic/atheist response: three choices and what's next for each.
- Satan's 'Monkey Trap' for those clinging to their sins.
- **Answers** to 36 skeptic/atheist-type questions.
- **Five Steps to finding God's Real and Begin Following Christ**



### **More Skeptic's Questions Answered**

- Who made God? ● Why should I obey Him?
- What's wrong with 'Eat, Drink, and be Merry'? ● *Why would a 'loving' God send people to hell? Allow evil?* ● Don't all intelligent people believe there's no absolute truth? ● What's the evidence the Bible is the Word of God? ● Is faith just a 'blind leap into the dark'? ● **Religion, just a crutch that causes most wars?** ● Hypocrites
- Which is the right religion? ● How can a 'believer' in 'god' be a de-facto atheist? (If it quacks like a duck ...) ● 'Theistic evolutionists' like Einstein, and others?
- What happens when you hold a grudge? (Worse than you think!)
- →Have you broken the 11<sup>th</sup> Commandment? ● Does our calendar testify of Jesus?

### **Author's 'Fast Track' Testimony:**

**Six Questions Light my Way from Atheism to Christ! ..... 90.**

## **APPENDIX B: Answers to Hard Questions ..... 94.**

**Why Would a 'Good' God Throw Good People into Hell?  
Not Destroy Evil? Not Stop Suffering? Allow Natural Disasters?  
Where Was God? Forgiveness! Claiming God's Promises  
Guaranteed answers to all your 'Why God? questions'.**

- The stone mason ● **Where was God?** ● It's OK to hate the God you think let you down:
- **SUPER ANT** ● Angry at God? ● Why forgive! ● **How do we forgive?**
- **Fantastic 'Romans 8:28' Results From Shooting**
- Missionary Vic Ramsay: "Dear God, I resign!" ● Nick Vujicic: no arms or legs but lots of faith ● **Contrast:** how Darwin and my friend Ted handled the deaths of their daughters.
- Six stages of grief ● Lost loved ones you're not sure went to Heaven? ● **Why? Why now?**
- **'If only ... whining'** versus **Hope** in Romans 8:28 ● *Billy Graham's faith wavered and how he recovered* ● Conditions for answered prayer; God's timing ● The bridge to trusting God's promises ● Friends Whose Trials Prepared Them to Help Others
- **Suffering summary, 7 reasons**  
Don't have **all** the answers? Like a parachutist, **pull the ripcord, get answers later!**  
Faith isn't about everything turning out OK. It's about being OK no matter what!  
**'Red-Neck' version of Romans 8:28**

**APPENDIX C: More Answers to Hard Question: ..... 115.**  
**Hate God? Does Formal Logic Disprove God?**  
**Evil and Suffering Diagram**  
**Oxford Professors' Evidence of God's Moral Law,**  
**Can Evil Men Frustrate God's Ultimate Plans?**  
**Did God Commit Genocide?**

- Refuting the **'There's no God silly syllogism'** of college 'geniuses'
- **Evil and Suffering Diagram** ● **No absolute truth or morals?**
- **How does the existence of evil prove God and reject atheism?** (Click [here](#))
- God's ultimate purposes will not be frustrated by evil men ● **Amazing conversions** and reconciliation of an American bombardier and the leader of the planes that bombed Pearl Harbor in 1941.
- Did God commit genocide?

**APPENDIX D: Benefits of Atheism vs Benefits of Christianity ..... 122.**

- 'Benefits' of atheism ● Benefits of Christianity ● What Christians are missing by not being atheists and vice versa. ● The power of God's word in Peru: **headhunting Chief finds Christ**, stops headhunting, evangelizes neighboring tribes!

**APPENDIX E: Discovering, Following, and Maturing in Christ..... 125.**  
**Why Should We Even Care about God?**

- Most common reason: "I'm a good person. Why do I need God?"  
Short answer: **No one** is perfect. **Everyone** dies. **No one** deserves God's Heaven, then ...

**KNOW You're Going to Heaven One Day, Though No One Deserves it!**

**How to Mature in Christ: The Christian Soldier Model**

- 'Words and Music': you can't live perfectly every day but Jesus doesn't give up on us.

**Christian Soldiers Help Bring the Spiritually Dead Back to Life!**

- How to follow Christ modelled after the Roman soldier of Ephesians 6
- **Share Jesus without fear:** witnessing New Testament: answers to 36 objections. <sup>97</sup>
- **Veterans: 'Fun Witnessing'** and victory over **PTSD's I.A.M.** plus helpful resources.



- Why your teen needs an *Apologetics Study Bible for Students* before going off to college.

## **APPENDIX F-1: Our Universe: Intelligent or Un-Intelligent Creation? ... 140.**

- How vast is our universe? 3,000 YEARS to count stars in only one galaxy of billions!
- Evolution, still unproven, is an alternate 'god'!

### **DID OUR UNIVERSE EVOLVE? Quick Facts:**

- **How can evolution be a fact: only around 4% of our universe is understood by scientists?**
- **Did our universe 'self-create' by Quantum Fluctuation?**  
Rebutted by the 'Eye of God' (right) and a major **gotcha**!
- **Simplest intelligent creation evidence, Your house exists and is quite complex.** *Designer and builder required; not accidents. Our universe exists, infinitely complex. *Divine designer and builder required!**
- **Reasons why very old evolutionary dates cannot be trusted.**



Much more below including the Higgs Boson, and other evidence.

### **> DID LIFE EVOLVE?**

- **Noted atheistic scientists, Crick and Sagan, prove evolution impossible! More**
- **927 prominent scientists, religious and non-religious, who reject evolution for purely scientific reasons!**
- EVOLUTION'S NOT A PROVEN FACT; IT'S A WISH THERE'S NO ACCOUNTABILITY TO GOD!
- **22 reasons Why Evolution of Life Cannot Be a Fact.**
- **Has evolution been good or bad for society?**  
Slavery, racism, and genocide: spinoffs of Darwin's 'survival of the fittest'.

## **APPENDIX F-2: Amazing Complexity of Life Proves Divine Creation! .... 168.**

- Did this cow's world map appear through a series of accidents?  
How about the infinitely more complex cow?
- **Darwin's challenge:** "If you could show ... then my theory would absolutely break down. "Mr. Darwin, here's our answer with '**shock and awe**' scientific evidence of intelligent, not accidental, evolution".
  - **EVOLUTION 'THOUGHT BOMB'!**
  - Could life have created itself by random chemical evolution?
  - **Evolutionary accident or intelligent design? How do we decide?**
  - **12 QUICK FACTS:** strongest, clearest, miraculous evidence of intelligent creation are in your own heart, blood, kidneys, liver, eye, DNA, and ATP!
  - **DNA: 'God's fingerprint' in every single life form on earth! 'Evolution preventer' in our DNA as well as an amazing 'Divine Proportion' ratio of 1.618!**
  - **Two noted atheistic scientists prove evolution impossible! Click here.**
  - **23-page list of 927 scientists, even non-religious, who reject evolution.**
  - **How a microbiologist computed the probability of a single gene evolving.**
  - **Knockout blows** to 'evolution by mutation', modern evolution's 'poster child'.



## **APPENDIX G: Similarity of our DNA to Chimps, Bananas, and Mice ..... 182.**

- Human DNA is 60% identical to bananas and chickens, 90% identical to mice! Go figure!
- Music in our DNA • **xDNA:** artificial DNA to create humans (or monsters) to order?
- **DNA computer** is 1,782 times smarter than man-made computer! ..... 184.

## **APPENDIX H: "I'm a skeptic/atheist because ..." Basic Types..... 185.**

**We ask unbelievers why they don't believe. Here are answers.**

**How to Plant a Delightful Spiritual Garden!..... 194.**

**Christians:** Be encouraged by 'ringing' Christ's Bell. You'll be emboldened by the amazing position and possessions we enjoy in Christ! (Click [here](#).)



Atheists and skeptics: sorry, these 'perks' in Christ's Bell are only for Christians but we'd invite you to also 'ring the bell' and see what you're missing!

**EVIDENCE RESOURCES (color-coded by category) ..... 196.**

**Some YouTube videos and interesting reviews of these sources may encourage you to just browse.**

**Evidence for evolution: is it credible?**

**Evidence for the Bible: is it God's word?**

**Evidence for Jesus' resurrection: did it happen?**

**Combination of the above or a different subject.**

**ADDITIONAL RESOURCES ..... 213.**

**Bible questions answered and other helps online**

**PHOTO and OTHER CREDITS ..... 218.**

\*\*\*\*\*

**1. PRE-FLIGHT**

*God specially created only one just like you.  
He loves you and wants to be part of your life:  
"Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden,  
and I will give you rest." (Matthew 11:28)*



**IMPOSSIBLE PIE.** Before finding God, my life was just like some of yours: somewhat like that whipped-up goo in the first part of the recipe for 'impossible pie'. One mixes up all ingredients for the filling and the crust in the same bowl. It's a disordered, confused, useless, mess. But when it's baked, all falls into place. The crust sinks to the bottom and the filling rises to the top! In the same way, I personally found that life only makes real sense in the long run, as part of God's 'recipe' for our future with Him.

For the hard-headed and stubborn like me, God had to allow me to 'nosedive' from the heights of success in engineering into suicidal depression, an empty life that alcohol, philosophy, and even 'religion' couldn't fill. He loved me too much to just ignore me as I had ignored Him for so many years. However, through God's abundant mercy I was literally 'reborn to a living hope' by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead. (1 Peter 1:3) My life's transformation is very well summed up in the words of this great song. 'When life was shattered and all hope was gone, He gave me something more than wealth and fame (which I had). He gave me something worth living for!' <http://www.bensonsound.com/lyrics/1434.htm>

As I ignored God, I noticed that my sin was relentlessly dragging me down. Down into deeper levels of sin and its inevitable consequences, both here on earth and ultimately in a place that Jesus called, 'the furnace of fire' of eternal suffering. I had to learn the hard way that *sin will take you farther than you intended to go, keep you for longer than you wished to stay, and make you pay more than you intended to pay. Worse, you may become involved in some sin*

*making you vulnerable to blackmail. Not only being forced to pay your blackmailer(s) the rest of your life, but being forced to commit serious crimes for him/her. Then comes the inevitable temptation to kill your blackmailer(s) to stop it. I praise the Lord that never happened to me but it has happened to others.*



**A monkey trap** used by jungle dwellers is a good illustration of the consequences of *'sin too good to give up'*. The trap consists of a large heavy clay jar with an enticing banana inside. But the jar has a very narrow mouth so the monkey will grab the banana but cannot withdraw his hand unless he lets go of the banana. That's usually too late, and he becomes the 'guest of honor' at the next 'monkey roast'!

In a similar way, Satan entices us with sin which after a while often seems just 'too good' to let go. We are then his 'prisoner-puppets' because we have literally '**sold our souls**' to him as Jesus points out in Matthew 16:26. Satan then delights in tormenting us by letting us reap the bitter fruit of our sin, both in this life and in eternity.

Many call a life of sin '**freedom**'. In reality, it's being enslaved by Satan who, while giving you temporary pleasure, delights in the fact that though you can 'fly now', you'll 'pay later' — big time! Only Christ can set us free from Satan's strangle hold. I learned that to ignore God has dire consequences, both in this life and in the eternal life to come. Every one of us already has eternal life, either in Heaven or the other place that needs 'air conditioning'! I had no idea how much God loved me nor the depths of happiness that could be mine if I gave my life to God who I would learn later promised '**fullness of joy and pleasures forevermore**'. (Psalm 16:11)

If there did happen to be a real Heaven, then this epitaph would be my 'Plan B'.

*A zealous locksmith died of late and did arrive at Heaven's gate.*

*He stood without and did not knock, because he meant to pick the lock. 😊*

*(W.C. Fields was an actor from the '30s and '40s, who usually played a cynical, drunken, child-hating character. Fields, caught reading the Bible one day said, "I'm looking for a loophole!" In my opinion, I believe his epitaph gives us the results of his unsuccessful search:*

*"I'd rather be in Philadelphia.") 😞*

Come with me on my search for the answers I found to these and other questions.  
But first, let's take a humorous look at mankind from God's perspective\_

### **God's Recall: Re-Engineering Required**

**a light-hearted look at God's overall view of mankind**

GOD is recalling all human units manufactured, regardless of make or year, due to a serious defect in the primary and central component of the heart. This is due to a malfunction in the original prototype units code-named Adam and Eve, resulting in the reproduction of the same defect in all subsequent units. This defect has been technically termed –

**'Sequential Internal Non-Morality': S.I.N.**

Some of the symptoms include: loss of direction, 'foul vocal emissions', lust, amnesia of origin, lack of peace and joy, selfish or violent behavior, depression or confusion in the mental component, fearfulness, idolatry, and rebellion. (Gal 5:19-21) The Manufacturer, who is neither liable nor at fault for this defect, is providing factory-authorized repair and service free of charge to correct this defect.

JESUS, the Divine Engineer, has most generously offered to bear the entire burden of the staggering cost of these repairs. There is no additional fee required. The number to call for

repair in all areas is: **P-R-A-Y-E-R**. Once connected, please upload your burden of **SIN** through the **REPENTANCE** procedure. (Acts 26:20) Next, download **ATONEMENT**. (1 Peter 3:18)

No matter how big or small the SIN defect is, Jesus will replace it with: love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, and self-control. (Galatians 5:19-25) Please see the operating manual, the **B.I.B.L.E.** (**B**elievers' **I**nstructions **B**efore **L**eaving **E**arth) for further details on the use of these fixes. 😊

**WARNING:** Continuing to operate the human being unit without correction voids any warranties, exposing the unit to dangers and problems too numerous to list and will result in the human unit being permanently impounded. For free emergency service, call on Jesus.

**DANGER:** The human being units not responding to this recall action will have to be scrapped in the furnace. The **S.I.N.** defect will not be permitted to enter Heaven so as to prevent the contamination of that facility. Thank you for your attention! 😊

PS. Please assist where possible by notifying others of this important recall notice. You may contact the Divine Engineer any time by 'knee-mail'.

\*\*\*\*\*

## 2. THE FLIGHT



*I was a happy, 'care-free' atheist for years after I left home to join the Marines — in spite of a Christian up-bringing. My utopia didn't last. I eventually found out the hard way that to ignore God is like ignoring gravity while sky-diving with no parachute.*

*You may soar freely for quite a while but it always ends 'badly'. Read on to learn how I found a God that is real, a life that is meaningful, and a glorious future in heaven one day!*

**"LOOK OUT!"** I silently screamed to myself. I was about to be run over by a beautiful lady in what should've been the safest place in town: the parking lot of the First Baptist Church of Oxnard, California! (Currently Grace Bible Church.) At that time I was an atheistic 26-year-old award-winning radar field engineer helping support the Navy F3H aircraft (above) and later on, an experimental squadron flying the record-breaking F4 Phantom II.

An atheist for 11 years, I had no use for churches before that day in 1962 when I came 'armed' just to ask a host of questions about God I'd accumulated in a sizeable notebook. My attitude was, "I'm an engineer. You've got to show me something more than just platitudes and 'touchy-feely' opinions you call religion."

I'd completed a fruitless year-long study of philosophy and dozens of religions in my quest for the mysterious but elusive '*secret of the ages*', the true and ultimate purpose of life. I even had many dreams about my search but they were all disappointing. My life was just as pointless and empty as an actual cowboy's life described by his humorous epitaph:

**"First I wuzn't. Then I wuz. Now I ain't again."**

Booze had helped for a while but after a time that didn't work any more. Life had become so empty and pointless, suicide would be my next step unless I found real answers to the mystery of our ultimate purpose and a meaningful, satisfying life.

### **Flashback One Year: Commendations! Flying High – For a While**

A year before visiting the Oxnard church, the F3H 'Demon' fighter squadron I'd been supporting

had broken the Navy Pacific Missile Range record for accuracy firing the Sparrow III air-to-air missile. Our squadron was awarded a commendation by the Naval Bureau of Weapons. I was awarded a letter of commendation for my electronic expertise on the two F3H intercept and missile guidance radars and for coaching the pilots with my 'rule of thumb' pocket cards they carried in their flight suits. *(The F3H intercept radar at right shows the aircraft is in a 45-degree left bank, locked on a target at the center of the maximum missile guidance circle. The gap in the outer circle indicates a closing rate of around 300 knots. The other radar guided the missile.)*



At that time, I was very proud of my achievements with squadron VF-92, including creating the troubleshooting and electronic maintenance manual for the Sidewinder missile computer. I took great pride in the fact that in my years of Navy service I'd never met another engineer like myself who had no college degree.

Growing up, I had always wanted to 'be somebody'. Since I was too smart for college (tongue in cheek), I quit and took a shortcut by joining the Marines in 1954. I was now 'somebody', but only for a while. While in the Marines, I had learned electronics at night school, then completed a score of airborne radar and electronic navigation courses by correspondence from the Air Force University at Gunter Air Force Base, Alabama.

While at Marine Barracks, Pearl Harbor, I had also taken around a half dozen 'hands-on' Navy radar courses during furloughs at the Fleet Training Center. Finally, I earned my First Class FCC License with radar endorsement, and on the side, a Second Class FCC Radiotelegraph license. After the Marines, I was later accepted into NAESU (Naval Aviation Engineering Service Unit) after a four hour exam and four hours of questioning by a board of three Navy commanders. After specialized training at the Anacostia Naval Air Station in Washington, DC.

I was assigned to Fighter Squadron VF-92, which would later deploy on the USS Ranger for the Far East. Before the squadron deployed aboard the USS Ranger, our readiness test was to find a tow-target plane about 100 miles at sea (no GPS back then) and fire Sparrow III missiles at the tow target. *Our squadron fired the highest score ever fired with the Sparrow III on the Pacific Missile Test Range!* The squadron was awarded a commendation from the U.S. Naval Bureau of Weapons. I got commendations from Commander O'Neil, the squadron commander, and from Raytheon, my employer.

I delighted in saying, "I'm now somebody and I didn't need God to be a success. I did this all myself!" However, during the months that followed, pride in my success slowly dimmed as I realized that my fellow engineers with degrees were so very much smarter than I. Case in point would be Carl Reiner, a colleague at the USS Ranger's home port, NAS Alameda. He'd spent years developing new stabilizing circuits for klystrons. My previous technician experience on the B-58 supersonic bomber and even my recent commendation paled by comparison. "Why do I exist?" triggered a year-long study of scores of all the philosophies and religions I could find. All I found were opinions, no real evidence. My life had lost real purpose. I felt empty.

Except for a few short months after receiving my commendation, success just did not satisfy my search for a truly meaningful and purposeful life. The 'booze crutch' I'd used so many times before I became a field engineer had not helped either. I promised a good friend I would not drink any more after my friend said passionately, "Tom, please don't drink. I've seen what it can do!" That brought back the memory of the shameful behavior of two alcoholic uncles I'd observed while growing up. I kept my promise from then on. I had hoped I could find meaning in the satisfaction and prestige of field engineering. Nope, nothing could dull the gnawing emptiness.



Life seemed pointless. My year-long 'journey' seeking purpose and fulfillment through the studies of philosophies and religions was just going nowhere — except towards suicide which I seriously considered many times. (*Suicide is the third leading cause of death in youth ages 15-26.*)

*In retrospect, I can now see how 'freedom from God' was the major root cause of my path towards suicide.* I could have painfully described my life back then in this thought from J'aime, a long-time friend: "Life without God is like an unsharpened pencil – no point!"

These major questions remained unanswered:

- Is there more to life than just the usual 'EAM': **E**njoyment, **A**chievement, and **M**oney?
- If Heaven and hell are real, as Jesus said, then how good must I be to barely squeeze through Heaven's gates? (Or put another way, how bad can I be and still make Heaven?)
- More importantly, → what if the 'bad' is just too 'good' to give up?

Unknown to me at the time, Blaise Pascal, the famed 17<sup>th</sup>-century French scientist, inventor, mathematician, philosopher, and creator of the first mechanical digital calculator, had the solution to my despair centuries ago. He said, "There's a **God-shaped vacuum in the heart of every man which cannot be filled by any created thing, but only by God, the Creator, made known through Jesus.**" Centuries before that, Solomon, a rich, wise, and world-renowned king of Israel, bragged about his life-long parade of accomplishments in Ecclesiastes, a book in the Bible. Like me, he also found that they did not satisfy him either for very long. His final conclusions? "Fear God and keep His commandments because every secret work will be brought into judgment." Scary!

### How Can We Know God? Ant Talk?

How could you clearly explain God's love to an ant? The only possible way would be if a human were to become an ant and then to clearly *show God's love in a way which ants understand.* Later I learned that was exactly what God did when He sent Jesus down from a previous eternity in Heaven to become the 'Babe of Bethlehem' and show God's love to all mankind in a way we understand. (The ant figure represents me when I rejected God, beginning with my years as a 'searg-ANT' in the Marines.)



Jesus' birth was a miracle! He previously existed in Heaven and was incarnated into the virgin Mary, *as prophesied* 700+ years before. (Isaiah 7:14) Dr. Hilt's Christmas card describes His coming so well. Let's continue with the last item, hope:



OUT OF THE SILENCE...  
MUSIC  
OUT OF THE DARKNESS...  
LIGHT  
OUT OF UNCERTAINTY...  
PROMISE  
HOPE...  
WAS BORN THAT NIGHT!

**Hope was born with Jesus Christ out of darkness and uncertainty!** He showed us God's love by a gruesome death on the cross to pay the terrible penalty of sin for us. (John 3:16, Romans 5:8)  
**Hope was born when He returned from the dead** to prove all He taught was from God! (Luke 24)  
**Hope was born backed by a multitude of eyewitnesses** and abundant evidence I will present in this book.  
**Hope was born as the solid foundation** of the only faith

in the world with a founder still alive after ~2000 years.

**Hope was born and continues to save multitudes from the horrible penalty of sin** to eternal joy in Heaven, and in my case, also suicide! (Luke 19:10: 'to seek and to save', John 14:6) (Interesting: [Click here](#) for how God's love reached down to a lost Pacific island tribe without even a word for hope.)

I'd been taught all the above by a godly mother but as a teen it became just empty boring religion for old people and children. I wanted to be somebody really important. Beginning with four years in the Marines, this goal led me to ignore God and down the path of atheism and sin.

### **Was God Real? I Asked Him! But There was One Catch!**

I finally realized that for the past 11 years, I'd been 'flying high' but was also *flying blind* in the thick fog of sin and pride in my technical achievements. I'd ignored the altitude and 'off-course' warnings. I had actually been lost and in a shallow dive all that time. Now the ground was rushing up at me. Time to pull out or die!

I prayed, "God, I don't even know if You exist. But if You do, You should be able to show this engineer. Is there a real Heaven and a real hell? If you show me You're real, I'll follow You, cost what it may cost, but right now I DON'T WANT TO! I know my only pleasures in life are displeasing to You. So if You're real, Please help me to become willing to follow You. Amen."

Though I didn't know it at the time, *I had just met God's main requirement to eventually find out if He was real.* Jesus said we must be willing to do His will before He reveals Himself. (John 7:17) Otherwise, why would He waste time on you, knowing you've already rejected Him even before He shows you the evidence? Though at this time I did not really want to do His will, yet I was 'willing to be helped to become willing'. Over time it worked, according to God's promise in Jeremiah 29:13: "*... if we seek Him with our WHOLE HEART, we will find Him!*"

### **Return to Naval Air Station, Point Mugu**

After my squadron (VF-92) deployed to the Far East aboard the USS Ranger, I completed training on the targeting and missile radars aboard the F4H Phantom II in Virginia. At that time, the F4 was the hottest fighter in the world. My next duty station was Point Mugu Naval Air Station near Oxnard, California. My assignment was to gain F4 experience with squadron VX-4, experimental squadron, before transfer to my permanent duty station with VF-121 at Miramar. VF-121 would later become the *Top Gun Squadron*.

Over many months I had compiled a notebook of questions about God. *I took my questions to visit a church in Oxnard and nearly got run over right in the parking lot!* I followed the beautiful lady into church. She had 'gotten my full attention' with her car! She'd just ended a relationship and was not anxious for another. She tried to get rid of me by introducing me personally to all the pretty girls in the Sunday School class. I really enjoyed that but it didn't work. She was very special and I stuck with her. More about her later in Chapter 6.

I bombarded the pastor, Rev. Ben Munroe, after every service with questions from my notebook. He encouraged me not to give up and he frequently quoted from Isaiah: '*precept upon precept, line upon line, here a little, there a little*'. (Today we'd say, "Yard by yard is hard but inch by inch is a cinch.") Finally, seeing God was at work, he handed me a big Thompson reference Bible, a huge commentary, and other books saying, "Sorry Tom, but I have 400 other people in this church. **Here, find the answers for yourself!**"

### **Flashback Eight Years to My Marine Corps Days – Enter Corporal Stevens!**

Amazingly, my first evidence there may be a real God was back when I had been in the Marines. (My picture is at right.) The Lord vividly brought back to mind the transformed life of a fellow Marine, Corporal Stevens, with whom I'd served at Camp Pendleton, **eight years before!** Stevens had been a profane, womanizing drunk, earning the title of the '**T-town commando**' (T = Tijuana where he would carouse on the weekends). The power of Christ had marvelously transformed him into '**a living letter from Christ**'. (2 Corinthians 3:2 Living Bible) His transformation to a sober, moral, God-loving, and courageous Christian was truly miraculous. Even more impressive was the fact that a mean-spirited Marine atheist persecuted him every morning during barracks cleanup. He would rip up pages from the Bible and throw them into Stevens' face to provoke him into a fight.



Stevens' surprising reaction was always one of patience, love, and forgiveness. For eight years, Steven's amazing transformation had been filed away in the hidden recesses of my mind. Now God brought it back as my very first valid evidence there may be a real God after all! Stevens may have asked God why He permitted this abuse. However, I'm sure Stevens would've claimed God's promise in Romans 8:28 that *'all things work together for good to those who love God'*. Years later I see at least two reasons for God allowing this persecution. Stevens' faithfulness would become my first major evidence that God was real, and Stevens' persecutor got a clear demonstration of Jesus' grace and compassion. He saw that God can still love us and offer forgiveness in spite of our evil behavior. In Philippians 1:12, Paul, the great missionary, said his imprisonment would eventually be for the 'furtherance of the gospel' and indeed it was!

I've not seen Corporal Stevens for 64 years. *He has no idea how powerfully his conversion and faithfulness eventually bore fruit in my life eight years later that eventually led to 53 years of missionary service, so far.* I'm sure his life also touched many others in our unit who were watching Steven's persecution every morning. *(If you are a Christian reader, live for Christ the very best you can. Someday you may find your life was also a 'living letter from Christ' like Corporal Stevens' and made the difference whether someone spends an eternity in Heaven or not! (2 Corinthians 3:2 LB)*

After being transferred to Pearl Harbor, I met two more real Christian Marines during my three years there. Along with Corporal Stevens, these Marines impressed me more than all the sermons of all the preachers I'd heard during my life up to that time. Why? Because these Marines were NOT paid clergy or even deacons. They were just plain ordinary Christians with nothing to gain and much to lose by attracting persecution.

My 'atheist's flight' had taken off but I still had to break through a heavy and turbulent overcast of doubts and many questions before God would come into focus.

\*\*\*\*\*

### **3. PENETRATING HEAVY OVERCAST of DOUBT but ONLY to 99%**

Since I had been an aircraft radar field engineer, I thought it appropriate that the stages of my search for God be represented by percentages of climb-out through overcast representing my doubts, questions, and much misinformation. *(If Rick Warren's book, **The Purpose Driven Life: What on Earth Am I Here For?** had been written around 56 years ago, it would've helped me enormously! I highly recommend it. <sup>E</sup>) **Don't Waste your Life** is also very good. <sup>P</sup>*

My philosophy up to now had been to just ignore God, hoping He would let me alone as well. Even if there did turn out to be a God, I'd planned to say, *"Sorry God, I couldn't believe in You, so I guess you'll just have to let me into Heaven since I'm really a good guy at heart. Certainly my good deeds outweigh the bad and I'm so VERY much better than most of my friends."* Wrong! *(Romans 1:20: no excuse, Romans 3:23: not good enough, Revelation 21:8: **Uh-Oh!**)*

'Earning your way to Heaven', fully or partially, seemed quite reasonable to me. Most religions in the world are more or less based on this incorrect assumption. *'If you become good enough you might, repeat might, become worthy to reach Heaven, some higher reincarnation, ultimate Nirvana, or various 'spirit worlds.'* I later learned Christianity was different, very different. 1 John 5:13 promises we can know if we're going to Heaven so it's obviously not based upon trying our best to be good enough. How good is that? Being better than some ugly people we know?

I also had ignored the fact that I could die unexpectedly with no chance to come to God even if I wanted to. Some personal examples include two of my seventh grade school mates who were



shot and killed accidentally, the unexpected murder of a friend, and several relatives killed by drunk drivers through no fault of their own. Even more scary is when dementia silently but subtly gradually renders some incapable of any rational decisions. The latter would include my own father who was near 80. "Yeah, but he was old," you say. Just a few years ago my award-winning cardiologist developed severe dementia while only in his fifties. SCARY!

I was also VERY troubled to learn that **Jesus could return without warning at any time** to take His followers to Heaven. Those left behind would suffer terribly under the wrath of God and the unspeakable cruelty of the Anti-Christ for the ensuing seven years during the Tribulation. I just didn't want to think about that. (Kirk Cameron filmed an interesting, even terrifying, Christian trilogy called **Left Behind, The DVD Collection**, dramatizing these events. Very interesting, and **also very scary!** [www.cloudtenpictures.com](http://www.cloudtenpictures.com))

I had a multitude of questions some of you may also wonder about. For instance, "What gives God the right to tell us how to live our lives?" and "If a 'good' God exists, then why suffering and evil?" You'll find some answers I found as my story unfolds as percentages of an aircraft's climb through ominous, thick, dark overcast. Was there any scientific evidence of a real God? Which holy book was His word: the Koran? The Hindu Vedas and the Bhagavad Gita? The Eightfold Path of Buddhism? So many others. Here we go.

### **To 30% - by Rejecting Evolution: Where's the Evidence?**

Evolution, which attempts to explain everything through science, was to me the only reasonable alternative to the existence of an intelligent Creator. Evolutionists are very strong on 'science' which they claim can explain everything. **Why then is around 96% of our whole universe still unseen and un-measurable except by secondary effects?** (See [Appendix F-1](#)) This unseen part of our universe is called 'dark': dark energy and dark matter. It was mapped over a nine-year period by the WMAP Anisotropy probe and is still a mystery. (**Note:** *Scientists have also never found any boundaries to our universe which so far appears to be infinite. More later.*)

Obviously evolutionary science does not explain everything and especially not the origin of the very first life. Neither has any sort of life ever been created 'from nothing' in labs. Theistic evolution is quite popular because there's no eventual accountability since there is no afterlife in evolution. **Could God have created our universe using evolution?** Do the Bible and evolution tell basically the same story? Compare the sequence of creation for each at this site.

<https://creationmoments.com/sermons/could-creation-and-evolution-be-telling-the-same-story/>

I have updated my own previous study of evolution in the '60s with a lot of more recent scientific evidence. [Appendices F-1](#) and [F-2](#) will give you much more information than I had to work with back when I was seeking truth. I feel a relatively extensive look at evolution is necessary for seekers today. Why? Our society has declared evolution to be a fact after removing the Bible and prayer from our schools and colleges over 60 years ago. And this in spite of the fact that our nation was founded upon God, the Bible, and prayer. Almost all of our very first universities were founded as seminaries to train preachers. This includes most of all the 'ivy league' colleges: Harvard, Princeton, and Yale among others. Currently the ACLU is suing a city council nearby for opening meetings in prayer, in spite of the fact that Congress has always had a chaplain who opens each session of our Congress with prayer. The Ten Commandments appear on the wall behind the Supreme Court justices as well. I love the council's reply to the ACLU threats: "Our constitution guarantees us freedom OF religion, not freedom FROM religion."

### **Ignoring the Starting Point of Evolution is Like 'Touch-Typing' in the Dark but Beginning on the Wrong Keys!**

If you position your index fingers correctly in the beginning (on the F and the



J) your work will be fine because touch typing in the dark is done relative to your starting position so you needn't look at the keyboard. If instead, you start out with your fingers on G and K, all the relative movements of your fingers may even be perfect but you will be typing gibberish! (I've done that on my computer in dim light more than once.)

Darwin did something like that when he started evolution AFTER the first life developed. [Was that a 'cheat'?](#) Yes, in one sense, no in another. Click [here](#). Most people accept evolution because they've never even read Darwin's book for themselves! Modern Darwinists lack credible scientific evidence for this yet they proclaim as fact that life did somehow crawl out a slime pool or ocean. Rejecting God's intelligent design, they substituted 'un-intelligent' random events though mathematical probability and bioinformatics prove that utterly impossible. <sup>33</sup> *Would they bet their life savings on horse races with the same astronomical odds against their winning? 'Yes! Anything's possible over millions of years', they say!* What if Einstein had presented his famous  $E=mc^2$  to the world but decided he'd just skip over the 'm' or perhaps the 'c'? Gibberish, not science! Colleagues would've discredited his work in a heartbeat.

### **Proof the Evolutionist's Origin of Our Universe Cannot be a Proven Fact!**

There are many evolutionary ideas (speculations) about how our universe evolved without the need for intelligent creation. The most widely accepted is **QF**, quantum fluctuation. This asserts, as fact, because of a series of unguided accidents, our universe suddenly exploded into existence (the Big Bang) from a disorganized super-hot fog that created itself, by accident of course, from the nothingness of space. As it cooled, stars formed and, cooling further, planets came into existence. However, modern astronomy has disproved this. Stars are hot 'hydrogen-bomb' type nuclear reactors. They don't cool! At the end of their useful life, they explode leaving behind a tiny 'dwarf' which is so dense, a matchbook-sized piece would weigh around 10 tons. No life is possible.

**'Planck Time'**. More importantly, evolutionists hope we won't notice that no useable experimental data is possible before 'Planck time' ( $10^{-43}$  seconds) AFTER the 'Big Bang, rendering all their mathematical 'evidence' invalid. Why? *Because none of the four fundamental forces that direct everything had yet to emerge.* Mathematical speculations any sooner than that would distort Einsteinian 'space-time' and thereby become meaningless. <sup>R</sup> (Even time did not begin until the Big Bang, according to Einstein, and world renowned cosmologist Stephen Hawking. <sup>84</sup>) **Therefore, evolutionists have no way to scientifically prove any of their ideas that our universe evolved from nothing without a God-Creator.** As the TV detective Matlock would say, **GOTCHA!** (Click [here](#) for more.)

When I was in college (1953), godless evolution and self-creation of our universe were 'could-have-beens'. When prayer and the Bible were removed from our schools, evolution and 'creation without a Creator' were suddenly promoted to facts. No real evidence has been found for either, which makes them scientific deceptions or perhaps just wishful thinking to hide from our accountability to a living God. Few ever check the 'evidence' offered as proof of evolution.

**Here's another 'GOTCHA!'** Evolutionists claim that the laws of all nature have always existed, even before science came into existence. This contradicts the fundamental cause/effect foundation of every branch of science: *for every effect, there has to be a cause. However, affirming the laws of nature are eternal affirms its supernatural origin! God created science! You can't convert the violation of the basic law of every branch of science into a fact by just calling it a 'singularity'.* I love the quote of mathematics professor John Lennox in the very good movie, **God is Not Dead: "Nonsense spoken by famous people is still nonsense!"**

**More on 'singularity'**, a single exception to the laws of science. Most scientists, including Einstein, believe there was nothing, not even time, before our universe suddenly exploded into

existence at the Big Bang. Yes we do agree the Big Bang did occur and that it was a 'singularity', but not the accidental Big Bang of unproven evolution. Intelligent design of our universe and all its fantastic design are evidence that God spoke our universe into existence. God said, "Let there be" and BANG, there was our universe, **God's Big Bang!** At that time He also created all the laws of every field of science, including mathematics, astronomy, physics, biology, etc. Man didn't create science or its laws. Man merely discovered and formulated occurrences in nature that turned out to be predictable.

The idea that our highly complex universe exploded from 'nothing that created everything', is riddled with flaws. *When has science ever seen an explosion without an explosive? When have scientists ever produced any explosion from nothing that created something highly complex that exhibited incredibly intelligent design like atomic structure and the mysterious periodic table?* Debris yes, complexity? **Never!** And when did ANY explosive 'bang' go on and on and on then stopped, then continued to go faster and faster? **None!**

**Mathematical probability and evolution.** If you believe that accidental evolution was the cause of the Big Bang that brought our universe and all life into existence, then you'd also believe an explosion in a junk yard could definitely create a fully flyable 747 jet and some of you would even believe it would include a crew and 300 passengers. Click [here](#) for more of what the esteemed Sir Fred Hoyle had to say, including the mathematical odds for this happening by accident. Here's a similar, but much easier scenario. You would also have to proclaim as fact that a coin flipped 10,000 times over a sloping sidewalk would land 10,000 times, not heads or tails, but on one edge, then roll down the sidewalk at least 50 feet. Not impossible, but the computed probability would be so tiny would that be reasonable? Think about it. [See Dr. Henry Morris' great article on the mathematical impossibility of evolution.](#) <sup>31</sup>

Ralph Muncaster, an engineer and former atheist of 15 years, reported Sir Fred Hoyle, a famous astronomer, computed the probability against life arising by accident as magnitudes greater than the number of atoms in our whole universe!. His book <sup>u</sup> 'dismantles' evolution. Click the citation to 'take a very brief walk' through powerful evidence.

**The God Delusion** was written by Richard Dawkins, probably the world's most widely published atheist. This book has probably led more uninformed people into atheism in our generation than any other book. Ray Comfort's film, **The Atheist Delusion** <sup>96</sup>, exposes it's weaknesses in brief five-minute interviews with a dozen or more atheists. Interviewees also include movie/TV comedian Tim Allen, a bombastic theoretical physicist, and Professor Richard Dawkins himself. Skeptics and evolutionists really need to hear Professor Dawkins agreeing that our universe did come from nothing, then explaining how 'nothing created everything' at elapsed time 10:26. "[Very simple](#)!" Click this citation to view the one-hour film. <sup>96</sup> (Watch the audience's reaction to Professor Dawkins' explanation of how 'nothing created everything'.)

### **[And Where Did That Come From? Who Made God? Evolutionary Trickery](#)**

Godless evolutionists and skeptics quickly run out of answers when I just keep asking, "[And where did that come from?](#)" Their answers are only a series of 'could have' speculations based on unprovable scientific assumptions. "[Who made God?](#)" you ask. "[Irrelevant,](#)" I would reply, "[because we're only accountable to the God who made us.](#) I would add, "[No, you are not excused from accountability to God because you didn't get an answer to your question!](#)"

**Evolutionary trick words** divert the uninformed over to the evolutionary trail. '[Theory](#)' is ambiguous and can mean just an 'idea' or a proven fact, so don't be deceived. '[Evolution](#)' is called a 'theory' but should instead be called a hypothesis. It's never been demonstrated in nature or the lab, is still unproven, and therefore cannot be a fact as is proclaimed. Even Darwin's own standard of proof has never been found. <sup>36B, 54</sup> '[Evolution](#)' is often erroneously, or

deceitfully, used instead of 'variation'. [Variation is within a single species](#), like Darwin's different kinds of finch beaks and the English peppered moths. Both are touted as examples of evolution but by definition are not. Variation within the same species is short-term and observable in breeding various types of dogs, horses, etc. Darwin failed to demonstrate a single example of evolution. I repeat, evolution has never been observed in nature or in the lab. It is therefore unproven. Don't be misled.

### **Finding a Missing Link or Two Does Not Authenticate Evolution!**

Evolution is based upon a host of unproven assumptions, many related to unverifiable dating methods. <sup>27A</sup> (Also, click [here](#).) *Way too flaky to base our whole eternal future upon!* Also, Darwin did not specify 'a missing link or even many links as humans evolved. In [Appendix F-1](#) you'll see that he specified **'innumerable intermediate transitional forms (missing links)'**! That means a SERIES of billions and billions of intermediate evolutionary 'steps' showing very, very, very gradual evolution for **each one** of the approximate 8.7 million species plus their variations. <sup>54</sup> That's why Darwin was disappointed at the existence of so few fossils. However, around 100 MILLION fossils have been catalogued in museums around the world for about 250,000 species during approximately 160 years of worldwide search. [Appendix F-1. No series of transitional fossils showing very gradual evolution, required by Darwin himself, has ever been found for even one life form.](#) <sup>36B</sup> Modern Neo-Darwinists proclaim evolution proceeded in 'jumps' by accidental mutations. Here are 28+ reasons why that's not true either! <sup>27D, 33</sup>  
The fossils still say no' and that's the title of the book cited here. <sup>38</sup>

The clincher against evolution for me was when Louis Pasteur, a contemporary of Darwin, proved that life can never come from non-life. Before that, it was thought that rats and vermin 'evolved' from dirty rags since they were always found together. Pasteur, a devout Christian, also went on to develop vaccines to prevent rabies, anthrax, smallpox, and diphtheria, all killers for centuries. Pasteur once commented, ["The more I learned of science, the more simple my faith became based on the truth of the Bible."](#) I would eventually feel the same. On the one hand Darwin believed in myriads of tiny accidental changes over millions of years. But examining the complexity of only the eye, he was convinced that was impossible. So he invented a strange 'power' that 'oversees' every single tiny evolutionary change in every one of the 8.7 million species <sup>54</sup> –simultaneously– over millions and millions of years. <sup>36C</sup> This 'power' Darwin supposed into existence could only have been a mythical 'god'. In [Appendix F-1, you'll find several chapters of Darwin's own admissions of major flaws in his theory. He dismissed contrary evidence of how life began with a terse, "I choose not to go there!"](#) <sup>36A</sup>

### **Summarizing, I Did Not Find Evolution Supported by Reliable Science**

In fact, I just came upon a great little 40-page booklet whose sub-title was **"More than 75 Ways Science Supports Creation and Disproves Evolution."** <sup>4</sup> I found that believing in evolution requires a LOT more blind faith than I could muster. (*I love Geisler and Turek's book, **I Don't Have Enough Faith to be an Atheist!*** <sup>9</sup> *After studying the evidence, ditto!*) Cross-species evolution has never been observed in nature, and never reproduced in labs. A 71-year fruit fly experiment simulating millions of years of evolution, was begun at Columbia University in the early 1900s. It failed to show any progressive evolution. (There were 50 years of actual experiments but the final analysis and report required many more years. <sup>27K, 39C, 41</sup>)

Eliminating evolution would leave me with the only reasonable explanation for our universe: intelligent, deliberate, supernatural creation. Here's a list of 927 scientists, most Ph.ds, who agree evolution is still unproven and not science at all, but a philosophy based on atheism. <sup>82</sup> More are to be found in citations at scientists in the [Evidence Resources](#).

Jeffrey Dahmer, the cannibal-serial-killer, made this comment about evolution, which in his mind, justified the heinous crimes that shocked our nation:

**"They taught me I'm only an evolved animal; so what's wrong with what I did?"**

For more evidence refuting evolution go to [Appendices F-1](#) and [F-2](#). Topics include Darwin's admitted major weaknesses of his ideas, an 'evolution thought bomb'.

### **[To\] 50%-Through Overwhelming Scientific Evidence](#)**

Let's begin with a joke my wife just found from Mikey's Funnies but which has some valid theological truth and bearing on my testimony. **Sherlock Holmes** and Dr. Watson were camping out in a tent. During the night, Holmes awakened Watson with, "Look up and tell me what you see." Watson, "[Astronomically](#) I see millions of stars. [Chronologically](#), it's around 3:00 a.m. [Meteorologically](#), tomorrow will be fair. Holmes: "What else?" Watson: "?????????????????????" Holmes: "[Look up Watson, our tent has been stolen!](#)" 😊

I was like Watson before my search for God began in earnest with a three-month study of scientific evidence. Surprisingly, **the best evidence of God was just common sense!** Just as [Watson overlooked the obvious in the funny above](#), I had also overlooked the obvious. *The mere existence of my home proves there had to have been 'intelligent design' by an architect and intelligent construction by skilled builders. Likewise, the very existence of our much more complex universe would attest to the fantastic intelligence of a 'universe designer and builder' whom we call God.* (Later I would find this is affirmed strongly in Psalm 19:1 and Romans 1:20 declares that no one in the world can claim ignorance.) However, at that time I was so far from God, I didn't even think about this simple proof but plunged into my search for hard scientific evidence. I would find plenty!

### **[Our Entire Universe was Created Upon the 'Invisible Fabric of Mathematics' <sup>44</sup>](#)** *from stars and planets to the DNA blueprints of life.*

And where did this mathematical order come from? I hadn't wanted to think much about creation and a Creator up to now. But the amazing mathematics underlying almost everything I examined showed me eventually that there had to be great intelligence behind the structure of our whole universe. *All planetary orbital periods, including two dwarf planets, obey the math of the Divine Ratio and also form a Fibonacci Series!* More startling math evidence in nature here! [92](#)

The more evidence I examined, the less credible evolution became. The *law of entropy* states that that nothing can 'self-organize' into ever increasing complexity over time without outside intervention, and this especially applies to mathematical laws and evolution.

Nowhere have I found more convincing evidence than in Dr. Rana's DVD. It details God's incredible design in the fascinating *mega-complexity* of the cells in our own body. [103](#) Here's a 'simple' chart of how 'simple' bacteria get their energy. No, I don't expect most of you to understand every detailed step but I do expect you to see enormous complexity beyond the alleged accidents of evolution.



I marveled at the immensely intricate design of our universe, Especially the mathematically predictable positions of planets, their moons, occurrences of eclipses, and comets, even prediction of the exact time of sunrises and sunsets — to the exact minute — centuries into the future or into the past! (In fact, I'm still so amazed that I just spent a delightful week following Isaac Newton's calculus proof of Kepler's laws of planetary orbits.

Isaac Newton, probably the greatest scientist of all time, mightily showed mathematically that our solar system is not the product of random chance but of divine mathematical **intelligent creation** which has guided our planets since the beginning. In fact God was so real to him, he later gave up science to devote the rest of his life to studying theology! Blaise Pascal, another great scientist, did the very same thing! *It is said that Newton's proof of Kepler's ideas was*

his very first application of his newly discovered calculus. His equations described mathematically the patterns behind Kepler's 40 years of meticulous observations perfectly! Newton's equations and calculus are still used today in space exploration, in some cases modified by relativity.

Both Newton and Kepler were strong, outspoken Christians with unshakeable faith in God. This should put to rest accusations that only the stupid and uneducated believe in God. See **Men of Science, Men of God: Great Scientists who Believed the Bible.** <sup>53</sup> As of 2012, this little paper back is in its 21<sup>st</sup> printing since 1982! It includes Newton (discoverer of calculus), Kepler (astronomy), Maxwell <sup>47</sup> (math), Pasteur (medicine/germ discovery), Fleming (penicillin), and many more. Currently, a Kindle download is also available for only \$2.99.

\*\*\*\*\*

**UMPIRE (Mr. Science): "1, 2, 3 STRIKES! Accidental, Random Evolution 'Yer Out!'"  
Intelligent Creator Wins!**

This powerful 3-point overview of our universe demonstrates our Creator's incredible intelligent design, woven into the very mathematical fabric of our whole universe! Albert Einstein, a believer in God, said, "God does not throw dice." *Mathematics is not a 'dice throw' like evolution.* It demonstrates deliberate intelligent design that separates reality from mythical speculation.

- 1. STRIKE 1: EVERYTHING in the UNIVERSE is either mass or energy.** Neither can be created from nothing nor completely destroyed (proven law of conservation of matter and energy). Either may be converted into the other, precisely, using Einstein's  $E = mc^2$ !

The heat and light, from our sun comes from continuous thermonuclear reactions. Every second those reactions convert 700 million tons of hydrogen into 695 million tons of helium. Where did all that hydrogen come from? What happened to the missing five million tons of hydrogen? It was converted into the light, heat, ultra-violet, and other radiation we feel from 93 million miles away — and amazingly in the exact amounts predicted by an equation from Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity,  $E=mc^2$ ! <sup>6</sup>

This conservation law proves the 'accidental' evolutionary Big Bang could never have 'created something out of nothing', including the laws of science and mathematics that would guide every step. Just as the existence of your car proves there had to have been a designer and manufacturer, the existence of our universe proves a divine creator, God. (**More:** 22 reasons why evolution is unscientific.)

- 2. STRIKE 2: EVERY CHEMICAL ELEMENT making up our universe** (118 so far) **fits in orderly** sequence into the Periodic Table by atomic number, grouped in columns with others of similar chemical properties and new rows repeating every 8<sup>th</sup> element! **WOW!**
- 3. STRIKE 3: EVERY ATOM of every chemical element is a miniature solar system** with a central nucleus and orbiting electrons; strong evidence of beautiful design!

**No scientist ever invented a scientific law or mathematical axiom.** They were only discovered or built upon previously existing laws. Did gravity come into existence in the 1600s when Newton formulated it? No! God created scientific laws with the universe to direct nature down to the smallest detail! The Bible is proven right by scientific laws. Do some fear and ignore the 'light' of God's word because we know our conduct and future judgment will be by God's standards instead of ours? (John 3:19-20) *Science IS the evidence of God in nature. We are therefore inexcusable to ignore Him.* (Psalm 19:1, Romans 1:20)

The proven **Law of Entropy** (Second Law of Thermodynamics) states that it's impossible for disorder (random evolution) to evolve into order on its own without a directing outside force. (*Prove this by putting your dirty clothes into a hamper and wait another 13+ billion years.*)

Do you really believe that you'd expect to find all the clothes washed and that the bacteria had evolved into super-humans?) Also be aware that evolution skips where the chemicals of life came from, laws of science, and of genetics. Darwin begins with a fully functional, reproductive-capable life form. (A cheat?) No scientist has ever created life from chemicals and certainly not from nothing as our Creator did.) Click [here](#) for only four scientific laws that govern almost all of our whole universe.

As a skeptic,  $E=mc^2$  (**STRIKE 1** above) impressed me the very most.  $E=mc^2$  also impressed Dr. Amir Aczel enough to put his amazement into a great book, *God's Equation!* <sup>6</sup> More on  $E=mc^2$  below in "Our Amazing Sun ...".

Einstein did not invent this equation just as Newton did not invent gravity. *Both these laws and the equations that describe them had existed since our universe began.* They were only discovered and formulated.

*The 'c' in the Einstein's equation above is the ubiquitous speed of light found in a multitude of scientific equations that help describe our universe. It's one of around 150 constants which prove the mathematical organization our universe shows design, not randomness. Asking evolutionists from what did constants evolve, most say, 'They just always were'. This says they never had a beginning which implies the supernatural because naturally speaking, it's a violation of the very foundation of all science: the law of cause and effect.*

\*\*\*\*\*

### Does How We Measure Time Point to Intelligent Design or Random Evolution?

The Naval observatory sets our national time standard from the stars. However, during the day, one can get the approximate time from a sundial. At night, the time is available from a planisphere. Here, we read 8:00 pm for July 15 when the Big Dipper pointer stars point to the North Star from an approximate 10:00 o'clock relative position. FASCINATING! (Yes, the planisphere is upside down because it must be held upside down facing north.)

**Tekkie Candy:** The inner dial markings indicate that the stars appear to rotate at 15 degrees per hour around the North Star. An *Equation of Time* graph converts sundial and 'dipper' time from star time to clock time, to within 15 minutes. Correction is needed because the earth rotates once in 23 hours, 56 minutes and 4 seconds. However, our clocks are based on a solar average day of 24 hours. This is because our earth orbit is elliptical so it orbits more slowly at apogee and faster at perigee. Time is much more complex than you thought?



What does this precision and predictability of time from the sun and stars tell us? It told me there's a huge amount of intelligence and design in the heavens, not accidents of evolution.

### The 'Light Speed Ruler' Reveals an Incredibly Vast Universe!

I was truly astounded to learn that the speed of light (around 186,000 miles per SECOND) is a mathematical constant used in hundreds of physics equations that describe all kinds of phenomena in nature. Using light speed as a 'ruler', I began to understand just how enormous our universe is. At light speed, *one could travel to the moon in only 1.3 seconds, to the sun in just over 8 minutes, but to Andromeda, the nearest spiral galaxy like ours, one would need over TWO MILLION YEARS!* There are also billions of other galaxies even further away! During the past four centuries, new telescopes continue to probe further and further into space but none has ever found any boundaries of our universe!

## Earth Hurtles Through Space at Incredible Speeds in Nine Directions!

The earth we stand on is hurtling through space at incredible speeds in at least **NINE different directions at once** — so smoothly we don't even notice! Six of them are illustrated in this 2008 magazine which you may find in online archives or at your city library. <sup>5</sup> Even an eighth grader could do the arithmetic to show that our earth rotates at around 1,000 mph. at its equator every 24 hours and orbits the sun at around 67,000 mph once each year. Add to that, we're spinning around our galaxy at a half million mph. We and all our companion galaxies are hurtling towards the constellation Sagittarius at 1,300,000 mph! Plus, there are FIVE other known directions of earth motion, all so smooth we don't even feel them! All accidents? How could anyone not see a God-Creator at work here? We're without excuse! (Romans 1:20)

## Our Amazing Sun, Spinning at 630,000 MPH, Verifies Einstein's $E = mc^2$ !

Almost all life on earth is ultimately totally dependent upon our sun. Here are a just a few **incredible facts about the sun that sustains almost all life on earth**. It rotates once every 27 days at around 630,000 mph. The heat and light, from 93 million miles away, comes from continuous thermonuclear reactions. Every second those reactions convert 700 million tons of hydrogen into 695 million tons of helium. Where did all that hydrogen come from? What happened to the missing five million tons of hydrogen? It was converted into the light, heat, ultra-violet, and other radiation we feel from 93 million miles away — and amazingly in the exact amounts predicted by an equation from Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity,  $E=mc^2$ ! <sup>6</sup>

Where did this and all the other laws of nature come from? Why do all the multitude of chemical elements that make up our universe show related properties in the Periodic Table? And why do their individual atoms also closely resemble miniatures of our solar system? "Just another evolutionary 'coincidence'," you say? Yes 'coincidences' happen, but not the billions upon billions of 'accidental coincidences' showing extreme complexity and deliberate design observed in nature which science cannot explain. They literally scream: 'Intelligent design'!

I just didn't have enough 'blind faith' to accept so many of the evolutionist's unproven 'facts'. Evolution rejects the supernatural, considering it the same as superstition, ghosts, haunted houses, Santa Claus, and the Tooth Fairy. But their explanation of our universe resulting from a totally random series of accidents, each building upon its predecessor over millions of years, defies mathematical probability and the law of biogenesis. Evolution therefore would require innumerable coordinated miracles, all in proper sequence. Sounds like the supernatural to me!

## More Intelligent Design: Nature's Cycles and Spectacular Bird Migrations

I found many other evidences for intelligent design pointing to God's handiwork: photosynthesis, osmosis, the water cycle, the nitrogen cycle, and many other earthly cycles showing intelligent design and maintenance. Perhaps the most amazing evidence of intelligent design by a Creator is the fascinating and the mysterious animal/bird migrations. The spectacular 20,000-mile migration (round trip) of the arctic tern from pole to pole is only one.

But an even more amazing migration is that of the bronze cuckoo. What is so amazing is that it migrates from New Zealand to the Solomon Islands, over 2,500 miles of trackless ocean. Not only that, but cuckoos never know their parents! Cuckoos lay their eggs in other birds' nests, then abandon them for the other birds to raise! So who teaches them how to navigate thousands of miles over a trackless ocean and then back again? <sup>7</sup>



Darwin wrote several chapters on the weaknesses of evolution. <sup>36A</sup> Chief among them was long-range bird migration and how that knowledge was passed on to offspring who'd never made the journey like the cuckoo just mentioned. Cuckoos not only have to navigate precisely, but how do they compensate for crosswinds and furious Pacific storms blowing them off course over 2,500 miles of trackless ocean?



**A navigation error of only one degree, would cause the cuckoo to miss his destination by about 43 MILES!** Also if, upon arrival, the islands were fogged in or being pounded by a heavy rainstorm, at some point, just like an aircraft, he's going to have to dive through the 'soup' until he can see if he's on target. If he can't see, most likely he's going to crash. If he missed the island on his first try, it is unlikely he would have enough energy for much searching after his 2,500-mile non-stop flight.

I might also add that Darwin was at a loss to explain the amazing instincts of creatures who are abandoned at birth, like turtles, most fish, and insects. With no instruction, how did they know what was food, how to hunt, how to reproduce, migrate, etc. He also admitted evolution had no explanation for the amazing group behavior of ants and bees. You'll find more migrations of birds, fish, whales, eels, etc., at this citation. <sup>7</sup>

*Even more amazing is the fantastic 2,400-mile, four-day non-stop flight of the [blackpoll warblers](#). First they fly from Alaska to New England. Then they make an abrupt turn south climbing to 20,000 feet where oxygen drops to only 9.5%! They then ride the high-speed, sub-zero, freezing southerly winds all the way to South America!*

Does anyone think that animals can inherit knowledge of their parents but not us humans who are the most highly 'evolved' of all species? If knowledge were inheritable, then it would mean that *if great grandpa went to college then all his descendants would be spouting Shakespeare and doing calculus as soon as they learned to talk!* To me it's much more logical and reasonable that an intelligent Creator put the proper navigation instructions and biological navigation skills into the multitude of migratory birds, butterflies, and other insects, animals, fish, etc.



As a 'P.S.', I'd like to add the amazing Chameleon. Not only can he camouflage himself by changing colors, but *his bulging armored eyes can move 180 degrees up/down or left/right! More! Each eye is independent, enabling him to track two juicy bugs simultaneously!* Even more! His rolled up tongue, used to snare insects, is longer than he is! All 'accidents' or intelligent design?

### **Leading Scientists Who Documented Evidence for a Real God**

I've been told many times that no intelligent person could ever believe in an unseen Creator. My answer is a long list of well-educated scientists who not only believe in God but wrote books with evidence for His existence and power. They just followed the evidence as I was doing. Here are just a few whom I've cited in the **Evidence Resources**. Many have doctorate degrees and are university professors. In 2004, [Dr. Antony Flew](#), a notorious British atheist, eventually saw God's hand in the complexity of DNA after 50 years of research revealed the super complexity of DNA. He wrote [THERE IS NO A GOD: How the world's most notorious atheist changed his mind.](#) <sup>42</sup> [Dr. Hugh Ross](#), an astrophysicist who saw God's hand in the wonders of astrophysics, wrote [THE FINGERPRINT of GOD](#) as well as [COSMIC EVIDENCES for CHRIST.](#) <sup>68</sup> [Dr. Francis Collins](#), former agnostic and leader of the historic Human Genome Project, saw God's hand in the marvels of the DNA directing all life. He wrote [THE LANGUAGE of GOD.](#) <sup>69</sup> [Grant Jeffrey](#), noted apologist, saw God's hand in all of nature. After a decade of research, he wrote [THE SIGNATURE of GOD](#) and [THE HANDWRITING of GOD](#) as his 'conclusive proof' the Bible is utterly trustworthy. <sup>70</sup>

[Dr. Amir Aczel](#), saw God's hand in the mathematics of  $E=mc^2$  and wrote [GOD'S EQUATION](#) as well as [WHY SCIENCE DOES NOT DISPROVE GOD.](#) <sup>6</sup> [Lanny Johnson](#) wrote the fascinating booklet, [THE HAND of GOD](#), showing amazing mathematical relationships in DNA and other miracles in nature that demand an intelligent Creator. <sup>26, 92</sup> You'll also find one of America's top trial lawyers, [Mark Lanier](#), who literally puts Christianity on trial! <sup>2</sup> Add Jewish lawyer Jim Jacob, who can

practice before the Supreme Court. <sup>106</sup> Here are more *citations of some former atheistic scientists, professors, or professionals who just followed the evidence to discover that God was real after all!* <sup>8, 53</sup>

### Conclusions from Scientific Studies

As an engineer, I had really hoped to have found absolute proof of God's existence through scientific evidence. I was disappointed. While it was compelling, it was far from absolute. Science alone can never prove God absolutely. On the other hand, science cannot disprove God either!

That is 'outside the domain of science', a phrase used often as an excuse by atheistic scientists but it is true. Science cannot write the formula describing a human soul. It cannot write an equation describing the essence of life itself. It cannot create either one. Science only has endless speculations about how our universe came into existence and how life began, but no real proof for either. It has no real answers about whether there's an afterlife and what it's like. Their standard answer over and over is, "We don't know but we're working on it."

However, from examining the scientific evidence found in nature, it became clear to me that science overwhelmingly supports the existence of a master intelligent designer and sustainer of our universe <sup>68</sup> as opposed to the endless speculations of accidental evolution. I didn't know at that time if the intelligent designer was just a 'force', or a 'god' some religion made up.

However, I'd made major progress since my college days when we 18-year-olds would gather, smoke pipes and cigars to appear older, and discuss the godless philosophies of Hume, Paine, and others. We especially loved Nietzsche's 'God is dead' and his elegant sounding 'existential nihilism' (life has no ultimate purpose). In contrast, campus Christians would sometimes wear a T-shirt with "God is Dead," Nietzsche. But the second line said, "Nietzsche is Dead, God!"

'There's no absolute truth' was our college 'theme song' because it meant 'no absolute morality'! So we're all free to do as we please, we thought. The professor in a philosophy course I'm taking states there are two types of truth. Subjective truth is what one believes is true based on your experiences but highly colored by your own personal bias and judgment (or lack of it). You may add 'old wives tales', myths, and superstition, as well as many religions, and other sources unsupported by solid evidence.

Objective truth is based upon tangible scientific facts and other evidence. After personal investigation for over a year, I found the truth of Jesus to be objective truth, not a 'blind leap into the dark' as some would say. Is there 'no absolute truth'? Click [here](#).

*When Dr. Norman Geisler was in college, he totally demolished the entire godless logical foundation of a 14-week philosophy course based on super-philosophers Hume and Kant. It took only two sentences demonstrating the law of non-contradiction!* <sup>9A</sup>

**Tekkie Candy: Einstein: "Greatest blunder of my life!"** *It's ironic that Einstein's  $E=mc^2$  was major evidence to me that there may be a God because of Einstein's incorrect use of a 'cosmological fudge factor'. Einstein's first publication in 1915 of his next theory, the General Theory of Relativity asserted for 14 years that there was no need for creation or for a Creator (God). This was because for over 300 years scientists had asserted that our universe was static, that is, it had always eternally existed, neither expanding nor contracting. However, Einstein's equation of gravitation for a static universe didn't quite match actual astronomical observations. He therefore had to insert a 'cosmological fudge factor' to balance his equation so he could continue to proclaim a static universe* <sup>74</sup>

*However, in 1929, Sir Edwin Hubble's discovery of the Doppler 'red-shift' of starlight proved our universe was not static but expanding. Expansion proved our universe had to have had a sudden beginning, known later as the 'Big Bang' of creation. Einstein was amazed to discover that his 'cosmological fudge factor' exactly accounted for the difference between his previous incorrect static*

*model and the monumental discovery that our universe is indeed expanding!*

*Einstein then grudgingly had to accept the evidence of the God of creation. He declared his continued assertion of a static universe, was "The greatest mistake of my life." After accepting a God-Creator, a thought he expressed many times, even appears on bookmarks: "I want to know God's thoughts. All the rest are merely details." Also he said, "God does not play dice," his opinion of the new quantum theory but also an equally obvious reference to evolution. Einstein saw an ordered, designed universe, not an accidental one. Are skeptics and evolutionists smarter than Einstein when they assert everything in our universe came about through totally random unguided accidents? Einstein believed strongly in a God-Creator, but not in a God to whom we're accountable.)*

### **To 55% - Realizing There's Very Little True Justice in This Life**

That God has given all men a conscience is evidenced by the fact that we all have some sense of the difference between right and wrong. (Romans 2:15) Almost all religions of the world have codified this in their doctrines. God has also given us a sense of justice to reward good and punish evil. We all know about bullies, wife beaters, murderers, and even genocidists who were never brought to justice and properly punished. Millions were tortured and murdered under Hitler, Tojo, Stalin, Mao, Pol Pot, and many others. The last three would account for over 175 million victims alone. In recent times we've seen the slaughter of the Tutsis in Rwanda, the Bosnian slaughter of the Serbs, and the atrocities of Liberia in Sierra Leone (cutting off legs and forcing children to kill) plus many others. America, you're guilty too. Since the Supreme Court ruling in 1973, over 61 million innocents have been murdered in their own mother's womb by legalized abortion in the U.S.A. (Dr. Richard Land, of the Southern Evangelical Seminary in Charlotte, NC, stated in his message at our church that around 41% of abortions are single women (from fornication). Only 1% are for rape.) See <http://www.numberofabortions.com>.

What punishment in this life would be truly adequate justice? The lack of meaningful justice here on earth drew me closer to believing in God who would not only punish evil-doers but would also reward the righteous one day.

### **To 75% - by Discovering Evidence that the Bible IS God's Word**

Most of my ungodly friends trashed the Bible as 'only a book written by men'. Only partially true. Most of the Bible records eyewitness accounts of what men had actually seen and heard. The rest might be compared to an executive who never writes letters. He dictates them, a secretary writes them down. God dictates, man wrote. (2 Timothy 3:16, 2 Peter 1:21)

Whether you believe the Bible is God's Word or not, God still judges you by His Word and holds you accountable for your sin because *God speaks through your conscience* to tell you, 'That's wrong!'. If you ignore it often enough, God gives you the freedom to turn your back on Him. Even as a pre-teen, how many times did you disobey your parents? Lie? Lust? Even toddlers will continue to lie, even with the stolen chocolate still on their faces, yet their expression tells us they know they're lying and that's wrong. *Even heathen who've never even heard of the Bible will be judged by God's word because it's written in their consciences!* (Romans 2:11-16) "I don't believe!", will not be accepted at the final judgement! (Romans 1:20)

The Bible is inspired of God but the evidence that's true is not just because it says so. You'll learn later that, among other evidence, *major proofs of God's authorship* are the *mathematical proof* that a multitude of prophecies could not have been coincidental and *scientific dating of the Dead Sea Scrolls*. The latter proved these copies were made at least a century BEFORE the fulfillment of the prophecies! Not only that, but these scrolls agree with previous ancient copies of Scripture, thanks to the diligence of the trained Jewish order of scribes! The Bible could've only come from God. (Note: Radio-carbon dating can be calibrated and reliable back to several thousand years. No dating method claiming millions of years has any reliable calibration standard so is unreliable. Age of strata is unreliable because that's measured the same way.)

John 20:31 is called the 'key to the Bible' because it outlines its ultimate purpose : 'that we may have life (eternal) through Jesus Christ' instead of what Jesus called the 'lake of fire', which is what we really deserve for our continual disobedience to God, called sin.

The Bible shows man's utter failure to live to please God long term and God's love that reached down to us. Before the Bible when men lived only by their conscience, mankind became so vile that God destroyed them all except Noah and started all over with his family. Noah and his descendants also ultimately failed. Then God gave the Old Testament laws of commandments and animal sacrifices. God chose only Israel for the 'flagship' of this new covenant.

In spite of demonstrating His love and power through miracle after miracle, Israel repeatedly turned to idol worship instead. Seeing human failure as so profound, God replaced Old Testament animal sacrifices to open the new Covenant of Grace in the New Testament.

Seeing continual human failure, He loved us enough to replace repeated animal sacrifice by the sacrifice of His son Jesus to die for us. (John 3:16, Romans 5:8, Ephesians 2:8-9) Jesus' resurrection from the dead validated His mission directly from God and for those of us who accept Him, our gratitude continues to inspire us to follow and obey Him. (2 Corinthians 5:14-21)

### **"SHOW ME EVIDENCE GOD DIRECTED THE WRITING OF THE BIBLE!"**

The Bible has proven itself the true Word of God over the last several thousand years in at least four ways: **fulfilled prophecies, archeological discoveries, transformed lives, and the martyrdom** of thousands who chose death rather than to renounce Bible truth. Who would die for a lie? I would add that the Bible also detailed the correct sequence of creation thousands of years before the science of geology even existed and eventually 'discovered' it!

We'll look at the ultimate evidence of transformed lives from evil to God-fearing a bit later but first, the most compelling scientific evidence proving the Bible is God's word is, in my opinion, the **laws of mathematical probability** against the accidental fulfillment of Biblical prophecy.

The Old Testament prophets were required to prove at least one of their prophecies were from God by at least one being fulfilled during their lifetime. Else they would be stoned to death as false prophets. Also, No one could make their own copy of Scripture. Only a trained group called 'scribes' were allowed to make copies. Those were meticulously checked for copying errors and only one error, even a tiny one, was enough to have that scroll burned and redone. This is only one reason why we can rely upon the authenticity of ancient Old Testament scrolls. More later about the Dead Sea Scrolls, an amazing verification that copies haven't been corrupted.

Over half of the Bible is prophecy, much of it already fulfilled in the secular history of Israel. There are also *over 300 fulfilled detailed prophecies about Jesus' first coming* alone, over 50 fulfilled during His crucifixion and resurrection alone. This citation covers only 100. <sup>88</sup> *Jesus' resurrection is truly the foundation evidence for our faith.* More about this, click here: [To 99%](#) .

We shall now look into mathematical probability which validates some important Biblical prophecies, then two of the most amazing prophecies I know: Daniel's prophecy of four ancient world kingdoms to come over several future centuries, then the amazing 70-Weeks prophecy which predicted the exact coming of Jesus to an accuracy within two days!

### **Math Professor Computes Odds Against Accidental Fulfillment of Prophecies**

Professor Peter Stoner explains in his book, ***Scientific Proof of the Accuracy of Biblical Prophecy***, how he and 600 of his students at Pasadena City College computed the odds of exactly predicting only 48 of the 324 biblical prophecies of Jesus' first coming. <sup>10, 11</sup>

**The odds against this being coincidental, or just guessing, was around 10<sup>157</sup> against!**

(1 followed by 157 zeroes.) **This is the same as multiplying by 10 times itself a hundred and fifty seven times! This number is greater than the number of all the atoms in our whole universe! How much greater?**

Scientists estimate there are about  $1 \times 10^{80}$  atoms in the universe. Therefore, the odds against just guessing the 48 prophecies are **10 followed by 77 zeros times greater!** The odds of winning the multi-million-dollar North Carolina Power Ball Lottery were announced on TV as around 175 million against, or 1.75 followed by only eight zeroes! Click [here](#) for the exciting story of how Sgt. DeShazar, an American prisoner of war, found the Bible validated through fulfilled prophecy, then went on to receive Christ and help bring the Japanese pilot to Christ who had bombed Pearl Harbor in 1941! Fantastic!

### **Our first amazing prophecy: Four World Kingdoms in Sequence!**



In Daniel, chapter 2, Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, had a very troubling dream. His court magicians could not interpret it *because this time the king required that they first tell him what the dream was!* They failed. He cut them in pieces and made their homes dung hills.

But God gave Daniel, a Jewish prisoner, the interpretation to show this pagan King there was a real God after all because only the true God could have shown Daniel the exact interpretation of the King's dream.

Incredibly, Daniel told the king he'd dreamed of a huge colossus with a head of gold, chest and arms of silver, with belly and thighs of brass. The legs were of iron, the feet mixed with iron and clay. Daniel interpreted this as a prophecy of world kingdoms ruling the Middle East until Christ returned to rule. He prophesied the first three — **by name** — and **in proper sequence** — to reign during the next few thousand years: Babylonian, Medo-Persian, and Greek.

By its description, the fourth kingdom, represented by the 'legs of iron', could only be the Roman Empire which conquered the whole Middle East and far beyond in all directions. A rock, 'not cut out with hands' (symbolizing Jesus' virgin birth) is to smash the statue on the feet, when Jesus' takes the rule of all earthly kingdoms one day. The feet of iron mixed with clay represent it's latter years, not as strong, but mixed with the clay of other nations which is believed to be the EU, the European Union, formerly the Common Market. When will this happen? Any time! (More: See [The Statue in the Book of Daniel](#) leaflet. <sup>88</sup>)

### **Our second most amazing, prophecy 445 years ago:**

#### **Exactly When Jesus (Messiah) Would Come ± Two Days!**

This is found in the 70-week prophecy of Daniel 9. <sup>12</sup> The Messiah, *Jesus, would present Himself to Israel as their Messiah-king. The prophecy was fulfilled 445 years later on Palm Sunday! (Luke 4:18-21) Jesus would be rejected as Messiah and king, which was also prophesied in Isaiah 53. Zechariah prophesied He would return later be accepted as both.*

Israel had been in captivity in Babylon for 70 years as God's punishment for idolatry (Also prophesied in Jeremiah 25:11-12!) Jesus, the Messiah-king was to come after the first 69 weeks of ancient Jewish lunar years (445 years) when their captor-king would release them to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem. (Even the name of that king, Cyrus, and the fact that he was Persian, were also prophesied *150 years before he was born!* (Isaiah 44:28) *Fantastic!*)

*This prophecy of the exact day Jesus was to come was confirmed to an accuracy of plus or minus two days (0.001%) over a period of nearly half a millennium! The beginning and end dates of this prophecy were originally set according to a phase of the lunar (moon) cycle. NASA confirmed those dates by verifying those lunar cycles against the historical dates! **WOW!***

This prophecy is explained in a great slide show on the Internet. [12](#) *Only God could've made all these prophecies through Daniel, Isaiah, Jeremiah, and others including Micah who prophesied that Jesus would even be born in Bethlehem!*

Even more awesome proof the Bible is God's word is over 300 other prophecies of more details of Jesus' first coming, detailed later in the [To 99%](#) section.

**Question:** What does Daniel's 70-week prophecy have to do with our celebration of Christmas? Rev. Gary Scoggins, a pastor-friend, recently *connected this prophecy to the 500-mile, two-year journey of the Magi, to Bethlehem to honor Jesus.* It is believed that the Babylonian astronomers had archived Daniel's 70-week prophecy for centuries. So when a new and very unusual star appeared, the Magi saw this as an indication it was time to bring their prophetic gifts which would dramatically fit Jesus' three offices: gold for a king, frankincense for a priest, and myrrh for His death when He paid for our sins.

*This miraculous star appears to have only been seen, or noticed, by the Magi.* My opinion is that, unlike every other star in the sky which moves very, very slowly 15 degrees per hour east to west, the Star of Bethlehem was stationery, hovering in the west right over the very place where Jesus was. Scripture indicates Jesus would've been somewhere around two years old by the time the Magi arrived to celebrate his birth. That's because a jealous Herod ordered all children, age two and under to be killed. So the traditional 'wise men bringing gifts to the babe in the manger' traditionally celebrated at Christmas, may not be quite accurate. *This star is the subject of several Christmas hymns and is also why a bright star crowns our Christmas trees.*

*NOTE:* I believe that when the Magi said 'they had seen His star in the east', it meant they had seen the star while they were in the east in Babylon. Question: how could the star just stop and hover over the exact place in Bethlehem where Jesus was? If you look directly overhead, the stars are so far away, there is no way to say if a star above is exactly over your house, your neighbor's, or even houses miles away.

(Precision instruments math to observe that wouldn't be invented until around 1500 years later.)

Also verifiable in world history, are many other prophecies of God's punishments of Israel and several major cities for idolatry. Only one prophecy was the 'scraping flat' of the ancient city of Tyre (by Alexander the Great) to build a causeway out to conquer the new city offshore. (Ezekiel 26:4)

### **Reasons We Know Biblical Prophecies Were Written Before and Not After Events!**

1. **Logic:** It's reasonable to expect that the almighty God would ensure that His word be preserved along with techniques to distinguish between the true Scriptures and those falsified by evil men.
2. **Restricted Access:** It was very 'hazardous to your health' to proclaim yourself a prophet in Old Testament days! Prophets had to first make an 'out-of-the-ordinary' type prophecy which was fulfilled in his lifetime or to perform a well-verified miracle proving God had spoken. If either failed, the 'prophet', who claimed God had spoken to him, would be stoned to death!

Further, the Scriptures were zealously protected from error. No one was allowed to copy the Tanakh (Old Testament) except scribes, a professional group who fanatically preserved them. Every character copied was carefully checked and counted by the head scribe. If any errors were found, that portion of the scroll was burned and recopied. No erasures, no strikeouts, no errors.

3. **Scientifically Dated Manuscripts!** The most important of these are the ancient Dead Sea Scrolls. Click [here](#) to jump to *How do We Know Ancient Old Testament Copies ...* for details.

4. **Jesus Christ Himself Quoted Many Old Testament Prophecies as fact** in the New Testament. That establishes their truth because the evidence of Jesus' resurrection, we will share in the next section, proved He was indeed sent from God with God's truth.
5. **Jesus also validated the New Testament** because He chose and commissioned disciples to take God's message to the world, making other disciples who would do the same. (Matthew 28:18-20) The book of Acts records that beginning which continues right to this present day through missionary work all over the world. This book, and multitudes of others, are also part of that mission.
6. **The Harmony of a Multitude of Copies of Scriptures in Different Languages:** Click [here](#) to jump to *Thousands of Ancient Copies Help Sort out the Phonies*. (Josh MacDowell's 24,970 copies in 15 languages from different countries.)
7. **Are there Other Ancient Books that Validate the Bible?** Click [here](#) to jump to *Do Other Ancient Books Validate ...* Flavius Josephus and his landmark history of the Jews answers a resounding 'yes' as well as Eusebius and others, including 'living Bibles' of transformed lives like my inspiration, Marine Corporal Stevens you read about in my testimony at the beginning of this book.
8. **How About the Time Gap** between historical dates of the New Testament and the finding of written copies? **No problem!** Click [here](#) to go to *How About ...*
9. **The Bible Correctly Proclaimed Scientific Truths Confirmed Centuries Later:** Genesis detailed the correct sequence of creation, centuries before geology. Job 26:7 asserts that 'He hangs the earth upon nothing'; nothing visible of course: gravity! The ancient Greeks believed the earth rested upon the shoulders of Atlas. Hindus believe the earth rests on the back of a giant elephant standing upon a giant turtle floating in the sea. (*A Hindu college student, to whom I witnessed in Europe, was speechless when I compared her 'holy' books to the Bible.*)

**The Greatest Evidence of All:** Click [here](#) for living evidence of the power of God through His Bible to transform lives. I've already documented my own transformation earlier in this book. Below you'll read of a Philippine cannibal boy who later became a Christian missionary pilot and the ending of centuries of war between Pacific cannibal tribes when 5,000 received Christ. Multitudes more lives are transformed through churches, evangelistic meetings, and prison chaplains. The [Pacific Garden Mission](#), a 75-year-old rescue mission in Chicago, posts personal testimony videos at <https://www.pgm.org/>. The mission also broadcasts true dramatized stories of lives miraculously transformed from evil to Christ. Here's the worldwide schedule <https://bbn1.bbnradio.org/>.

(Here's a link to more evidence for the reliability of the Bible. Seventeen 'life-changing questions are answered here. Many are the very same ones I myself had asked years ago about the Bible, life, and the future: [www.truth-that-matters.com/bible.htm](http://www.truth-that-matters.com/bible.htm). You'll also find personal testimonies about the transforming power of the Bible and about several primitive tribes on this fantastic site.)

(Click [here](#) if you wish to skip the following details of evidence for the Bible.)

### **How do We Know Ancient Old Testament Copies of Scriptures are Authentic?**

Very strong evidence of biblical Old Testament validity was provided by the discovery of the [Dead Sea Scrolls](#) in 1947. <sup>9B</sup> Among these ancient documents were 915 scrolls of Scripture with multiple copies from every book except Esther. (Esther does not mention God.) *All the multiple copies of the scrolls agree well with each other and with our modern Bibles!* No cheating here. Copies were originally made only under the supervision of professionals called Scribes who checked every single character multiple times and burned erroneous copies.

*Twenty two copies of Isaiah and nine copies of Daniel are among the most important prophetic books found amidst the Dead Sea Scrolls.*

The Isaiah scroll contains the ~700-year-old prophecies that Jesus would be incarnated from Heaven into a human baby by a virgin birth, that He would be pierced (crucified) for our sins, then rise from the dead. (Isaiah 7:14 and Isaiah 53) Isaiah 53 alone has around 15 details of the first coming of Jesus. How do we know these were not written after these events as a 'cheat'? Because they were dated using the reliable radioactive carbon 14 technique to have been copied at least **one to two centuries before** Christ. *Only God could've known such amazing details with 100% accuracy!*

*Not only did the 'scrolls' greatly strengthen my faith, they were responsible for turning Jim M., my missionary colleague, from life-long atheism to God.* Jim M., a former McDonnell-Douglas Aircraft engineer, had been taught about God when he was six but when he found out that Santa Claus was a lie, he quickly classified God as the same. However, the verification of Jesus' prophecies by the Dead Sea Scrolls was his 'tipping point' that indeed there was a God and the Bible was His word. His many questions were resolved with time. He later became a missionary and served many decades with his wife in South America, helping found over 40 churches.

We were ecstatic to be able to actually see these scrolls when they were displayed at the *Discovery Center* in Charlotte, NC, while on tour from Israel!

*NOTE: Dating of objects only a few hundred years B.C. are usually reliable because the instruments can be calibrated against objects of known age like ancient wood samples. Not so for the millions and billions of years claimed by evolutionists using other methods. Click [here](#).)*

### **Thousands of Ancient New Testament Copies Help Sort out the Phonies**

Josh McDowell, a former atheist, left law school to find evidence to debunk Christianity. Just following the evidence, he instead found a mountain of evidence to support it! Among that evidence: there are **over 24,970 ancient manuscripts of the New Testament in 15 languages from several countries, still in existence today! Add over 5,100 ancient Greek New Testament copies!** This makes the New Testament the most widely copied and circulated document of antiquity. (*Homer's Iliad is second with only 643 copies.*) There are no known surviving original New Testaments, as is the case with most ancient documents. However, quoting from McDowell's book, page 35, "[Fortunately the abundance of manuscript copies makes it possible to reconstruct the original with virtually complete accuracy.](#)" [9C 13A](#) One textual criticism test of validity is to compare, say, 50 copies of the same thing. If 48 agreed with each other but the others did not, then the remaining two are most likely corrupted. These ancient documents agree pretty well with the most widely accepted modern translations. **Even more important are Dr. Geisler's techniques of restoration.** More here. [9C](#)

[Perhaps the most powerful validation of both Old and New Testaments](#) is the fact that Jesus Himself validated both by the authority of His resurrection which proved He was indeed sent from God! He validated the Old Testament by quoting it as fact, especially prophecies of His coming, His future crucifixion, and His resurrection. (Isaiah 53) Their exact fulfillment was recorded by many eye-witnesses in the New Testament. (More: click here: [Dead Sea Scrolls](#).)

History records Jesus also prophesied the destruction of their magnificent temple 40 years later in 70 A.D. because Israel had rejected Him as their Messiah despite hundreds of prophecies describing His ministry and message. (Ironically it had taken 40 years to build the temple.) History records the fulfillment of another of Jesus' prophecies: after the destruction of the temple in 70 A.D., disobedient Israel would be scattered throughout the world but eventually become a nation again. That was fulfilled in 1948 when the nation of Israel was reborn. Jesus said that would be a warning to us that His second coming could happen any time after that



when He will take His followers from the world. Then God will unleash His wrath upon the rest of the world for seven years. (See the last book in the Bible, Revelation, for what happens next. It's pretty horrible so it would seem wise to get right with God now by inviting Jesus to be Lord of your life.)

### **Do Other Ancient Books Validate Events in the Bible?**

Here are only two of some 31 books by some very early historians who give testimony that the Bible accounts are indeed true. ***Antiquities of the Jews*** <sup>17</sup>, by Flavius Josephus (37 – 100 A.D.) is the first account of Jesus outside the New Testament. Except for the Bible, his history was the most widely read book in Europe for centuries. Eusebius, a widely recognized historian of the fourth century, compiled an authoritative ten-volume history of the church up to around 324 A.D. *He confirmed the eyewitness accounts of Jesus' resurrection!* You'll find additional evidence of the trustworthiness of the Bible at these citations. [H I](#) *This citation presents 13 evidences of the resurrection, the very foundation of Christianity.* <sup>18</sup> However, the best testimony to the truth of the Bible is a very long list of godly men whose lives reflected the power of the resurrection which we've presented earlier as the '**living evidence of transformed lives**'. You may add business man J.C. Penny and presidents Washington and Lincoln. All were not only Bible believers but they were not ashamed to publicly proclaim it. Also add Marine Corporal Stevens in whom I saw a 'living Christ' eight years before I was ready to surrender my life to Him.

### **◆ 'Living Evidence' the Bible is the Word of God: Lives Transformed!**

God's desire is that all men may be saved from the penalty of sin to enjoy eternity with Him in Heaven one day. (John 3:16, 1 Timothy 2:4) I believe the evidence shows that God's love is clearly shown in that He created everyone with a 'spiritual radio receiver' to hear His voice if they wish. The Word of God is indeed '**living and powerful**' to transform lives. (Hebrews 4:12)

Years can often go by before Scripture finally gets through. In my case it was eight years before God's word became real to me. I was like a cartoon cat I saw years ago. The cat was shot with a cartoon shotgun who then said, "**HA! You missed!**" Then the cartoon cat drinks from a fountain and water pours out a dozen holes! God's word accomplishes His ultimate purposes: **to show His love, expose sin, and lavish His grace upon us through redemption in Jesus Christ.** (Isaiah 55:11)



*(Note: Yes, there are some hypocrites but God knows who they are and they will be severely punished. Jesus is the gold standard of Christianity, not disobedient hypocrites, so we cannot use them as an excuse to 'hide' from God as we point the finger at others. Four fingers are then pointing back to you! Romans 14:12)*

*You'll find a whole book of amazing transformations by a living Christ, not by just changing religions, in this book. [S](#) Included are the stories of a bomb maker, a witch, and a drunken, womanizing college student whose transformation chapter is: "**From Serving the Devil to Serving God in Bible Translation.**" (He also founded an orphanage for 600 Aids orphans.) Here are more miracle transformations.*



### **"White Men Taste Like Chicken!"**

For those who are open to knowing God, amazing life transformations can result. I also know personally a host of others whose lives have been truly, miraculously transformed by God's word. One of them is my friend of many years, Nard Puygao. Nard was born into a remote Filipino head-hunting tribe. When missionary Dick Roe first came, Nard was eight. The tribe couldn't understand why he'd come. Nard was told, "**White men taste like chicken!**" Years later, after Roe had translated the Ismag Scriptures, Nard came to Christ and was eventually trained as a missionary pilot. Years later he had the wonderful privilege of

flying the very first Isnag New Testaments back into his village! <sup>66</sup> Jokingly looking back, he said of an over-plump colleague, "Before I found Christ, he could've fed our village for a week!" That man was VERY happy Nard found Christ!

### **Fantastic History Behind the Hymn, *Jesus Shall Reign***

This is perhaps the most spectacular mass spiritual transformation I know. The Pacific island tribes of Fiji, Samoa, and Tonga had been cannibals for generations and were bitter enemies. However, the Tongans heard about a 'magic' book (the Bible) which had brought peace to the Fijians and the Samoans. The Tongans bravely embarked upon a dangerous 250-mile storm-tossed voyage by canoe to get one. It was not 'magic' but the Christ of the Bible who had transformed the Fijians as well as the Samoans! A missionary returned with the Tongans.

After years learning their language, the missionary began Bible translation. Typical of the pre-computer era, he used a typewriter and several thousand file cards, one for each new word, along with all information learned about that word. Around 20 to 25 years later he finished the New Testament. As a result, God's power eventually transformed the whole tribe including the Chief! Cannibalism and centuries of warfare and atrocities ceased. The Tongans made the perilous 250-mile journey to Fiji again to attend a joyous combined worship service. Around **5,000 former cannibals attended from all three tribes!** These former enemies were now one in Christ! They even set up a Christian-based government. <sup>67</sup>

The hymn written because of that miraculous service in 1862 was '*Jesus Shall Reign*!' This hymn, written so long ago, was the [final link in God's chain to call me into missions back in 1962, a century later!](#) I'm sure it has also called many others. This hymn is so meaningful to me that I'm often moved to tears when I hear it.

*Many other primitive peoples have amazingly responded to God's call who had previously worshipped evil spirits and idols.* Well known missionary Don Richardson shares many fantastic accounts of miracle conversions in his book, ***Eternity in Their Hearts***, <sup>1</sup> showing that God has indeed placed a basic 'empty place' in the hearts of men that is unsatisfied until it is filled by Jesus Christ.

### **This Atheist Sought Evidence to Debunk the Bible and Murder His Dad!**

Josh McDowell, the former hardened, zealous, atheist mentioned earlier, called Christianity 'garbage'. To prove it, he left his university law studies to go abroad and get evidence to write a book which would both debunk and ridicule the Christian faith. The evidence he found proved just the opposite, so Josh gave his life to Christ and wrote ***Evidence Demands a Verdict*** <sup>13</sup>.

You'll find Josh's tragic childhood, his life story, and his amazing conversion in the book/DVD ***Undaunted*** <sup>13b</sup>, probably the most compelling testimony my wife and I have ever read. Josh's life-long plans to kill his drunken, abusive father melted in the love that God showed Josh, when He forgave his sins. That love moved Josh to forgive and love his drunken father who responded with, "[How could you possibly love me?](#)" This was the tiny crack through which the light of Christ's love began to pour into this cruel man's evil life.

Josh's love and the difference Christ had made in his life led his abusive father to finally give his life to Christ as he said, "[Son, if God can do in my life what I've seen Him do in yours, then I want to give Him the opportunity.](#)" **Forty years of drinking ceased. He didn't need it any more.** The biggest change Christ made in his life was the change from cruelty to kindness. He was truly a new creature in Christ. Though he died only 14 months later, over a hundred people in that area committed their lives to Jesus Christ because of the change they saw in Josh's dad, formerly the town drunk. <sup>13B</sup>

I grew up around an uncle who was an abusive alcoholic like Josh's dad. Like Josh McDowell's dad, Elmer found Christ and became a new man. When I visited him shortly before his death, he kept me up until 3:00 AM talking about the Lord and asking questions.

Many of you will remember '**First Mate Bob**', host of the great *Haven of Rest* gospel radio program. He was formerly a long time godless alcoholic who found Christ when he was at the point of suicide on a California beach one night. Eventually transformed into a minister of God, he blessed and encouraged people all over the world by radio with his preaching and his gospel quartet. He was a great daily encouragement to me when I had just begun to walk with Christ. Such is the power of Christ's love and power to change lives, then use them to reach others. Having seen overwhelming evidence of the veracity and power of the Bible, I was encouraged to continue my search for God and you have already read the end result in my testimony at the beginning of this book which resulted in our current 51-year missionary service.

### **How About the Time Gap Between Gospel Events and Written Copies? No Problem!**

The earliest copies of the New Testament gospels are dated quite a while after Jesus' death and resurrection. Are they trustworthy?

#### **1. Oldest copies found may not be the earliest written copies!**

Here are some good reasons why. Until the Edict of Constantine in 325 A.D., the Roman Empire hunted and killed Christians for rejecting the Roman gods. All Scriptures found would've been burned. Others hid their copies for fear of being incriminated. Many were never recovered, obviously. Early Christians would have memorized originals and then destroyed the copies as incriminating evidence like many in the persecuted church do today. I've already shared above that the agreement between most of the 24,970 surviving portions in several languages plus over 5,000+ Greek New Testaments allow us to construct the originals with confidence according to linguists' textual criticism. [13A](#)

#### **2. Jesus' disciples who lived with Him for three years passed on Jesus' teaching.**

Jesus was preparing these men to carry His gospel to the world. I'm sure Jesus repeated His teachings over and over in the context of doing many miracles. This was so life-changing it would have greatly reinforced long-term memory recall. Here are only two.

**Luke**, the doctor, highly educated, meticulous by nature, who wrote the Gospel of Luke and Acts, surely would've taken copious notes and memorized most.

**John**, the only disciple not martyred early on, penned the vision of Revelation while in exile after the Roman emperor failed to kill him by boiling him in oil. He was a three-year companion of Jesus and wrote the Gospel of John and three epistles. He was still alive in 90 A.D., 57 years later in Ephesus. <sup>88</sup>

#### **3. God Himself made sure the teaching of Jesus would not be lost.**

When I shared above that these disciples 'wrote' Scripture, they only put down what God had ordained. 2 Timothy 3:16, '*All Scripture is God-breathed*'. Yes, we can all recall verbatim what our moms told us when we were children, but maybe not all. Yes, I wrote my testimony in this book by memory with details going back over 56 years but I did forget a few things I'm sure. Jesus, His divine credentials validated by His resurrection, promised the Holy Spirit would preserve ALL His important teaching as Scripture:

**"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I said to you."**

**John 14:26** (Also: Luke 24:49; John 2:22; 12:16; 14:16; 15:26; 16:7,13; 1 John 2:20,27)

Even without written earlier copies of the Scripture, the disciples proclaimed Jesus' teaching

orally to others as Jesus had trained them to do. They, in turn, did the same by the power of the Holy Spirit. (2 Timothy 2:2)

(End bypass of Bible Evidence.)

### Why so many translations? Which is the right one?

**Good question!** You could read the Bible without a translation if you spoke ancient Hebrew and first century Greek; hence the need for a translation for most of us.

**Let's begin with translations we know are false.** In the late 1800s, the *Jehovah's Witnesses* (JWs) proclaimed their doctrine, then declared all previous Bible translations corrupt. They wrote their own 'Bible', the *New World* version. Their Bible translation committee of only five included but one translator and one knowledgeable of Greek. Biblical authorities soundly reject the translation because it contradicts proper translation and God's basic message in so many ways.

These include salvation by good works instead of grace (Ephesians 2:8-9) and Jesus was not divine, being merely a 'son' of God (human) instead of the divine 'Son' of God. (John 1:1-14) JWs also forbid saluting the flag, military service, blood transfusions, and birthday celebrations. They say all Christians will be killed and only (JWs) will be in Heaven, all but 144,000 of them in the 'on probation' section. Only 144,000 will be truly with God. Hell is for all non-JWs (*including Christians*) but it's instant destruction, not eternal suffering as Jesus described in the real Bible. (Luke 16) They do not call their meeting places 'churches' but 'Kingdom Halls' because they believe God will destroy all Christianity along with all non-JWs. Over time, they revise their Bible to fit new doctrines like their 144,000 and multiple prophecies 'from God' of the exact year the world would end which never happened, three times. (The last was in 1975, after which they would've had to revise their false Bible again. These failed prophecies proved they were not God's prophets at all but false prophets Jesus warned us about.)

The *Book of Mormon* is a wildly imaginative tale of three Semitic tribes who came to America, one of which was the alleged ancestor of American Indian tribes. This was debunked by DNA testing. I was surprised to find a lot of plagiarized King James Scripture in 17<sup>th</sup> century English because the migration took place, allegedly, between 2000 B.C. and 400 A.D. Other assertions also lack 'fact checks'.

Mormon founder Joseph Smith, declared God was once Adam who became God by being so righteous. Question: Who had created Adam and Adam's universe before God existed? *Oh, did I mention a Mormon can become a 'god' ruling over a world populated by his millions of descendants in the afterlife? Hence the polygamy of their founding fathers practiced today, as evidenced by some sensational public trials. They're obsessed with genealogy so they can be baptized on behalf of dead ancestors, no matter how evil, without their repentance, cooperation, or God's approval. Read the truth about these two religions and their false Scriptures here.* [89](#)

**17<sup>th</sup> century Shakespearean English needed updating.** The most popular translation until the 1900s, was the *King James Version* of 1611. King James didn't translate. He oversaw a committee of 54 translators. It was an excellent translation for its day. The meanings of 'thee' and 'thou' are obvious but some words don't mean the same in modern English. For instance, 'conversation' in 1611 meant your overall behavior. Today it means just your speech. So in 1901, 30 scholars updated the obsolete English to become the *American Standard Version*. (The *New King James Version*, my second favorite, was done by 119 translators. The very popular *New International Version* was produced by 115 translators.) Common sense, and the Bible, say there is wisdom in a multitude of counselors.

**English has tens of thousands of synonyms.** Therefore the same idea can be translated in multiple ways. For instance, saying, "I want a pizza", means the same as the British "I wouldn't say no to a pizza." (My Collegiate Thesaurus has over 274,000 synonyms and antonyms! The

Internet version at <https://www.thesaurus.com/> would have many more times that. I found 84 synonyms for 'replace' while revising this book today!) Human nature enters the picture when a group feels they can make a clearer, more interesting translation. Two versions use a limited vocabulary at the second grade reading level for use by non-native English speakers.

The *Amplified Bible*, my favorite, specifies exactly the shade of meaning of the original Hebrew and Greek words, often using a phrase, making this translation more accurate than a 'word-for-word' translation into English. Thirteen translators crafted this version going back to very ancient manuscripts.

**Trustworthy!** My computerized *Power Bible* provides 13 translations of each verse to compare. I've never seen any significant differences of the meaning. You can trust the 20 translations clearly documented in this citation which includes dates, how many translators, which ancient manuscripts were used, and clarity for average reading level by school grade. [88](#)

-----  
Let's keep in mind that the trustworthiness of the Bible is not based upon the accuracy of purely human memory passed down through the centuries. It is established by eyewitnesses, prophecy, a multitude of early copies which agree with each other, archeology, and the power to transform even the lives of even serial killers and cannibals, as I have reported.

No one disciple remembered everything, but among the eyewitness accounts of four of them, we have a pretty good record of Jesus' ministry. Yes, you will find slight differences among the four Gospel writers but no major contradictions. In fact, police detectives interview separately multiple witnesses to a crime. They often discover collusion if all four stories match in every detail. Here's more on how we got the Bible, why it's trustworthy, and *Grant Jeffrey's 'conclusive proof'*. [11](#), [70](#), [88](#) Dr. Geisler's forensic parallel has been shown to be Biblical truth: an 'unbroken chain of evidence' overseen by the mighty God of our universe. [9c](#)

=====  
Let's pause here and be reminded that *the Bible was NOT replaced with evolution in our schools and universities in 1963 because evolution was proven true and the Bible false!*

*The Scopes 'monkey trial' of 1925 both upheld our American tradition of Bible teaching in schools since 1776 and affirmed the fact that teaching evolution in schools was still illegal. SADLY, ONE ATHEISTIC MOTHER, Madeline Murray O'Hair, fought all the way to the Supreme court (Murray v. Carlett) to prevent her children from being taught about God. America has been reaping the consequences ever since, beginning with the '60s sexual revolution and degenerating into the ever-increasing lawlessness and mass shootings we see today. Click [here](#) for the ugly 'fallout' during the 29 years following removal of the Bible in schools.*

Ironically, O'Hair was a victim of her own atheism when she, a son, and grand-daughter were kidnapped, mutilated (legs sawn off), and murdered by her *American Atheists* office manager, David Waters, an unrepentant career criminal whom she admired. Her other son, William Murray, found Christ and established the Religious Freedom Coalition. Unfortunately, the ACLU, (American Civil Liberties Union) continues to successfully fight for atheism they call 'freedom' (FROM religion), systematically destroying the very foundation upon which our country was built. PRAY!

### **The Bible is Both the Most Loved and the Most Hated Book in History**

It's judged to be the most hated because of the massive attempts to destroy it. Today **the Bible is illegal in at least 52 countries**. *On the other hand, it's the most loved book because of so many who've been willing to suffer for believing it, from the seven million early church martyrs buried in the ancient catacombs [18](#) under the streets of Rome to those suffering death or persecution in at least 52 countries today.* In North Korea they kill anyone for just possessing

a Bible. Christians who were willing to suffer and die for their faith throughout the centuries helped to convince me that Jesus' message was true. In fact, some time ago, a minister said that a Christian is tortured, imprisoned, or martyred somewhere in the world today every 18 minutes. We hear on the TV news that ISIS is exterminating Christians by the tens of thousands.

I received an email just this morning about a missionary colleague in Northern India who reported that a mob of 100 religious fanatics broke into a home church meeting to beat up all the men, some of whom had to be hospitalized. As usual, it's not expected that the police will do anything because the fanatics are 'enforcing' the local Hindu religion. *Someone recently said that religious fanatics love their religion so much they will kill you. But Jesus loved us enough to die for us and commands us to love each other as He loved us. Then He returned from the dead, something no other religious founder has done, to soundly validate His message to the world. (Romans 1:4)*

Sherry, an SIM missionary friend, had been evacuated from Liberia because of the turmoil of a civil war years ago. Recently she narrowly escaped the dangers of a coup in Mali. Why doesn't she quit? Sherry closed a recent prayer letter with her reason, *Because of Calvary!*

◆ **To 99% - Finding Powerful Evidence of Jesus' Resurrection!**

**IF you're Jewish**, click [here](#). A prominent Jewish lawyer asks, "Was Yeshua a liar, lunatic, or Lord?" A lot of evidence pro and con is presented. You decide.

[Why does God require that we believe in Jesus' physical resurrection in order to make it to Heaven?](#) I think for two reasons. **One:** It validates Jesus is the only one God sent to be His acceptable sin sacrifice, God's love gift to the world, excluding all other ways. (Romans 1:4 and John 14:6) **Two:** Our belief in the resurrection also validates we've made contact with the unseen God by faith, based upon abundant evidence which we shall now share. (Romans 10:9)

Over 500 saw Jesus after His resurrection in Galilee at one time. There's more: "[... to whom He also presented Himself alive after His suffering by many infallible proofs, being seen by them during forty days and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God](#)". (1 Corinthians 15:6, Acts 1:3) You may add to this a zealous persecutor of Christians named Saul who was converted on the road to Damascus when the resurrected Jesus appeared to him. He was transformed to Paul, the greatest missionary in the New Testament, who we shall meet again later. Because he was an eye-witness to a risen Christ, Paul was willing to endure severe persecution and eventual martyrdom for preaching the gospel he once hated. You may add 11 of Jesus' 12 apostles and many other Christians who were willing to suffer and die because they were eye-witnesses to the truth of the resurrection.

Let's look at God's grand plan for the ages through a few of his prophecies centuries ago. There are over 300 prophecies of Jesus' first coming in the Old Testament. Accidental fulfillment? They would've happened anyway? **Really?**

Then let's see you predict 100% of over 300 details about the next person to come around any corner in New York City! This citation has 100 prophecies of Jesus' coming <sup>88</sup> but how about narrowing that down to just a few of the prophet Isaiah's prophecies from about 700 years in advance. Isaiah 7:14 predicted His virgin birth, required lest He inherit the sin of Adam. Chapter 53 prophesied our Savior, the Jewish Messiah, would be rejected and killed to bear our sins followed by several verses prophesying He would return from the dead, which He did!

*This empty tomb proved all other religions to be only opinions or philosophies, not facts! There are not many ways to Heaven as so many assert. **Narrow minded or the truth?** The truth, reality, is always 'narrow-minded' because it's backed by evidence. Anything else is speculation. Many have founded religions but not one of them ever returned from the dead with Jesus' victorious proclamation, "Because I live, you too shall live!" (John 14:19)*



Also, which founder of any religion proclaimed He was actually God, as Jesus did? (John 1:1-14) Jesus came down from Heaven to be incarnated (not 'born' like us) into a human body, showed God's love by paying for our sins, then powerfully confirmed His origin and message by his resurrection from the dead.

Amazingly, before his death Jesus Himself prophesied He would be raised from the dead by His Heavenly Father (God) on the third day after his burial! (Matthew 12:40)

Where's the credible scientific evidence for multiple reincarnations asserted by Hinduism, Buddhism, New Age, the Dalai Lama, etc.? Many of us recall the elaborate Bridey Murphy hoax that fooled people for decades. God declares in Hebrews 9:27 there is no reincarnation of souls after death, only His judgement.

The abundant evidence for Jesus' resurrection is in stark contrast to that of Lhamo Thondup, the **Dalai Lama, world leader of Buddhism**. He was chosen at two years of age as the 14<sup>th</sup> reincarnation of the 13<sup>th</sup> Dalai Lama. How? He seemed to recognize objects (toys?) of the deceased 13<sup>th</sup> Lama! The Dalai Lama said, "**Many atheists embrace Buddhism.**" (*Time magazine*, March 18, 2019, pp. 32) He's right. I met one last week witnessing in a hardware store. She was very angry and cut my testimony off immediately as soon as she heard the name of God.

In contrast, Jesus came in a visible, physical, touchable body, performed miracle after miracle, was witnessed being killed and then resurrected in a physical body. Josh McDowell rightly said, **'Jesus was Lord, liar, or lunatic but never only a good man, never only a prophet, never only a teacher.** I invite you to follow a Jewish lawyer's examination of Jesus. <sup>62</sup> More: [13B](#), [9D](#) Only Jesus was sent by God and proved it by His resurrection!

**Surprisingly, for three days after Jesus' crucifixion, not even His own disciples believed His prophecy, nor that of Scripture, that He would return from the dead on the third day.** They went back to their fishing, believing it was all over. We'll return to this at the end of this section.

Let's set the scene. After Jesus' crucifixion, His tomb had been sealed with the Imperial Seal of Pilate, the Roman governor. A huge stone weighing several tons blocked the entrance. It was guarded around the clock by Roman soldiers. The death penalty was waiting for anyone who broke the governor's seal or for any soldier who fell asleep on guard duty. We read in John 19:38-40 that Jesus had been 'mummy-wrapped' in linen strips similar to how His friend Lazarus had been prepared for His burial.

In that culture, about 100 pounds of sticky spices were typically applied to the 'mummy wrappings' during the embalming process. (John 11:44) They would've learned this technique during their previous 450 years of slavery in Egypt. It appears that the women who embalmed Jesus did not quite finish embalming His head, since after His resurrection the napkin was found separate from the rest of His 'mummy wrappings'.

So they returned to Jesus' tomb to finish the embalming on the third day after His burial. *The huge stone sealing His tomb had been rolled away! A bright and shining angel sat upon the stone and said, "He is not here for He is risen as He said!"* (Matthew 28:6)



Jesus' 100-pound mummy burial wrappings were still inside and were left behind. I believe they were **still intact but empty!** The almighty God who created our universe from nothing wouldn't have needed to unwrap Jesus to release Him. If true, the still intact, but empty, mummy wrappings spectacularly demonstrated God's power. You'll find these eye-witness accounts as well as for those following in Matthew 27 & 28.

Because of the great number of eyewitnesses, there are only two reasonable alternatives to God raising Jesus from the dead: they crucified the wrong man or His disciples stole the body.

**1. They crucified the wrong man.** Several major religions today, including Islam, hold this position but here's why that cannot be true. The religious leaders had known and hated Jesus for three years. When Jesus was arrested, Judas, one of his own disciples, identified him to the authorities. They personally confronted Him at His trial. They were really anxious to watch Him suffer and die so you'd certainly find most of them at the foot of the cross hurling curses and spitting on Him. No mistaken identity!

**2. The disciples stole the body, then lied about the resurrection.**

**a. You'd have to believe** that all 16 Roman guards (four quaternions) fell asleep at the same time, knowing they would face a certain horrible death for dereliction of duty if caught. You'd have to also believe that breaking of the Roman governor's seal followed by the grunts and groans of the disciples trying to move the huge stone of several tons that sealed the tomb, plus the grinding sound it made when it was moved, was not enough to awaken all of the 16 allegedly sleeping soldiers.

**b. You'd have to believe** that had the Roman soldiers been awakened by attempts to steal Jesus, a handful of untrained disciples could have overpowered a quaternion (16) of professional Roman soldiers to steal the body.

**c. You'd have to believe** that the disciples took time to unwrap Jesus' heavy 100-pound mummy wrappings, then stick them all back together in an exact 'Jesus shape' but empty! Then they would've needed even more time to neatly fold the cloth covering His face and carefully move it to another location in the tomb, all the while 'sweating bullets' for fear of being caught. (John 20) His feet had been pierced by half-inch spikes during His crucifixion, so they would've had to carry Him. Not something you want to do while running from the scene of a 'crime'!

**d. You'd have to believe** that lying about Jesus' resurrection would've been easy for the disciples who allegedly stole the body. Jesus' disciples had left their homes, their livelihoods, and put their lives on the line for three years. All this with no certain income. They had also sat under Jesus' teaching for three years and saw God's power in miracle after miracle. Then all became liars knowing that was a great sin? They were severely persecuted and all were eventually martyred except John. **Many religious fanatics today are willing to die for what they believe, but who would be willing to die for what they knew was a bald faced lie?** <sup>14, 15</sup>

Police detective J. Warner Wallace examined the disciples alleged resurrection



lie conspiracy at a national apologetics conference I attended. Conspiracies almost always involve only a few people and only for a short time before raising serious suspicion. Questioning suspects separately usually gets the truth when one 'spills the beans' to save his own skin. Jesus' disciples never did that but all were willing to suffer persecution and martyrdom for proclaiming Jesus returned from the dead. (Romans 1:4) (Wallace was a 'hard nosed' atheist for 15 years but eventually just followed the evidence to a living Christ!)

**e. You'd have to believe Jesus wasn't really dead when His body was stolen.**

He was beaten all night, hung on the cross for six hours in the hot sun (minus the three hours of darkness reported), then speared upwards through His heart by experts. You'd have to also believe that after 'reviving', He unwrapped his mummy wrappings, glued together with 100 pounds of embalming spices (!!), neatly folded the napkin from over his face, and moved a huge stone weighing several tons — from the inside of the tomb (no handles) — with hands pierced by huge nails. Then He walked over 160 miles to Galilee where He was seen by over 500 eyewitnesses at one time. (Acts 1:3) All this on feet with half-inch holes from the spikes that nailed Him to the cross. This absurd scenario is called '*the Strauss Swoon theory*'. (If you know of any medical doctors who believe this is medically plausible, change doctors!) We may add Jesus was then seen repeatedly by eye-witnesses over the next 40 days.

A 'cold-case' analysis of Jesus' death was also presented by police detective J. Warner Wallace at the national apologetics conference I attended. In Jesus' day there was no coroner to establish if someone was really dead. They would have used what we call today, The Morris Triad: *Rigor mortis, cold skin, and purplish lividity* where blood had settled to the lowest parts of the body. Only after that would they begin embalming by removing blood and wrapping the body, mummy-style, with up to 100 pounds of spices as they did with Jesus. More at the website: <https://coldcasechristianity.com/>.

**f. You'd have to believe mass hallucinations** explained Jesus' many post-resurrection appearances, including to 500 at once. (Acts 1) Psychologist Gary Collins states that the same hallucination is never seen by more than one person at a time. A 1975 study suggests hallucinations reflect various expectations. <sup>88</sup> The disciples *didn't expect Jesus to return from the dead* after His crucifixion so they returned to their fishing. Even when the resurrected Jesus suddenly appeared to His disciples in a closed room, Thomas, who wasn't there, didn't believe them. Jesus later appeared to Thomas personally. No more 'doubting Thomas'. (John 20)

**Having demonstrated that the only reasonable explanations disproving Jesus' resurrection are invalid, (by *reductio ad absurdum* for you Tekkies) then we must conclude that the eye-witness testimony and simple reason show that God did indeed raise Jesus from the dead on the third day!** This validates His credentials as having come direct from God with His true message of His love for us, of eternal life, and that *because He lives, we too shall live!* (John 14:19) Here's comprehensive documentation of Jesus' post-resurrection appearances: <https://answersingenesis.org/jesus-christ/resurrection/>. Here's another terrific, four-point presentation of the main evidence that Jesus' resurrection really happened: <http://www.equip.org/article/the-f-e-a-t-that-demonstrates-the-fact-of-resurrection/>.

Don't be deceived by cults which say Jesus' resurrected body just evaporated into gas or by non-Christian religions which claim someone's ghost or an angel materialized to preach a false gospel like Mormonism and some major religions. There are hosts of demon

impersonators eager to deceive. Jesus' 40 days of post-resurrection appearances were **a physical body**, evidenced by the fact that He invited His disciples to touch Him and He even ate fish with Him. He was not a spirit. (John 24:36-43)

His body was not like our bodies but it was physical none-the-less and His disciples watched Him physically return to Heaven with the clouds, just as He has promised to return. (Acts 1) *Jesus' resurrection powerfully declared Jesus to be the Son of God with power and that it is the cornerstone not only of Christianity but the foundation bedrock of all God's promises in Scripture!* (Romans 1:4)

### **Darkness, Earthquake, Walking Dead! More Evidence of Jesus' Resurrection**

Several supernatural occurrences which occurred at Jesus' crucifixion and resurrection give eye witness testimony that this was not just the crucifixion of an ordinary man but the fulfillment of God's divine plan for our redemption.

**Extraordinary events** began with thick darkness for three hours. (Was God blotting out the sight of the terrible suffering of His son who at that time was loaded with all the sin of the world, both present and future?) In many Christian movies, the cause of this darkness is shown as an eclipse. POSSIBLE? IMPOSSIBLE! *Jesus' crucifixion occurred during the Jewish Passover which was at the time of a full moon! No way could the moon obscure the sun while it was on the opposite side of the earth! We may also add that no total eclipse can cause total darkness for more than EIGHT MINUTES! Eyewitness accounts report thick darkness lasting three hours.* from noon until 3 pm when Jesus gave up His life with, **"It is finished!"** The hour of His death, 3:00 pm, was very meaningful because that was the time of the daily Jewish evening sacrifice! **Awesome!** (Matthew 27:45) [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Solar\\_eclipse](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Solar_eclipse)

**The massive 'veil' in the Jewish temple was split!** The 'veil' separated the Holy Place from the Holy of Holies. (Matthew 27:50-51) It was 60 feet high, a hand width in thickness, and it took five men to close it when originally installed. At Jesus' crucifixion, it suddenly split from top to bottom, symbolizing God had reached down to man with forgiveness and that Jesus was now our High Priest forever. God's First Covenant with Israel through Moses and yearly animal sacrifices were over, as prophesied in Jeremiah 31:31. The whole book of Hebrews in the New Testament is about this new covenant where *all earthly priesthoods were replaced with Christ, our High Priest*. He mediated the New Covenant when He offered Himself as God's perfect sacrifice for our sins and now intercedes for us at God's throne. (Hebrews 9:24)

**An earthquake strong enough to literally 'wake the dead'** was another extraordinary event. This one cracked open tombs in the cemetery and formerly dead people walked into the city and were seen by many. Not ghosts, not zombies, people — also resurrected from the dead by the overflow of God's 'resurrection power' for Jesus! (Matthew 27:50-54)

### **All Hope Shattered on the Stone that Sealed Jesus' Tomb?**

After the crucifixion, the disciples' hopes were shattered! Had Jesus been deluded when He had prophesied His return from the dead on the third day? Had the last three years with Jesus been just a waste of time? Yes, it certainly looked that way. Luke returned to his medical practice and most of the rest returned to their fishing. They kept a very low profile, fearing the religious authorities who'd crucified Jesus. (John 21:3). Peter, previously the boldest of the disciples, had even denied knowing Jesus three times, once with cursing, to save his own skin the very night before the crucifixion. It was over. *Jesus did not prove Himself the Messiah of Israel as they had hoped but was stone-cold dead. **Dead, dead, dead!*** All their hopes were dashed upon the large stone that sealed Jesus' tomb.

What changed these frightened 'rabbits' into brave, courageous 'lions'? Jesus' numerous

appearances to them over a 40-day period AFTER He had been crucified and resurrected from the dead on the third day! (Acts 1:3) *Peter, previously the biggest coward of them all, was transformed into the boldest apostle!* Defying the religious authorities, and at the risk of his life, he bravely preached Jesus to crowds right in the streets of Jerusalem! On the first occasion, 3,000 Jews accepted Christ as Savior and the Church of Jerusalem was born. (Acts 2:41) The apostles were arrested, beaten, and ordered never to speak of Jesus again. Continuing to defy the authorities, they were re-arrested, beaten, and threatened again. They replied that they could only speak of what they had seen and heard. They would obey God rather than men. Eventually all of Jesus' apostles except John were re-arrested, beaten, persecuted, and eventually martyred. (According to tradition, John was thrown into a pot of boiling oil by a Roman emperor but survived. He was then banished to the Island of Patmos. <sup>14</sup> There, God gave him the vision we know today as the book of Revelation in the Bible.)

NOTE:

The Jewish authorities persecuted Jewish Christians because they felt these Messianic Jews had lost their Jewishness. In Dr. Arnold Fruchtenbaum's leaflet, ***Jesus was a Jew*** <sup>87</sup>, he asserts nothing could be further from the truth. He exposes the great differences between today's Jewish religion and that in their ancient Tanakh. He answers many Jewish questions and includes several testimonies of Messianic Jews. Most importantly, he details prophecies of Jesus' first and second coming from the Tanakh! Jewish friend, wouldn't it be wise for you look into this? Where you spend eternity is at stake because Jesus affirmed He was the only way to Heaven by His resurrection from the dead. (John 14:6) Let's look at some eyewitness accounts.

In contrast to Peter's transformation from 'scared rabbit' to a 'brave lion' after Jesus rose from the dead, we also have a 'Jesus-hating lion' transformed into a 'Jesus-loving lion!' I'm speaking about the conversion of a fiery, religious Jewish fanatic named Saul. He hated Christians so much that he got warrants to seek out and arrest any Christian he could find, even in neighboring nations. They would then be eventually murdered in the name of religion. Acts 9:1 begins, "Then Saul, still breathing threats and murder against the disciples of the Lord, ..." His whole life's direction was changed when the risen Christ appeared to him on the road to Damascus, totally transforming him, beginning with several days of total blindness. It also validated his apostleship to speak on God's behalf in the many epistles of the Bible he wrote to guide young churches under his new name, Paul.

Under his new name, he became the greatest Christian missionary of the New Testament. His new life's purpose changed from murdering Christians to making Christians: "... to open their eyes, to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins and an inheritance among those who are sanctified by faith in Me (Jesus)". (Acts 26:18)

Among many modern day Jews who have accepted Christ (Messianic Jews) and who have remained faithful under severe persecution are Richard Wurmbrand, tortured for 14 years, about whom you will read shortly, and Corrie Ten Boom, who survived a Nazi death camp to become an outstanding international speaker. (You may click on the underlined links.) Her book, ***The Hiding Place*** <sup>73</sup> is a classic.

How do persecuted Christians endure? 'As seeing Him who is invisible, Jesus, Messiah!' (Hebrews 11:27)

Seven million Christian martyrs, silently attesting to the truth of Jesus' resurrection, are buried in the nearly 900 miles of catacombs under the streets of Rome. <sup>18</sup> This was the result of 280 years of violent persecution under ten Roman emperors. Roman soldiers wouldn't enter the catacombs because, like many people today, they feared the spirits of the dead, but had no fear of the living God. Many of these martyrs had an opportunity to save their lives by worshipping

the Roman gods. *They refused and chose to die instead.* Many Christians were killed just for sport or ravaged by wild beasts in public arenas. Nero nearly exterminated them after blaming them for the city-wide fire in Rome. He also covered them with pitch and burned them alive on crosses to light his garden parties. However, he could not extinguish the light of their testimony that still shines brilliantly down through the centuries.

The Roman emperor Diocletian killed so many Christians that he erected a monument to himself that bragged, *'I have erased the name of Christ from the world!'* Yes, it is true that many would gladly give their lives for causes they BELIEVE to be true. But how many would give their lives for what they KNEW WAS A LIE? Until Constantine conquered Rome nearly 300 years after Jesus' time, Christians continued to suffer as traitors in public arenas or slow horrific deaths by crucifixion, often lingering on a cross in the hot blazing sun for days.

The willingness of those early Christians to die, rather than renounce Christ, has not only continued to testify to the truth of their beliefs, but was an enormous factor which helped me to eventually come to faith in Christ. You may add multitudes more who were tortured under the false church's inquisition which lasted around 600 years. <sup>14</sup> The media reported today that *ISIS has nearly succeeded in erasing Christian testimony in Iraq and Syria after executing around 124,000 Christians. Most could've been spared had they denied Christ and joined this evil religion.* Yet they gave their lives as a powerful witness to us and to future generations. They remained faithful because *'they looked forward to their heavenly city'*. (Hebrews 11:16)

Today, more than one major religion even kills their own children who depart from their beliefs. As I mentioned, the early Christian martyrs had nothing to gain and everything to lose by proclaiming the resurrection of Christ. They didn't proclaim it because they just 'believed' something they'd heard about. They believed it because they had actually seen the resurrected Jesus! Christian martyrs down through the centuries form a large part of the *'great cloud of witnesses'* of Hebrews 11 and 12 who continue to cheer us onward.

[Rabbi Jonathan Cahn reports some very strange happenings in the Jewish temple during the 40 years following the crucifixion/resurrection of Jesus.](#) Quoting from the ancient (Jewish) Talmud, Rabbi Cahn reports that Jesus' persecutors were frequently reminded they had rejected their Messiah which God had sent by these unusual events in the temple at Jerusalem.

For centuries before Jesus' crucifixion, on the day of the yearly sacrifices, the [scarlet cord](#) would turn white on its own, as God Himself confirmed He had accepted their animal sacrifices for the sins of Israel under His first covenant. However, for 40 years after Jesus' crucifixion it never turned white again. The [western-most lampstand](#), symbolizing the presence of God in the Holy Place, kept going out. [The massive gold doors](#) of the temple, which normally took 20 men to move, kept opening and closing by themselves! Messianic Rabbi Cahn leads a group of several hundred Jews in New Jersey who have recognized Jesus as their Messiah and the only way God provides to forgive sins. (John 14:6) Jesus' resurrection from the dead is our biggest evidence this is true, with a lot more evidence to be presented later. This citation will take you to Rabbi Cahn's documentation, some of which is also online. <sup>62</sup>

### **[The 'Unbroken Chain of Evidence' Back to Jesus' Resurrection](#)**

Several major world religions are based solely upon an unwitnessed vision of one man. In contrast, the resurrection of Christ, the foundation of the Christian faith, was witnessed by scores who saw Him after His resurrection. Jesus appeared over a period of 40 days as well as to over 500 at once in Galilee. (1 Corinthians 15:3-6, and Acts 1:3)

I love to study forensic science. To prove a case, forensic scientists must demonstrate an **un-interrupted chain of custody** of the evidence. I was just thinking the other day that the

lives and the **willing martyrdom, imprisonment, and torture** of millions of Christians through the ages did not break this '**chain of evidence**' going right back to Jesus' resurrection. This chain validates Jesus' ministry and His 'resurrection power' over sin, hate, and the grave.

***MORE 'Living Evidence' the Bible is God's Word!  
Tortured 14 Years for His Faith***

Meet Richard Wurmbrand, left in the picture. He is one of my spiritual heroes. He was just one of many whose lives demonstrated the power of the '*chain of evidence*' back to Jesus' resurrection. Wurmbrand, a Romanian Messianic Jew, was unjustly imprisoned by the communists for 14 years because of his faith in Christ as the Jewish Messiah. He endured torture and three consecutive years of solitary confinement which drove many prisoners literally insane.



During that time Wurmbrand's faith in Christ, his Messiah, never wavered. Instead, he courageously thought up sermons and material to refute the Soviet ***Atheist Handbook!*** Though near death himself in a prison hospital, he demonstrated God's love to a dying Communist persecutor in the next bed by leading him to Christ!

We met Rev. Wurmbrand while serving in Italy around 1970. Sergio, a convert and former drug addicted-hooligan nicknamed 'Nero', is in the back of the photo on the extreme left. His convert Quirino is in the center. Richard, one of our Messianic missionary colleagues, is in the foreground, right. All of us were much encouraged. Wurmbrand later founded ***The Voice of the Martyrs*** to expose persecution of Christians around the world and has, in some cases, even effected their release from prison by stirring world opinion. Names of persecuted brethren who need prayer, as well as Wurmbrand's experiences are detailed in his book, ***Tortured for Christ***, and is a free download at this citation. <sup>15</sup> This 'unbroken chain of evidence' back to Christ's resurrection continues in the lives of heroic persecuted Christians around the world right up to the present.

We are still rejoicing over the recent announcement that U.S. Pastor Saeed Abedini was released from three and a half years of imprisonment in Iran. Totally alone except for two months, he remained faithful as he endured regular beatings, and torture, as well as threats of death for his faith. Even witnessing the hanging of groups of ten fellow prisoners every Wednesday did not shake his faith. He heroically lived out Revelation 2:10: "**Do not fear. Be faithful until death ...**" <sup>81</sup> You'll also find inspiring reports of Christians suffering extreme Islamic persecution in several countries in ***i am n*** from ***Voice of the Martyrs***. <https://www.i-am-n.com>

***Chuck Colson's Prison Fellowship*** reports a host of miraculous changes Christ made in the lives of former thieves, drug addicts, even murderers. Colson, a lawyer, had been in prison himself, convicted during the Nixon Watergate scandal. Even his time in prison was part of the Lord's plan because it resulted in Colson's call to help prisoners find Christ. (Romans: 8:28) Those who followed his program had the lowest repeat offenses rate of any rehab program. <sup>2</sup>

Remember Jeffrey Dahmer, the cannibalistic serial killer who asked, "**What's wrong with what I did. Evolution teaches we're only evolved animals.**" You may add him to those in the 'unbroken chain of evidence' of transformed lives that validate the Bible and Jesus' resurrection. A friend told me that he lived near Dahmer's prison and that the local news reported that Dahmer had come to Christ just before he was killed by an inmate.

Our friend, Bible translator Aretta Loving, has written two books documenting lives transformed today by the reality of Christ's resurrection. Outstanding in these collections are the conversions of Sam Berkowitz from ***Son of Sam, serial killer***, to ***Son of Hope***. <sup>E</sup> Another conversion was that of Naphthali Mattah, a Kenyan in Chapter 16: ***From Serving the Devil to Serving God in Bible***

*Translation.* Mattah turned to Christ from his former drunken and immoral life style. <sup>9</sup> After his conversion, he labored for around 20 years to translate the Bible and bring Christ to his people, the Suba. They live on remote Mfango Island in Africa's Lake Victoria. He and his wife also founded a large orphanage ministering to around 500 children, most of whom are AIDS orphans. Let's look at what the Suba were like before Naphtaly brought Christ to them.

### Human Sacrifice by Tree

The Suba of Kenya are mostly fishermen. At right is a buffet table made to look like a Suba boat at a recent retirement party for Wycliffe missionary La Donna Mann. She has ministered to the Suba on mission trips over many years. When felling a tree to make a boat, a man was chosen to be sacrificed by making sure that when cut down, the tree fell on the man and killed him. They believed that man's spirit would become part of the boat to protect the fisherman, to bring rain, and generally to bless them all.



It is very significant that after the Scriptures were translated into Suba, the Scripture dedication ceremony began with the arrival of God's word in a boat like the one above. This spoke of the sacrifice that God had made for them, Jesus Christ. Human sacrifice ceased! God's spirit would now be with them.



Left, we're at the end of the Suba boat buffet table above with La Donna Mann at her retirement celebration. Her late husband Bill had been a co-developer of the CADA dialect-adaptation software that got me interested in Bible translation technology. The Manns pioneered the use of CADA in Bible translation throughout Africa and in parts of Asia. It was through learning of CADA at a church missions conference that I first became aware of the software ministry for Wycliffe Bible Translators at JAARS in North Carolina where I later devoted over ten years assisting Bible translation technology. (*More in Chapter 6.*)

This is only one of thousands of instances where Bible translators have brought God's word to primitive tribes and seen miraculous conversions and marvelous changes in dark, primitive, evil cultures. These links will take you to some miraculous transformation of other evil tribes who were transformed by Christ: [Aucas](#) of Ecuador, [Candoshi-Shapra headhunters](#) in Peru, [5,000 cannibals in Fiji and Samoa](#), and [Nard](#), a personal friend and former Filipino Isnag headhunter, now a missionary pilot, who eventually flew the very first translated Isnag Scriptures back to his own tribe!

### Five More Links in the 'Chain of Evidence':

#### Five Former Atheists Who Tried to Debunk the Resurrection

1. **Frank Morrison**, an English journalist, set out to disprove the resurrection. The evidence proved the opposite and produced the book, ***Who Moved the Stone?*** <sup>19</sup> Read it online: [www.gospeltruth.net/whomovedthestone.htm](http://www.gospeltruth.net/whomovedthestone.htm).
2. **Lee Strobel**, a Yale law graduate and legal editor for the Chicago Tribune, was a staunch atheist for 15 years. After seeing a wonderful change in his wife after she received Christ, he spent 21 months, as a professional investigative journalist, examining scientific evidence which would either debunk or prove Christ was real. He published his findings in ***The Case for Easter*** <sup>20</sup> and many other books. In his recent book, ***The Case for Grace***, he cites nine sources that verify Jesus' resurrection was real, some from the Bible, others from

outside the Bible. I continue to use one of his powerful leaflets, *The Evidence of God*. <sup>1B</sup> Strobel has been a leading speaker at apologetics conferences for quite a few years.

3. **Josh McDowell** was mentioned previously, but here's more information. As you may recall, he quit college to spend a year abroad attempting to assemble evidence to ridicule and debunk Christianity. Instead, the evidence led him to the truth of all that the Bible proclaims. His many books include the classic, ***New Evidence Demands a Verdict***. <sup>13</sup> McDowell spent years with Campus Crusade sharing the gospel he once sought to debunk and stressing purity before marriage. He's also an international apologetics speaker.
4. **Ravi Zacharias**, a world-class apologist from India, bravely debates Christ's resurrection on many college campuses. <sup>21</sup> His ***Jesus Among Other Gods*** is a classic. <sup>22</sup> Ravi was an atheist until the age of 17, when he unsuccessfully tried to commit suicide by swallowing poison. John 14:19 brought him to Christ: 'Because I live you shall live also'.
5. **Sir William Ramsay**, the famous archeologist, spent 30 years in the Middle East trying to prove that the book of Luke, perhaps the most credible of the four Gospels, and therefore Christianity, were fakes. The evidence he found proved exactly the opposite! <sup>23</sup>

**MORE EVIDENCE from the world's international standard for dates: B.C. and A.D.:** before or after the birth of Jesus Christ! Yes, some countries have their own ancient calendars but B.C./A.D. is the international standard for interaction between all countries. The ancient Roman calendar was begun with the foundation of Rome by Romulus and Remus who, allegedly, as helpless infants, were suckled by a wolf. Rome eventually dominated most of the known world *but there was obviously enough real historical evidence for most of Europe, and then most of the world, to record historical events as B.C./A.D.: before Christ and Anno Domini*, meaning 'Year of our Lord', which is understood by many to be the Lord Jesus Christ.

**NOTE: Academia and non-Christian religions prefer BCE (Before Christian Era) and CE (Common Era).**

You'll find more former atheists who just followed the evidence at this citation: <sup>8</sup> and more evidence of the trustworthiness of the Bible here. <sup>1D, C8, H</sup> Short interviews of around a dozen atheistic college students, TV comedian Tim Allen, and Professor Richard Dawkins, our generation's leading atheist, are available online. <sup>96</sup>

Yes the testimonies of former skeptics did impress me but I still lacked about 1% reaching the real God for myself. What was I missing and how could I find it?

In addition to these men, I would add the testimony books of eight scientists, all of Ph.D. caliber, many of them university professors and former atheists, who followed convincing evidence of Jesus' resurrection, the very foundation and cornerstone of Christianity. Click [here](#).

\*\*\*\*\*

#### **4. SURPRISING FINAL 1% to BREAK-THROUGH INTO SUNNY SKIES!**

The overwhelming evidence for Jesus' resurrection convinced me only intellectually that there might be a God, maybe. But I asked, "What right does God have to tell ME how to live?" I had chosen to remain neutral, a 'fence sitter'. (Only later would I learn there is no fence! You're in or you're out. Bound for Heaven or hell, no in-between.) Why was God not yet real to me? Because my heart was still untouched. Why? Because of the barrier



between all of us and God: sin, disobeying Him.

Apart from the Bible, our own God-given conscience tells us when we've done wrong, be it lies, thefts, lust, coveting, blasphemy, etc. God has written His Ten Commandments in our hearts. (Romans 2:15) Who of us can say we've never disobeyed our conscience? True, we can ignore or silence our consciences but not the fact that we've also disobeyed God! *Police lie detectors are a major evidence that we have a God-given conscience.* Though criminals often lie, their bodies automatically react to the stress of lying since their conscience knows it's wrong. Though still not 100% accurate, the newer lie detectors are much better. Few criminals can fool the new machines by putting a thumbtack in their sock as they did with the old machines. The lesson here? We may fool ourselves but we can never deny God gave us a conscience!

I didn't want God's way so I looked elsewhere, and especially for an easy 'do-over' after death so I could continue doing whatever I wanted until then. Let's look at a few.

### **'Do-Over' #1: Reincarnation?**

The great majority of the people in this world, Buddhists, Hindus, etc., believe in some form of reincarnation. They recognize man's failure to be 'good enough' for future happiness in some afterlife. Their way to eternal happiness is that each time we die we're reincarnated into another body giving us repeated opportunities to just keep trying to improve. If we improve enough during each successive lifetime, the goal is to disappear into Nirvana to become part of what many call the 'cosmic consciousness'.

Hindu 'karma' states that if you're very bad you'll be reincarnated as a rat or a bug with a miserable life. This is why devout Hindus don't kill the rats that eat tons of stored grain while millions of people starve. (That rat may literally be someone's deceased evil cousin or your mean ex-boss.) Many of you will remember the supposed proof of the reincarnation of the Irish girl, Bridey Murphy, some years ago. That was sensational for a while but was later proven to be a downright hoax. The Bible totally rules out the possibility of reincarnation. Hebrews 9:27-28 declares that we die only once and after that comes the judgment. The names of all those who've truly received Christ and are following Him will be found in the Book of Life and will be joyfully ushered into Heaven. The others? Well, not so good. (Revelation 20:11-14)

### **'Do Over' #2: Fly Now, Pay Later?**

Knowing that no one of us is perfect, many people I know follow a religion that teaches we must get purified after death. This is done by excruciating suffering in fire for many years. An Italian in Rome told me that seven years in the fire is needed to purge even one 'buggia', a white lie. She got it right that God doesn't excuse even 'little white lies'. Taking the extreme opposite position, just because you no longer commit certain sins, it doesn't mean God's forgotten about them so you are now good enough for Heaven.

This 'fly now, pay later' dogma was debated for around 10 centuries before being finally accepted as dogma in 1439 at the Council of Florence. Neither Jesus nor Peter nor any of the apostles wrote of any such place in Scripture. In fact such a place as this directly contradicts 1 John 1:7, 'the blood of Jesus Christ purifies us from all sin'. Jesus paid the full price of our admission to Heaven for all who receive His gift and have started down the path of repentance. We do, however, find that the saved will stand at the judgement seat of Christ where our works while on earth will be judged for heavenly reward or loss of reward, not whether we make it into Heaven which was already settled when we received Christ. (2 Corinthians 5:10, 1 Corinthians 3:15)

### **'Do Over' #3: Yank 'Mobster Mugsie' Out of Hades?**

The Mormon religion encourages you to look up your dead ancestor genealogies so you can be baptized on their behalf, snatching them from the flames of Hades straight into Heaven, bypassing both repentance and the clear teachings of Jesus Christ. (Imagine the look on the face



of your grandfather, 'Mobster Mugsie', when suddenly, ZOOM, up he goes! 😊) Also, if you've always dreamed of being 'god' over some world in the hereafter, this religion will show you how, provided you work hard enough and undergo certain temple rites.

I've known quite a few other people in several Christian religions who think they have the 'best of both worlds'. They literally live for the devil all week with no remorse because they think that on Sunday their sins can all be absolved. Then after church they fully intend to serve the devil until next Sunday. God never gave us a free license for sins just because they can be forgiven. In spite of their pious rituals, here's what these hypocrites will hear Jesus say one day, "[depart from Me, I never knew you ...](#)" (Matthew 7:23) More in [Appendix A](#) including: be cautious before you judge someone a hypocrite! They may just be at the beginning of their walk with Jesus. Also remember that we all struggle against temptations every day. [Summarizing, no 'do-overs' after death. There are only 'aints and saints' headed for 'smoking or non-smoking'! \(Dr. J. V. McGee\)](#) [For a bit more on the religions of the world, click here.](#)

### **"Who is God That I Should Obey Him?"**

In the Bible, we read that was mighty Pharaoh's reply when Moses confronted him with God's command to release several million Jewish slaves. That was my position for years as a former atheist. I, like most people who chose to ignore God, just lived up to my own standard of 'good'. I considered myself better than most others, and worlds better than a fellow engineer who bragged repeatedly about raping a woman on a dark bridge. *If there was a heaven and a God, I would've been offended by being told I still wasn't good enough for Heaven.* Hell? IF that was real, I figured I'd just go 'poof' in the flames and know no more. Eternal suffering? Ridiculous. I was doing my best, well, most of the time, uhhhh, make that a lot of the time, uhhhh, I have to be honest, well, 'er, some of the time.

*I wanted to be free to decide what was right or wrong for me.* Isaiah 14:12-15) shows that's the very reason why Lucifer, God's number one angel, became Satan. *We become Satan's 'puppets' by doing the same thing!* God's mercy allows us some unknown time frame in which to repent but those who don't will eventually share their eternal future with Satan and the most evil, and cruel people ever, as well as with 'little sinners' like me and all others who just ignore or strenuously reject Christ. Let's look at a few reasons I found for obeying God instead.

**First** and foremost, God loves us and wants us to love Him. He could have created us as mindless robots but robots could not love Him in return. Therefore He created us with a free will to obey or to disobey, even to become unspeakably evil. Disobedience of God's laws is called sin and will be severely punished, but He provides loving forgiveness to all who repent in the same way a doctor would offer medication, 100% guaranteed, to cure your fatal illness.

*What, "No God," you say? Not even a Ph.D. 'rocket scientist' would say his home appeared out of nothing, evolved trees into lumber, and rocks in the ground into insulated copper wiring and plumbing, then a whirlwind came along and accidentally did some precise assembly. It required a lot of intelligent design and construction. Yet, our universe, so vast we don't really know what 96% of it is, plus the mystery of exactly what is life, are all near-infinite series of fantastically lucky accidents? Not according to a number of Ph.D. rocket scientists I quote in this book. We're without excuse. God's construction proves His existence just as the existence of your house proves designers and builders, though you may never have actually seen any of them. (Romans 1:20)*

**Second**, God speaks through His missionary, Paul, in Acts 17:31. Paraphrased, it says, ['God commands all men everywhere to repent because He has appointed a day of judgment in which He will compare us to Jesus Christ \(not to other people or to our standards\). God has given assurance all this is true by raising Christ from the dead'](#). Who of us would then be

good enough to deserve Heaven? Not me. Not anyone. All of us will die one day. Some will have advance warning, others none at all who were unexpectedly killed by a drunk driver. Scott Pelley, a well-known CBS news anchor, reported 40,000 deaths, nearly 110 per day, from drunk drivers. How many expected to suddenly stand before God that day? Is it not wise to prepare to meet God now and stop putting it off, thinking you have plenty of time?

**Third**, God has ownership rights to His creation. He has a plan for our lives and directs events, both good and not so good (from our perspective) to work that plan. (Romans 8:28) There are many individual plans but everyone is being prepared to become more Christ-like to minister to others and draw them to Christ. Our body is not our own to do with as we wish like many think. It belongs to Him and we must give account to Him for our stewardship. (1 Corinthians 6:19-20)

**Fourth**, because God loves us, His commands show us how to live together in harmony and to avoid the pitfalls and suffering of sin that can result in life-long consequences here on earth, then for an in eternity, if not repented of and forgiven.

**Fifth**, God decides your eternal destiny, even though you may ignore Him. We're all appointed to die one day (Hebrews 9:27-28). Your response to God's call determines whether you spend an eternity of happiness in Heaven with Him or sadly in the 'other place that needs air-conditioning' screaming for water like the evil rich man in Luke 16. No, you won't be instantly and painlessly cremated in hell. You'll be in an eternal supernatural body and the fire will also be supernatural. Most probably, the flames will be black instead of orange because Jesus said hell was a place of lonely utter total darkness with weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Read what happened after Pharaoh refused ten times to obey God. (Exodus 5:2 and 12-15)

### **HOW Good Must I Be to be Good Enough for Heaven?**

I always felt that I was much better than most of my friends. Isn't that good enough? Almost all religions in the world, except Christianity, teach that if you sincerely try hard enough to be good, then you deserve to go to Heaven, Nirvana, or some other 'happy place'. Whoops, a problem here! Religions and also philosophies all have different standards of what's 'good' and what's not good. Even I, as an atheist, had my own personal standards of what 'good' was.

Like most people, I didn't feel I was evil enough to deserve hell, but was I good enough to make it to Heaven?

Immediately that raised several more questions.

1. What's God's definition of a 'good' or 'bad' deed?
2. How do you quantify just how good or how bad a deed is?
3. What percentage of good deeds do you need to get to Heaven?  
51%? 60%? 75%? 99%?
4. Aren't there many different paths to God or Heaven or Nirvana or wherever, with just as many different definitions of 'good'?
5. Now, upon what authority or evidence, do you declare your 'good' standard is correct and therefore supersedes that of the creator of our entire universe?



Almost all of the world's religions, except Christianity, teach that a happy, eternal future can be yours if your good deeds outweigh the bad on some kind of divine balance scale. Nope! Acts 17:31 asserts that's not true. Our righteousness will be judged against the perfect

righteousness of Jesus Christ after we die. SCARY! Who could survive that judgement? Not me, not you, no one. (Romans 3:22) But God's loving provision will soon become clear.

All our good deeds cannot cancel even one sin. *If someone has put poison in your coffee, adding more coffee to your cup does not cancel out the poison!* Scripture teaches that no amount of good deeds can make us worthy. Only 100% of Christ's righteousness and His grace can make us worthy. We can never earn it on the installment plan, which is called 'self-righteousness'. We can only be acceptable to God by receiving Jesus' righteousness to cover our sin. (Ephesians 2:8-9) *Just as the angel Lucifer became Satan when he usurped God's right to establish what is right or wrong, when we do the same, we progressively become Satan's 'puppets'!*

Gratitude for His grace is what motivates us to keep living for Him to the best of our abilities. If we feel we deserve Heaven because of our own good deeds, then we deserve the epithet 'self-righteous'. Revelation 20:12-15 teaches that everyone judged by his own self-righteousness will be cast into hell because it only takes one unforgiven disobedience of God's laws to condemn us. That is called 'sin'. **Surprise! The first four commandments are offenses against God Himself! Just ignoring God, as I did, breaks the first and greatest of all the commandments! Creating a 'god' in your own mind to your own liking that is not the God of the Bible is an 'idol' and breaks the second commandment!** Still don't think you're a sinner? How about the ubiquitous and flippant **OMG** that's flooded our society? Doesn't anyone care that they are breaking God's commandment to not use His name in vain? *(Every time I hear it, I visualize that person as a law-breaker in court who delights in giving the judge a two-fingered 'Three-Stooges-eye-poke' as often as possible before the verdict! Duuhh!)*

Also, who of us has not dishonored our parents while in our teen years? Who hasn't 'stretched the truth' or told a 'little white lie'? Here's a real 'downer'. In God's sight there are no little white lies that hurt no one. It hurts us because lying is a sin for which we will give account before God and that will hurt. God's word in Revelation 21:8 is His short list for who will spend eternity in the lake of fire. Included are the 'unbelieving and all liars'. God does not exclude little 'harmless white lies'. There are none. Surprise! Exaggerations are also lies!

Lies can also masquerade as half-truths, exaggerations, embellishments, and any sneaky attempt to deceive, like, "Well, it wasn't ACTUALLY a lie because I didn't exactly say that in so many words." God knows your heart. He knows your intent was to mislead or deceive or perhaps just exaggerate the importance of what you're saying. Though you may have deceived your listener, God will tell you, as well as your own conscience, "IT'S A LIE!"

I hadn't murdered any one or robbed any banks. I was OK, or so I thought. Much to my surprise (and despair) I learned that Jesus expanded the definition of sin to include our thoughts since sinful thoughts are the very roots of sinful deeds! I was **very distressed to learn that we can also sin in our thoughts by lust, hatred, and coveting things that belong to others**. That means that all of us have broken every one of God's 10 Commandments, either in thought or in deed, so not one of us can ever become good enough to meet His absolute standard of holiness. (Matthew 5, 6, 7) Every one of our deeds and thoughts are written in God's books. (Revelation 20:12-15, 21:8) There's neither expiration date nor 'statute of limitations' on sin simply because it was a long time ago or perhaps we don't think we commit that sin very often any more.

Sorry, no excuses.

Generally speaking, even if one does not believe in God or in the Bible, instinctively we, as well as most primitive people, know that certain things are wrong such as murder, theft, lies, illicit lust, etc. How? God's law has been written into our conscience! (Romans 2:11-15) Pastor Charles Stanley said recently, "A lifestyle of disobedience to God is like a ship in heavy fog heading into a harbor with hidden reefs, the radar off, and no one at the wheel." We have the free will to

suppress our conscience, but in the end we're without excuse for disobeying God which is sin.

*Just leaving God out of your life is the biggest sin, because it's the fountain head of all sins!* God commands, 'No other gods!' in His first commandment. The 'god' of my life for 11 years was to become somebody important. I've met others who 'worship' the gods of sex, lust, money, power, you name it. Whatever excludes the real God is your 'god.' *Sorry, no excuses — again!*

If you're not yet convinced you're a sinner, Romans 13 says that God established government and that obeying the civil law is also obeying God. (Of course as we read in the book of Acts this is true only insofar as government laws do not conflict with God's laws.) So, have you 'fudged' on your income tax? Exceeded the speed limit? Violated right of way? 'Coasted' through stop signs? If so, you've also broken God's civil law, which is sin. No, they're not heinous sins like murder but they're sins nevertheless. STILL not convinced you're a sinner? James 4:17 shows a whole new category of sinning by **omission** as opposed to sinning by **commission**: knowing to do good but failing to do so. Certainly God doesn't expect us to wear ourselves out 24/7 going around doing good. However, He will sometimes strongly impress us to give a kind word, perhaps some encouragement, or help. It's a sin when we are able to respond but we refuse. Are you convinced now we're all sinners to some degree?

During my previous rebellious years, when I had ignored God, it was as if I had not believed in radio or TV waves though they were all around me. That was because I'd allowed my sin to switch off my inner 'spiritual radio receiver'. *Having my eyes opened to Jesus' resurrection turned my 'radio' on.* Finally grasping the fact that I was a sinner, I turned the 'volume' up high enough to begin hearing God's voice.

I had been just like the emperor in the fable, *The Emperor's New Clothes*. He'd been deceived by his tailor into believing his new clothes were elegant beyond words. They were. They were invisible! He paraded through the streets not realizing he was stark naked. You cannot hide from God, except in your fantasy world, and not there for very long either. (Hebrews 4:13)

I, like many others, was taught John 3:16 as a small child. I had no idea of its full meaning until I was seeking God sincerely.

### ♥ For God So Loved ... Me!

**For God so loved the 'world'** (replace 'world' with your name): *God loves us so much that I understood if I had been the only person on earth, Jesus would've come to save me alone. God loves us with His 'everlasting love' described in Jeremiah 31:3.*

- **that He gave His only begotten Son:** Not a single person can ever become perfect enough to deserve Heaven. (Romans 3:23, Acts 17:31) ALL of us are under God's wrath. But because God loves us, He provided grace (unmerited favor) to open Heaven's gates by sending Jesus to pay the penalty for our sins, 'the just for the unjust'. (1 Peter 3:18.) *God then raised Him from the dead on the third day to validate all His claims, including the claim that He's the only way to Heaven. (John 14:6)*
- **that 'whosoever'** (replace 'whoever' with your name) **believes in Him, (he/she) should not perish but have everlasting life.** *Just believing 'about' Jesus as history won't save you! 'Saving' Belief has three components: One: Repentance, being sorry for having disobeying God. Two: Personally asking Christ into your life to forgive your sins. (John 1:12) Three: Progressively making Him Lord of your life as He helps you overcome your disobedience to please Him. Over time, as you become more like Him, your friends will be either attracted to Jesus or perhaps repelled, but either way, they will admire your courage and won't call you a hypocrite!*

*Forgiveness and Jesus' Lordship are two sides of the same door!*

*If we truly believe Jesus saved us from the lake of fire and offers us Heaven instead, our 'attitude of gratitude' should produce a change of life as we begin obeying Him.*

*(2 Corinthians 5:14-21) This is also known as being 'born again'. (John 3:3)*

- Those who've received Christ enjoy life forever in a new eternal body in Heaven to enjoy fullness of joy and pleasures forevermore' in heaven. (Psalm 16:11)
- Those who've rejected Christ spend an eternity suffering agony in hell forever in their eternal body. Jesus actually talked with a rich man in the fiery furnace of hell who said: "I'm tormented in this flame!" and "Please, just one drop of water to quench my thirst." (Luke 16)

The man in hell even begged Jesus to send a 'ghost' to scare his brothers into repentance. Jesus refused, saying they already had God's Scriptures. (A scare would only be temporary.) This was not a 'parable' because he used the name of the beggar who had begged crumbs from the rich man's table. Jesus never used names in His parables so these are actual people. Surprisingly, Jesus spoke more about hell than about Heaven.

### **GUILTY, CONVICTED, but SET FREE!**

The Holy Spirit convinced me of my sin and guilt. I finally BEE-lieved Jesus to be the perfect sacrifice sent from God to pay for my sins. **I had finally penetrated the final 1% of the overcast of doubt separating me from God!** That 1% does not mean the final breakthrough was easy. It was the hardest because it meant surrendering my will to Jesus. That was nearly instantaneous once the door of my hardened heart was cracked open to let the Savior come in. (For an interesting way the savage Auca tribesmen finally understood the gospel, click [here](#)!) I also found answers to the following two criticisms by a fellow engineer.



**ONE: Jesus was not crucified because He was weak.** Scripture records that He could've called 10,000 legions of angels but He chose to die for you and me as the only sacrifice God said He would accept. This was prophesied in the Old Testament and fulfilled in the New. *Jesus was the only religious leader in history who returned from the dead on the third day which was the ultimate proof that all Jesus taught and claimed to be were all mightily validated: 'He was declared to be the Son of God with power by the resurrection from the dead!'* (Romans 1:4) Jesus' resurrection empowered Him to say, "I am the way, the truth and the life. No man comes to the Father except by me." (John 14:6) "Narrow minded?" Yup! Jesus Himself said the way to Heaven is indeed 'straight and narrow,' He's the only one God sent to pay for our sins. (To review the evidence for Jesus' resurrection, click [here](#).)

**TWO: Narrow minded?** *Some accuse Christians of being so narrow minded they could look through a keyhole with both eyes! ALL truth is 'narrow minded'.* Truth is backed up by evidence or a standard. What YOU and others only THINK is true is speculation, not truth. Hey, wouldn't you want the pilot of an airplane you were flying in to be 'narrow minded' about your flight safety? Wouldn't you want your banker to be 'narrow minded' about handling your money? And how about a contractor you hired to build your house? What if some of his workers believed one inch plus one inch equaled two inches but others believed it equaled three or six? Wouldn't you want them to be 'narrow minded' about that? Though Jesus is 'exclusive', Anne Graham Lotz told a TV interviewer not long ago, "Jesus is also inclusive enough to receive all who come to Him. All the 'whosoever wills' may freely come and will be welcomed!" (John 6:37)

Jesus redeemed all the 'whosoever wills' by suffering and dying as the only sinless sacrifice God said He would accept. **Jesus' blood literally bought us out of Satan's slave market of sin** to give us a heavenly inheritance instead. We also may look at God as a judge in criminal court where

we are found guilty and facing severe and long-lasting punishment. However, Jesus' intercession secured our release. We are now free but our loving gratitude compels us to voluntarily share His love with others when we remember that He saved us from the fiery furnace. (Click [here](#) for how a savage tribe came to understand Jesus as a bridge over sin to reach God.)

God's personal invitation to us is John 1:12: "But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name." No, I hadn't gotten answers to all of my questions but I would, so to speak, 'just eat the chicken and spit out the bones'. Many of my questions began with, "Why does God ..." but I finally realized HE was God, I wasn't. In Heaven one day, I'd ask God Himself! *I was sooo happy to learn we can KNOW if we're headed for Heaven one day from God's promise in 1 John 5:13 because it depends on God's faithfulness through Christ, not our absolute perfection. (Romans 6:23)* The final step of this last 1% of my search for God ended as I turned my life over to Him by receiving Jesus and His gift of eternal life in a prayer something like this.

Dear God,  
I've disobeyed You and am a sinner headed for the lake of fire (hell). You loved us so much that You sent Jesus to be our sin-sacrifice. He proved it by His resurrection from the dead on the third day. Jesus, come into my heart and life. Forgive my sins, and give me the gift of eternal life so I may be with You one day. Help me to begin following and obeying You so that I may bring honor to Your name and draw others to You. I ask in Jesus' name, Amen.

When I finished I realized that there were some sins in my life that were just 'too good to give up' which really meant they were my 'Lord and master' in some areas of my life instead of Jesus. What was I to do? I prayed again:

Dear God, these sins: ... (I spelled them out) I know are wrong but I confess I just don't seem to want to let go of them. HELP ME to BECOME WILLING to obey You. In Jesus' name, Amen.

Remember when we were children how we were good (most of the time) because we loved our parents and wanted to please them so they'd be proud of us? That's how it became to me. Jesus said, "If you love me, keep my commandments!" (John 14:15) My 'attitude of gratitude' to Jesus for saving me began to steer me towards beginning to obey Him. (2 Corinthians 5:14-21)

I hadn't needed much 'faith' to believe mountains of scientific evidence that God existed or for Christ's resurrection which validated all His claims. However, after receiving Christ, I now needed 'faith' (trust) to gratefully surrender all of my will and my future to our Creator based upon His promises in Scripture.

'Saving-faith' is not a 'blind leap off a cliff in the dark'. Faith is the evidence of things not seen. How do we get this faith? It is based on evidence, yes, but ultimately it's created by God's Holy Spirit through reading, and memorizing, God's word, the Bible. (Hebrews 10:17, 11:1) I began to memorize a little at a time. Over time it really paid off.

In her book ***Faith is Not a Feeling***, <sup>56</sup> Ney Bailey compares our spiritual journey to our ride on a train. We must not let our feelings of the moment derail our walk with Christ. Here's a good cartoon illustration by CRU (Campus Crusade). The train must be powered by the engine of the **FACT** of our commitment to Christ and His to us. **FAITH** in His promises fuels the engine. Our changeable **FEELINGS** tag along behind and mustn't

determine where the train goes! Internationally known pastor and author Rick Warren says that God wants us to sense His presence but it's faith (trust and obedience) that pleases Him, not



feelings. Scripture demands that we [walk by faith based on evidence, not upon feelings](#). (2 Corinthians 5:7)

"I don't believe in faith", you say? You exercise 'faith' every day! You don't KNOW your sandwich or that apple is poisoned but you eat it anyway. You don't KNOW you won't be shot by a crazed gunman or killed by a drunk driver when you go out shopping but you go anyway based on the evidence of your recent history. So faith in God is based on the evidence of Jesus' recorded history and is therefore reliable. You may reply, "[But I don't believe in recorded history. Who knows if any of it really happened?](#)" **My answer**, "[Since you were too young to read when you were born, you never actually saw them put your 'original' birth certificate into the county files so how can you be sure you were ever born?](#)" **Answer: You exist!** Our universe's *existence* is the proof of God's existence, His creation, His power, and His plan for mankind. <sup>77</sup> (Romans 1:20).

### **How I Learned to Resist Sinful Temptations with 'SSR'**

**Romans 13:11-14 is a great 'pocket-sized' guide. Now let's go deeper into 'SSR'.**

#### **1. SEE IT:**

**See Satan** as the ultimate source. He's trying to lead you into deeper sin. *Being tempted is like you've just stepped into quicksand. The longer you linger, the deeper you will be pulled under.*

#### **2. SMASH & DISCONNECT IT**

- a. **Rebuke** and overpower Satan in Jesus' name:  
['Lord, even the demons are subject to us in Your name.'](#) (Luke 10:19)
- b. **Disconnect** your thoughts from the source of temptation.  
Turn your thoughts and eyes elsewhere, or leave the place of temptation, or convert rising anger to prayer for that person you had hated. Do whatever it takes to disconnect from the 'quicksand' (source) of temptation!

#### **3. RE-SEIZE CONTROL**

- a. **'Bring captive every thought to the obedience of Christ.'**  
(2 Corinthians 10:5)

**How? Replacement therapy!** When Satan knocks at your door with another temptation, *send Jesus to the door by reciting Scripture!* Defeat sinful thoughts by using your spiritual 'Sword of the Spirit', the Word of God. Psalm 19:11 exhorts us to ['hide God's word in our heart \(memorize\) that we may not sin against Him.'](#) In Matthew 4, we read that Jesus resisted 40 days of continuous temptation by counter-attacking Satan with Scripture. After having memorized the Scriptures in this section, replace your sinful thoughts by reciting them, followed by any other favorites you have memorized. It goes without saying, you should always carry your spiritual sword, a pocket New Testament.

- b. **Prepare for the next battle.** *1 Corinthians 10:13 states: "No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it."*

["Flee also youthful lusts;"](#) (2 Timothy 2:22) is more good instruction. In the same book, we're also exhorted not to lust after uncertain riches. The principle here is to avoid places, literature, and acquaintances who will entice you back into sin. Duuuuh!

Humanly speaking, we're probably not always going to win every battle but with

time, victories should become more and more frequent as we glorify Christ by defeating Satan's attacks. God sometimes helps us by sending chastisement lest we get careless and think that forgiveness is a license to sin with impunity. Don't try to outsmart God. You'll regret it. (Hebrews 12:8) If you've sincerely received Christ as your Lord and Savior, He won't give up on you. (Philippians 1:6)

Be Encouraged: Memorize this great little chorus, "**He's Still Workin' on me!**" <sup>II</sup> (More in [How to Mature in Christ.](#))

Over time, fellowship with other Christians, more time in the Bible, and controlling my bad thoughts by replacing them with memorized Scripture gave me more and more victories. Especially important was my attending not only church worship services but small groups like Adult Life Groups (Sunday School). There my new Christian friends provided a great supportive network as an alternative to my godless friends meeting in bars where liquor and dirty jokes were the common denominator instead of Christ.

### **A New Day Had Dawned in My Life with a Great Future Ahead!**

Now that I had received God's gift of eternal life, did that mean I could just keep leading the same old immoral and disobedient life and still go to Heaven? My life changed. The difference between just 'believing about' Jesus (admitting it may be true but not trying to obey Him) and true 'saving faith' is that the latter results in a life-style change.

*Repentance is similar to the difference between just believing airplanes exist and getting INTO one — then trusting Jesus as your pilot!* Jesus modified my sinful 'flight plan' by helping me to reverse course to follow Him.



After reading about 'the fruits of the flesh' as opposed to the 'fruits of the Spirit' in Galatians 5:19-25, I began devouring Colossians 3, **'seeking those things that are above'**. I began taking my first few baby steps of obedience that same night. I no longer needed the booze crutch to 'unwind' or to cope with the emptiness of life. The liberal profanity in my speech was replaced with kindness, encouragement, and consideration for others.

*My whole 'life-style' changed. I wanted to live my life in such a way as to express my gratitude for what Jesus had done for me, the '2 Corinthians 5:14-15' way: "For the love of Christ compels us, because we judge thus: that if One died for all, then all died; and He died for all, that those who live should live no longer for themselves, but for Him who died for them and rose again."*

This helped me to more fully understand that our good deeds should be the result of our faith, not arrogantly trying to gain Heaven or even part of it based upon our own merits. (James 2:17-18) Before Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead after four days, a witness said, "**By now he stinketh.**" When Jesus raises us to new spiritual life we must immediately begin to cast off the old sinful life, like Lazarus' decaying smelly grave clothes. Jesus will help us to do just that. (2 Corinthians 5:17)

I struggled with temptations. I wondered if I could hold out. Then I read Philippians 1:6:

**"... being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ".** Surprise! I didn't have to 'hold out'. I only had to 'hold on' to Christ and not let go. <sup>II</sup> When I fell, He seemed to pick me up and say, "**Get up, try again. You'll eventually get the victory if you don't give up.**" I realized I had to stay continually 'connected' to Jesus every day. Without the electrical power from the potatoes, this complex digital clock is unable to fulfill its intended purpose. It's just a useless piece of junk. That's what I had been without Christ, just a useless piece of junk.





Jesus said in John 15, "Without Me you can do nothing." Captured by the portrayal of the Christian life as a soldier for Christ in Ephesians 6, I memorized it and let its precepts guide my daily life. I'm not yet perfect. From time to time, I still have to ask God, with embarrassed down-cast eyes, to 'help me become willing' to do His will.

Receiving Christ is like marriage as God intended: commitment for a lifetime. As in earthly marriages, there are a lot of unknowns in the future. I don't fear the future or even death. God holds my future. This message on a church bulletin board says it all.

***What a caterpillar calls the 'end of the world' is to God a future butterfly!***

\*\*\*\*\*

## **5. THE MYSTERY of the AGES – DISCOVERED!**

***I had found the MYSTERY of the AGES, the SECRET of LIFE I had sought for so long in Colossians 1:26-27! Here is revealed the mystery hidden from ages and from generations which is: 'Christ in you, the hope of glory!' This is triply illuminated in Ephesians 1:18 as the hope of our calling, the riches of our inheritance in Christ, and the mighty power God demonstrated in Christ when He raised Him from the dead. Let's elaborate on these.***

- 1. The 'hope of our calling' is further illuminated by Ephesians 2:1-10 which says to me that God created us to be loved by Him for all eternity. (Note: elsewhere we're also exhorted to show our love to Him by obeying Him, "If you love me, keep my commandments!")***
- 2. The 'riches of our inheritance' is a joyous look forward to an eternity with God in Heaven. (Psalm 16:11: fullness of joy and pleasures forevermore.) To me it also means the riches of His guidance in this life helping to steer us around pitfalls of sin which, though attractive, eventually brings suffering. (I'm sure that most of the two million men in prison could attest to this and wish they could go back into their past and obey God.)***
- 3. The 'mighty power demonstrated in Christ by His resurrection' was the powerful affirmation not only of His claims and teachings as I've shared above, but also of the many prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament which were fulfilled in the New Testament.***

Years after my conversion, the Rev. Lee Shelley, our mission founder, would preach a very powerful sermon in my dreams a number of times on the very same three points above! They still remain vivid in my mind to this day. After receiving Christ everything went through my 'Jesus filter'. I went to work overcoming my sins. *The most difficult part of following Christ is keeping a watch over our thought life* but it can be done as I've shared in the previous chapter by reciting memorized Scripture when tempted at this link: [\*\*How to Mature in Christ.\*\*](#)

Like a newborn babe, I had a voracious appetite for God's word. (1 Peter 2:2) I did not become perfect overnight nor have I become even close to perfection after many years. God has forgiven me many times for my failures. When your own two-year old child is rebellious and disobedient, you do not give up on him and toss him out. You love and understand him, you forgive him, but you also help him to mature. In the same way, God has promised to continue His work in us to remold us into 'new creatures in Christ' for His glory and to draw others to Him through our new lives. (Philippians 1:6, 1 Corinthians 5:17) If you fail, ask God's forgiveness. God will tell you, "OK, get up, son/daughter, and try again. You've been disobedient but you still belong to me."

### **I Found Real Fulfillment in God's Love**

The ***Guinness Book of Records*** continues to expand with more of the most ridiculous feats. Some people will do anything to gain a sense of fulfillment and recognition demonstrating that

they have value and that they are worthy to be admired and remembered as someone special. Currently, a billionaire is even subsidizing the creation of a 10,000-year clock but he won't be around to see if it even works. (*I was much amused when someone asked the engineer how it works. His reply? "It ticks very slowly!"*) Others, like myself, spend years of preparation and hard work to accomplish something significant, thinking it will give their life meaning. But also, like me, they learn it was all in vain in spite of major achievements. Why? God was ignored.



Before receiving Christ, I searched for true meaning in life and the feeling I was truly valued by others through my technical achievements. This eventually left me unfulfilled and empty. Then I recalled that the raggedy teddy bear from my early childhood had very little monetary value.



Its great value was that I had loved that little bear. I finally grasped the idea that our only true and lasting value is conferred upon us by the enormous love God has for us! He demonstrated that love by sending Jesus Christ to sacrifice Himself for us! (John 3:16) Here's a great book on our true self worth which is not based upon accomplishments or the opinions of others. [57](#) (*Tom still loves teddy bears, as you can see.*)

The same night I received Christ, my gratitude to Christ for saving me *overflowed* from 2 Corinthians 5:14-21: '[For the love of Christ constrains us ... to become ministers of reconciliation!](#)' I felt 'love-compelled' to share the gospel in a long letter to my atheist dad. (*That night began my life-long ministry of reconciliation which blossomed when the Lord called me into missionary service around three years later. See Chapter 6. For more on witnessing, click [here](#).*)

Though a brilliant award-winning surgeon, my dad had rejected Christ at age 10 when a deacon ran away with the church's money. Dad's eye was on a hypocrite, not Jesus. As a result, he not only made shipwreck of our family, beginning when I was three, but wrecked four more families after ours. I offered him Christ's forgiveness. He refused. On a visit, perhaps 30 years later, I tried again but his dementia had progressed to the point where my efforts were useless. It's not wise to keep putting off preparing for your eternal future. Yes, God gives us some time to repent and even multiple opportunities, but we never know which one will be our last.

Not long after I gave my life to Christ, I got an opportunity to witness at the Point Mugu Naval Air Station where I was assigned to VX-4, an F4 experimental squadron. I challenged two fellow engineers to a daily lunchtime debate on the existence of God. One was a hardened atheist, the other skeptical but he said, "[It's safer to 'believe' just in case it's true,](#)" which is absolutely not true life-changing belief. As I recall, one of them began the usual 'no God' debate with, "[I don't believe in anything I can't see, touch, hear, taste, or smell.](#)"

My reply went something like this: "[Did you ever see your pancreas? Feel it? Touch it? Hear it? Taste it? Smell it?](#)" Naturally he said no. "[Then by your own confession you have no pancreas. Therefore you are a zombie, the walking dead, because no one can live without a pancreas!](#)" He then came back with, "[Well I did see it on an X-ray once.](#)" My response was, "[That was only an IMAGE of your pancreas but it is solid evidence your pancreas exists. In the same way, the universe around us is God's handiwork demonstrating He created everything and we are without excuse to not believe in God. \(Romans 1:20\). Also, the Bible's eyewitness accounts are its 'image' of Jesus' resurrection which validates all He taught about our future eternity either in Heaven or in hell.](#)" Presenting tangible evidence of God, plus having demonstrated how my life and language had changed, they gave up after only three sessions.

Why couldn't they 'see' God in the face of overwhelming evidence? For the same reason most skeptics cannot: it's very similar to why a burglar would 'want to find' a policeman! Jesus

asserted the most basic requirement in John 7:17: how to know if Jesus' teaching about Heaven, hell, and God was really true. You must be willing to begin obeying God, or in my case, asking for help to become willing to do so.

### **The Touch of the Master's Hand is Life-Transforming**

I recently came upon a leaflet called, *The Touch of the Master's Hand*. It carries a wonderful story by Myra Brooks about the auction of an old, scarred, battered violin which no one wanted. A master violinist came forward to play such beautiful music on it that the auction price suddenly jumped to a thousand dollars. What changed its worth? The touch of the master's hand! My life before Christ was like that old sin-battered violin, not worth living in spite of material success. The 'touch of the Master' gave me value and purpose. This story has been set to music and is one of my favorites, one I heard just last evening: *He Gave Me Something Worth Living For!*

When skeptics refuse to look at the evidence for God when it is shown to them, it's obvious they are attempting to hide from Him. Their God-given conscience tells them they are living in disobedience to God, with lust and lies probably being the most common sins in our immoral society. However, because God loves us, He has a unique way of trying to bring even the most hardened unbelievers to know Him. Even then, He gives them a free choice to respond or not.

### **Don't Have All the Answers? Just Pull your Ripcord!**

Even though I still have some unanswered questions, I've found peace and life's true purpose in Christ at last: to serve God and be loved by Him for all of eternity. (Ephesians 2:5-7) Jesus was crucified between two thieves. One just complained and berated Jesus for not saving them. The other was repentant and was willing to trust Jesus just a bit longer. That very day he got all his questions answered at God's throne.



When a parachutist jumps from a plane, wouldn't it be foolish of him to refuse to pull his ripcord because he must first compute wind direction, how fast he's falling, how long he's going to fall, how his hair looks, etc.? No, first he pulls the ripcord, then literally trusts his life to his parachute. We're all in 'free fall' towards death. **So, in spite of still having some unanswered questions about God, I pulled my ripcord by trusting Him 'just a little bit longer' until I finally meet Him face-to-face. Then HE will answer every one of my questions.** (*I kind of don't think that my former questions I had on earth will be important then. I will be overpowered by His majesty.*) Until then, my prayer at the beginning of each day is an adaptation of this recent prayer thought shared by Dr. Evelyn Davis.

*Lord, may I, and the work that I will do for You today,  
be shimmering reflections of Your handiwork, and praise You like the songbirds do! <sup>w</sup>*

\*\*\*\*\*

## **6. CALLED to MISSIONS! WHO, US?**

Are you wondering who that lovely mystery lady was you previously read about in Chapter 2, the one who nearly ran over me in that Oxnard church parking lot 57+ years ago? God knew my deepest need at that time so He sent me Irene, right, who would become my future wife, my delight, and my missionary companion! Two years before that, Irene had met Christ in a meaningful way at a *Youth For Christ* meeting and had been baptized at the Oxnard church. God loves us so much that He sometimes shows us that love in most spectacular ways. I feel God giving me Irene was one way God showed that to me — personally. Meeting my future wife and finding



Christ at that Oxnard church were not the only 'coincidences'. The previous year, I had been sent to the Point Mugu Naval Air Station near Oxnard to test our missile firing proficiency. Afterwards, the squadron was deployed to the Far East aboard the USS Ranger.

Then I was transferred back to the East coast to retrain on the F4 Phantom II, the fastest fighter in the world at that time. Then I was sent back to Point Mugu. By then I had finished my year-long search for the meaning of life in philosophy and religion. I'd found only opinions and by then life was just not worth living so I was on the verge of suicide to just end it all. Then God led me to visit the church where I met my wife, who nearly ran over me, and later found Christ through a pastor who showed me how to separate 'touchy feely' from hard evidence about God.



**SURPRISE!** At that same church I met Ben Bachman, a Lieutenant Commander, who had been in the control tower during our squadron's missile shoot the previous year! *(Ben had also been a pioneer in early Navy airborne radar at the Radiation Lab at MIT, the prestigious Massachusetts Institute of Technology.)* Not only that, but Ben was also a deacon in that church and some months later his wife Marjorie would play the organ for our wedding! After our missionary appointment three or so years later, they were among our faithful prayer partners for over 50 years until the Lord called them home. Ben passed away recently at age 96.

### **Crisis Decision**

Flashback! After finding Christ I faced a major life-changing decision. I was the only engineer available to support the 24/7 flying schedule of our squadron. I worked a rotating shift to cover parts of all three shifts 24/7. I literally had no life whatever outside Navy duty. I could not attend church with any regularity to grow in the Lord. I never knew when a radar problem would yank me out of bed into the lab or onto a dark, cold, noisy flight line. Crisis! I finally had to decide whether to stay with the prestige and big bucks of field engineering or return to being a technician. God led me to Matthew 6:33: **"But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you."** I left my great job and was then out of work for four months. Our bank account dwindled to around \$25 and the rent was due.

No one wanted an engineer without a degree, much less one who stepped back to being a technician. During that time my wife and I spent a lot of time helping prepare our church for revival meetings. Later we were trained as counselors for the huge 1963 Billy Graham Crusade in Los Angeles. I did get a job at Westinghouse, near Oxnard, helping pioneer computer chips but because of the distance, we could never have actually counseled at the Graham crusade.

**The Lord fixed that by getting me laid off, after only a few months. Years later we would learn this had been another amazing example of how God makes things work together to help fulfill His plans. (Romans 8:28)**

Unable to find work near Oxnard, I found a job on my second trip to Los Angeles at Heathkit. As a result both Irene and I were able to get our start actually sharing about Christ personally at that Billy Graham Crusade. That crusade in the Los Angeles Coliseum drew over 102,000 people, one of the largest crowds up to that time. Hundreds of overflow attendees had to be seated on the field and hundreds more stood outside listening over loudspeakers.

Irene was pregnant with our son Tom, Jr. at that time. He first showed life by kicking when Billy Graham began to preach! It was also in Los Angeles that we first learned of our future interdenominational faith mission organization, *Christians in Action Missions, International*, (<https://www.cinami.org>) over radio KGER. We responded to their invitation to learn to share Christ door-to-door on Tuesday nights by going out with missionary students.

In the LA area we now had access to great Christian radio. Over lunch I got great Bible teaching

from Dr. J. Vernon McGee's *Through the Bible* (<https://www.ttb.org>). On my long commute home, I got more good solid teaching on *Back to the Bible*. I highly recommend both of these broadcasts which are still on the air after more than 57 years!. You can also hear these programs in many languages worldwide! <https://www.backtothebible.org>.

### The Call

While all born-again Christians should be willing to obey God's call to missions, only a few are called into full time service. God needs our witness for Him at work (use wisdom) and among our friends. *Here's how can you know if you have a full time call: Inner voice from God, Scripture, and Circumstances God uses to guide you.* Our scripture, Irene's life verse, was Proverbs 3:5, 6: **'Trust in the Lord with all your heart. In all your ways, acknowledge Him and He will direct your paths.'** For us, it was a journey of over three years from the call to entering training but for many, it's much, much shorter so don't take our example as the rule.

There is no 'standard' call to missionary service. A fellow missionary, still on the field after over 58 years, simply obeyed Christ's command to 'go into all the world' unless God stopped him. My call was different. During a church service, I was 'underwhelmed' by the missionary speaker whose message was close to boring but God's Spirit was at work. God's definite call to missions came while singing *Jesus Shall Reign* during the altar call. Choked up by the overwhelming power of God's Spirit, a desire to reach the lost, and with tears streaming, I was unable to sing at all. (I shared earlier this was the hymn written almost 100 years prior to my call to celebrate the unity of around 5,000 former cannibals who had come to Christ from Samoa, Fiji, and Tonga. <sup>67</sup>)

My call took place at Dr. J. Vernon McGee's historic Church of the Open Door where at that time, Biola University was having its humble beginnings upstairs! Little did we know that our, as yet unborn, daughter would graduate from Biola many years later after their move to a large campus at La Mirada (California). Dr. McGee's noon broadcasts and G. Christian Wise's mission broadcasts on *Back to the Bible* continued to strengthen my mission call for several years during my long evening commutes. Both Irene and I had much to learn before entering missionary training so the Lord delayed us until we had learned some important lessons.

My technician job at Heathkit was going well, or so I thought. I serviced a wide variety of electronic equipment, everything from transmitters and stereos to electronic marine gas fume detectors, sonars (fish finders), and a host of other types of equipment. Sometime previously, I had told the Lord, **"I'm just not a 'people person' so if you want me, I'll be a missionary aircraft radio technician and that's all!"** **The Lord responded with another 'Romans 8:28': He let me lose my job! Again!** I had done my job well and without a single rework (unlike my colleague who cheated) but I was unable to service such a huge variety of different types of equipment fast enough to make a profit for the company, so they let me go, which was only fair. I got another technician job in UHF and microwave testing for electronic airborne recon, more in line with my previous radar experience. While there, John, a fellow technician, would stand out in my memories.

John took every opportunity to ridicule Christians, even to blaspheme God, until one day he suddenly stopped. Shortly before he left the company, he said to me, **"Tom, you're the very first real Christian I've ever met. Christians, to me, were all hypocrites because IF they REALLY believed Heaven and hell were real, why didn't any of them tell me?"** Just as Corporal Stevens had been a genuine Christian example to me while in the Marines, my repeated attempts to share Christ's salvation with John had been his example. Like Stevens, the Lord had also used me to be a personal 'living letter' from Jesus to John! (1 Corinthians 3:2) I became more bold to share Christ, even sometimes going out to witness in the evenings after work. I could see that God was answering my prayer that if He truly wanted me as a missionary, He would

have to remake me to become a 'people person' as I had asked.

A huge obstacle to entering missionary training was a long-standing mountain of debt that would take us at least two years to pay off. **Miracle!** When God thought we were prepared for missionary training, Electronic Specialty Company, where I worked as an electronics technician, got a hot government contract for the Shrike missile to defeat Sam sites in Viet Nam which were shooting down our aircraft by the scores each month. *This overtime gave us enough extra in one summer to pay off all debts and cover our first semester (only) of missionary training!*

### **Whoops! Another Major Problem**

When I 'announced' (bad move!) we were going to be missionaries, Irene balked. In fact her words were, "I don't want my child growing up ignorant under a tree in New Guinea so we're going to go live with your mother back in Oklahoma. You can go be a missionary all by yourself!"

After she left, I immediately applied for missionary training without her. I was wisely refused. Two weeks later the Lord turned Irene around. She and our son came back home. We both learned a lot through this trial. She began to go out witnessing with me and the tide began to turn. Before long we were on the same page heading for missionary service. That was undoubtedly the hardest trial of my entire life, but the Lord taught both of us some new things which helped prepare us for missionary service.

Surprisingly, I've talked to a number of people who over the years continued to reject Christ because they thought God might eventually drag them, kicking and screaming, off to some far-off jungle mission field. They needn't have worried. A call from God to missions is so exciting that one could not be happy doing anything else. You'd pay any price or face any danger to take Christ to the lost full time. Actually, if you truly know Christ, you're already a home missionary because we're all supposed to shine for Jesus wherever we are. Only a few are called to serve full time or in far-off lands. Otherwise there would be insufficient witness for Him in our own country. My missionary colleague Roger Smalling, <sup>s</sup> said about Europe, "No place is so dark as where the light has been and then gone out."

So at the age of 30 with a toddler son and a baby girl due in five months we courageously left all behind, except for two suitcases each, to enter missionary training. We had funds for only one semester, but we trusted that the God who had called us would also sustain us.

Indeed He did, which encouraged us and confirmed our call!

### **Who'd Want to Support Us?**

Since our mission is a faith mission like Wycliffe, New Tribes, etc. (no salary), we now had to arrange our own itinerary and raise support. We asked, "Who'd want to support us?" In retrospect, we feel the Lord must've silently replied, "I'm not sending you out with a beggar's bowl! I already have plans for your future ministry that must be fulfilled in at least 11 countries through you or the missionaries you will help train. Therefore, I have already called your ministry support partners, though they won't know it until they hear your mission presentation. **Go!** Have faith that I will lead you to them, perhaps in ways you never even dreamed of!"

Years later, we would learn that God had plans for more than just us helping reach the lost in Italy, Yugoslavia, Britain, and the USA. God's future plans would also include helping train other missionaries and laymen who would then reach more of the lost in the U.K., Ukraine, India, Nagaland (bordering Myanmar), China, the Philippines, Taiwan, Guatemala, and Mexico. Read on and you'll see how, despite a rocky start, our support did come in and truly in ways we'd never have dreamed, which strengthened our faith. This strongly confirmed our call, and would literally prevent us from quitting soon after arriving on our mission field.

### **Failure: God's Opportunity!**

For several months there was no shortage of speaking opportunities and offerings were great. However, we only had \$10/month pledged, from former fellow students Jack and Mary Ketcham, who had believed in us from the beginning. (Though Mary is now enjoying her new life with Jesus, Jack is still our ministry partner after 52+ years.) *Our mission only allowed us six months to find our supporting partners.* After doing all we thought humanly possible, our family ended up nearly broke and living off my mom in Oklahoma, 1,500 miles away from headquarters. The deadline was only a few months away. If we didn't raise the rest of our support quickly, our family would be pulled back to headquarters for a whole year of retraining.

I was desperate. I sought the Lord fervently for direction during two days of prayer and fasting. He gave me no specific plans but neither did He say to quit at the end of the first day. I was forced to recognize I hadn't really been totally dependent upon the Lord until all our efforts had failed. On the second day of prayer and fasting, a phone call came from headquarters. I was asked to drive Roger Smalling, a newly commissioned missionary, to New York to board the Queen Mary. <sup>S</sup> En-route, we would teach churches to share Christ one-on-one. Then I would try for speaking engagements along the way back. Roger boarded ship but no one wanted me to return and speak about our mission plans for Italy. I was alone in New York City, very low on funds, and our mission was virtually unknown on the East Coast. Another failure? What to do? I slept in my car in a hotel parking lot wondering what to do next.

### **God's Miracle**

We had only one contact on the whole East Coast. It was a Christian pen pal Irene had picked from a secular magazine THREE YEARS before entering training and whom we'd never met, in the tiny town of Shillington, PA. She introduced me to her pastor. The result? [A chain of 47 services in 21 churches and all the rest of our required support came in during only three months! This was something only the Lord could've done, which confirmed our mission call!](#)

I had left my family at our mission's California headquarters and had been on the road nearly four months. The Lord graciously arranged that I would return from the East Coast and be reunited with my family during the mission staff Christmas party! My children, toddlers, hadn't seen me for four months and were distant and hesitant. Debbie even cried when I came near. However, the kids warmed up over time and we had a great family time that January on our cross-country trip to board the Cristoforo Colombo for Italy. Well, one exception. Our car was knocked down into a steep ditch on an icy Arizona highway while Irene was changing Debbie's diaper. The car was a write-off but no one was hurt. We took a bus the rest of the way.

We spent most of New Year's Eve in a Pennsylvania bus station fending off drunks while waiting for a pastor to pick us up at 2 am after their New Years service. Our luggage had been lost so I preached the next morning in my grubby sweater with a missing front tooth I'd lost to a grapefruit the night before. With thanks in our heart we were soon on our way to board ship for our mission field.



### **Overseas but Discouraged, Ready to Quit**

Here we are in January, 1966, arriving on our first mission field in Italy on the Cristoforo Colombo. After only a few months in Italy, and still struggling with the language, I became discouraged and seriously considered giving up. I really wondered if God had indeed sent us or not. Maybe we'd jumped the gun? Outrun God's direction?

But then I began remembering amazing things the Lord had done for us when we were raising our support. Here's only one. I'd arranged for a full Sunday of services by telephone, including taking people out witnessing.

However, when I arrived in the, then tiny, village of Downingtown, PA, I couldn't find the church. The only person in sight was dressed in black in front of the pool hall. I asked him where the church was. His answer was, "Over the pool hall on the corner." It was Pastor Elliott! (At right in the photo.)

Pastor Elliott invited me to teach a week's witnessing seminar. *Afterwards, they started weekly outreach and before long they had led two to Christ on their own!* I'm demonstrating door-to-door witnessing to Pastor Elliott in this 1973 photo. **The Lord had promised that if we made missions a priority, God would really bless us!** I was very disappointed when only four people showed up for the Sunday morning service and six at the evening service. However, they made the largest monthly pledge of our whole support-raising period: **the blessing God had promised!**



God also blessed the church because they too made missions a priority by supporting other missionaries besides us. When we returned on furlough years later, they had grown to fill a large church on two acres of donated land! The growth of this church and their faithful financial support for us over the next two decades was only one of a series of miracles which God used to get us to our mission field. During the next 14 years overseas, we were often encouraged by recalling the great things God had done to get there!

### **Italy, Our First Mission Field: Mussolini's Prisoner, 'Nero', and Others.**



In 1967, we began our 53+ years of missionary service in Rome and Ostia. This picture was taken on a Mediterranean beach at Quirino's baptism at extreme right. **Domenico**, 65, (second from left) had spent 25 years in Mussolini's prison. He requested a Bible course offered by one of our gospel leaflets. When we delivered his course to begin weekly Bible studies, his first words were: **"They tell me I'm going to burn for years in purgatory, even though I go to Mass and try to be good. But, what does the Bible say?"** After helping him to know Christ, he was severely persecuted by his

brother but held fast to Jesus and was baptized into Pastor Tramentozzi's church. Several years later, Domenico led his dying sister Giuseppina, 88, to Christ in an ambulance while careening down a steep mountain road. She passed away the next day but with Jesus in her heart.

**Sergio**, like Domenico, (Fourth from left in the picture) also found Christ through our leaflet ministry by requesting the Bible course offered by one of the leaflets. Domenico was a major help in bringing this former shaggy-haired, 18-year-old delinquent called 'Nero' to Christ. Sergio's first words before I helped him find Christ were, **"Ho fatto macello della mia vita e voglio trovare Iddio!"** ("I've made a mess of my life and I want to find God!") He was also later baptized into Rev. Tramentizzi's church. (Nero means black and described Sergio's former mood.) I was delighted to have him come with me to go out witnessing on several occasions. Later, he led his friend Quirino to the Lord quite on his own. Sergio was baptized in the Tiber river north of Rome not far from where Constantine and his army, in the fourth century, began his conquest of Rome and stopped centuries of persecuting of Christians. According to tradition, he became a Christian after seeing a flaming cross in the sky at Milvain bridge with the message, **"In hoc signo vinces!"** (In this sign, conquer!)

**Quirino** had previously won awards presented at St. Peter's Basilica for his devotion to the virgin Mary but was far, far from God when Sergio introduced him to the Savior. I recall on one



visit, Quirino's aunt, a nun, was present but could not refute the Scriptures I presented to Quirino.

**Personal evangelism** was our primary ministry with small-group Bible studies but we also endeavored to get our converts integrated into local evangelical churches like Rev. Tramentozzi's *Chiesa Cristiana Evangelica*. We started conversations on the street and at the doors using around 432,000 **World Literature Crusade** leaflets (*La Crociata del' Evangelo*). *Our most effective leaflet was Sei Pronto: Are you ready?* Noah's ark in a rainstorm is on the cover. We received the names and addresses of those interested enough to request a brief 12-lesson Bible Course from the WLC office; then we worked with them personally. The brief Bible course was, essentially, how to be saved, how to know it, and follow Christ. We visited those writing for it several weeks and were able to bring many to the Lord that way.



**Domenico, Sergio, and Quirino** later appeared in a coast-to-coast + Canada WLC 'Evangelism Special'. Domenico was filmed helping the WLC office. Sergio and Quirino were filmed giving WLC leaflets on Rome's Spanish Steps, where Sergio used to do drugs.

**Angelo (?)**, a brave barber, also came to Christ through our WLC leaflets at his kitchen table while recovering from the flu, during which his wife ridiculed him and made continual snide remarks! We could never find him at home after that but a year later learned he'd joined a local evangelical church and had led his assistant to Christ! (Isaiah 55:11!)

**P.S.** The meaningful name of my very first convert in Italy: Enrico Calvario = Henry Calvary!

### **Highlight of our Rome Ministry: Preaching the Gospel in a Libyan Synagogue!**

During our time in Italy during the '70s, we experienced our third major 'Romans 8:28', Irene's excruciating ear ache! For several years we had been going door-to-door every Monday with two Jewish Christian missionaries from Britain. However, Irene's ear ache caused me to postpone our Jewish outreach and visit the Libyan synagogue instead the next night. (They spoke Italian, courtesy of Mussolini, from World War II.) So Richard, a Hebrew Christian missionary, and I headed for the synagogue with a little 'fear and trembling'. Imagine my surprise, when the Rabbi entered the synagogue, grabbed my arm, and pulled me to my feet! **Surprise #1!** He knew we were Christian missionaries because we'd previously visited him while witnessing door-to-door, when Abe Schneider, Jewish evangelist and my teacher in Jewish evangelism, visited Rome only a few weeks before. **Surprise #2!** He recognized Richard as a Messianic Christian and me as a gentile. **Surprise #3!** He pulled me to my feet but instead of dragging me out to be stoned, beaten, or expelled, the Rabbi said, "**Che vuole parlarci questa sera?**" (What do you wish to speak to us about this evening?)

Unlike the typical Italian Jews, the Libyan refugees, who'd suffered terribly under Ghadaffi, were very, very knowledgeable of their Scripture and a few even said some Jewish 'Amens' as I shared the glorious future of Israel. However, when I got to Isaiah 53, and who it referred to, one angry man jumped up and said, "**We don't mention that name here!**" Suddenly the Rabbi and four elders began moving towards the front, obviously to 'get me'. However they moved so slowly, they gave me enough time to fully finish a clear gospel message and invitation to receive Christ! Richard and I were 'escorted rapidly' outside but we were full of joy for this opportunity, the result of Irene's 'Romans 8:28' ear ache! (*Richard Morally, my partner in this adventure, is now with the Lord but he's in the picture with Richard Wurmbrand in Chapter 3. Albert and Ruth Nessim, our other partners in Jewish ministry, later immigrated to Israel. Ruth has written several delightful books and booklet*)

## Britain: Helping Train Missionaries in Class and Field

After seven years in Italy, we devoted seven more years helping train missionaries at our European HQ in Britain. After over 40 years, one graduate continues to help build a large church in Macau, China. The son of another of our graduates is carrying on the work founded by his parents in India. Another outstanding Indian graduate recently retired after 30 years of very fruitful service in another part of India. He not only did street preaching and witnessed everywhere but also founded an orphanage and a home for the elderly. Opportunities to teach summer witnessing seminars helped train students from England, Scotland, Spain, and the West Indies. One outstanding student was Tsciuba Ao, the principal of a boys' school in Nagaland, northeast of Burma, or Myanmar, as it is known today. This is the Lord's fruit so thank you so much our faithful prayer partners who helped make all this possible!

During our seven years in England, a student from a sensitive Asian country was outstanding among the missionaries I was delighted to help train. She returned home where she married a fellow missionary and has helped build a growing church over the last 43+ years!



Other students include Danny and Babs who founded a school in difficult Northern India, a zealous Hindu stronghold. After Danny's passing, his son is still bravely carrying on the work over 40 years later.



Paul, center, came for training from India. Here he leads a Sikh, Agit Singh, to Christ when I took him out for field evangelism during his missionary training. This was his 'spiritual fruit', a significant requirement for graduation and missionary appointment!

For over 40 years Paul has ministered in India as a first class street preacher and church planter. He and his wife also founded a boys' school and a retirement home.

Among other converts met door-to-door while taking out my students door to door, was Tony, a precision pattern maker of molds for manufacturing. After baptism, he served as a deacon in our church and went witnessing with me, and others, on our Tuesday Action Nights. My wife Irene, served in the mission office, took students witnessing, and did major follow-up for years with Josie who lived a few houses down from our conference meeting hall.

Josie had come to Christ during an annual missions conference when a storm blew down our conference banner into her yard. She kindly stitched it back up and returned it to us. Later, when Dale, one of our missionaries, was witnessing to her husband at the door, Josie, unseen, prayed the sinner's prayer silently! Irene then discipled Josie for years, who later became our church youth leader and church secretary. She graduated from our REACHOUT evangelism seminar, moved to Spain and continues to witness there, including to Muslim taxi drivers, plumbers, etc.. She and Irene are still in frequent contact after over 40 years.

Another outstanding REACHOUT evangelism seminar grad was Tschuba Ao, principal of a boys' school who took his evangelism training and the light of the gospel back to the spiritually dark area of Nagaland in northeast Myanmar, formerly Burma!

## Returning Stateside to our Mission Headquarters

I was blessed to continue to help train missionaries full-time the first year back, both in the classroom and in field witnessing. From this class in the '80s, graduate missionaries were commissioned to serve in Ukraine, the Philippines, Guatemala, and at our International HQ.



Marrying classmates Bill and Barbara was an unexpected pleasure. (Bill: extreme left, front row. Barbara: extreme left, second row.)

They went on to found a church in Ukraine, then pastored a church in California. A few others in the photo returned to their home church to use their newfound witnessing skills there.



For two years, just for fun after hours, I taught myself how to program our room-sized IBM System 34 mid-range computer. It used the RPG-II programming language and was before PCs became widely used. An emergency staffing problem suddenly arose and I was asked to step in as the sole programmer for nearly 18 years. During that time, I was delighted to continue helping train missionaries by taking them out witnessing everywhere on 'Action Night'.

## New Exciting Call to Bible Translation Technology!

Then God had something new and really exciting in store for us! Bible translator Bob Weber, serving in the Pacific on remote Easter Island, visited our church in the late '80s, I was absolutely fascinated to learn of the CADA software being developed that helped cut Bible translation time enormously for related dialects. In fact, I was so fascinated that it was the Lord's way of calling us to a new exciting ministry using my computer skills and Irene's typing skills to help speed Bible translation at the JAARS Center in North Carolina <https://www.jaars.org>.

*JAARS, originally stood for **J**ungle **A**viation **A**nd **R**adio **S**ervice, and was founded in 1948 by Wycliffe Bible Translators' founder Cam Townsend. Its primary objective was to provide aircraft services for Bible translators in remote jungles. JAARS has expanded during the ensuing years to develop specialized computer software tools that have enormously sped up Bible translation and also increased accuracy. JAARS also provides communications to help coordinate translation, online software help for translators anywhere in the world, media specialists, safe maritime services for island ministries, satellite phones, solar power sources, and a host of other services to support and speed Bible translation worldwide.*

Alas, I could not be spared from our mission staff for a ministry at JAARS. Our mission was unable to find another RPG-II computer programmer to replace me. I dreamed of doing Bible translation technology but it looked out of the question. However I found linguistics so interesting I was content just to study it on my own. Also I attended night school to learn about personal computers and taught myself 'C', the computer language JAARS was using to develop Bible translation software at that time.

That is, until suddenly, who dropped in with only 20 minutes notice, while vacationing from the opposite coast, Lamar, leader of our College-Career class **from the same Oxnard church where I nearly got run over 30 years before!** Seeing my enthusiasm, he said, "You really like this don't you? Why don't you go for it?" From that moment my call became clear. At age 51, I took courage, and began to actively pray that the Lord would open the way to JAARS which at the moment seemed impossible.

Four years later, with no replacement in sight, I gave up — until I was encouraged at a Wycliffe Associates Bible translation banquet. I gave up again after another four years. Once more I was encouraged at a Wycliffe Bible translation banquet. Unfortunately, our support had dwindled to around 25%. (*We're unsalaried faith missionaries like Wycliffe, New Tribes, and some other missions.*) Irene had to go out to work for several years. The Lord was even in this, our fourth 'Romans 8:28'! Something seemingly bad turned out to be for our long-term good. She got good training and experience typing school yearbooks that required the skillful use of over 50 different codes. Years later she would use this coding skill to assign phonetic and linguistic codes while inputting Bible manuscripts, some even handwritten, into the computer.

After four more years I again gave up going to JAARS, making a total of 12 years waiting. Then God encouraged me through a KGER radio broadcast, the same station where we first learned of our mission's work so many years before. Norman Nelson's message on the **Morning Chapel Hour** was: "[If you have a dream to serve God full-time and if it's God's dream, He wants to dream His dream through you. It WILL be fulfilled no matter how long it may take.](#)" After 12 years we took heart in a new fresh way, though the door to this new ministry was still closed!

Finally our mission transitioned from the big IBM computer to PCs. I was no longer irreplaceable at our mission HQ. In only a year and a half we were able to raise our support back up from 25% to 100%+ and at age 63, Irene and I headed for JAARS in North Carolina!

### **The Three-Fingered Cloud Beckons Us Towards JAARS!**

At sunset the evening before we left California, we saw a cloud formation like three very long fingers beginning at the eastern horizon (from over JAARS) and stretching clear across the sky to just above our heads! Psalm 132:6 was the amazing highlight of Irene's devotion in her NIV Bible that day. It was about joyfully finding the lost Ark of the Covenant in the '**fields of JAAR!**' Another translation renders this as the 'fields of the wood' which is even more meaningful since the JAARS Center is located in the woods of North Carolina! The Lord seemed to be saying, "**Rejoice! Time to go to JAARS where I will begin dreaming My dream through you.**" [E](#) [G](#)

### **At Last! Living my Dream to Help Speed Bible Translation at JAARS!**

Today, Bible translations for unwritten languages begin with a tonal and phonetic analysis using Speech Analyzer (SA) and Phonology Assistant (PA). I had the joy of helping develop SA as a research assistant for my first five years at JAARS and writing its first task-oriented 'how-to' manual. After tonal analysis, the translator copies SA recordings to Phonology Assistant to analyze the phonology. I also had the joy of serving as the sole programmer for PA fixing bugs for overseas translators for two more years. I fondly remember my very first fix for a translator in Malaysia. After that I got to help test Translation Editor, making a total of over ten years as a happy '**techno-missionary**' for Jesus. Was that a 'fun job' or what!

SA also has a 'music analyzer' to analyze complex tribal music and then to 'translate' classic hymns and choruses into the tribal style. This made a HUGE difference for the Canela in Brazil. After translating the New Testament for them, Jack Popjes was disappointed the tribe just ignored it as well as the classic hymns. "[I just couldn't figure out their music. I couldn't tell when to clap my hands or stomp my feet!](#)"

After a year's work, Tom Avery, a pioneer computer programmer, came up with our first music analysis algorithm and wrote a hymn in their tribal style. What a difference! Not only did the tribe now take interest in their newly translated Testament but began writing their own hymns and choruses. A mini-revival nearly broke out! Picture: Tom Avery at my desk at JAARS, noticing a lot of improvements on his early algorithm, saying, "**Way to GO!**" Later on, Tom (Avery) played some strange music on a tribal 'nose flute.' That's right, a nose flute', played



through one nostril to our utter delight!

## The Inspiring 'Gift of Gratitude' for Bible Translation Technology

*JAARS software has helped cut the average translation time for a New Testament roughly in half, from around 30 years to about 15 years and often less as with the Dhao!*

This hand-woven scarf is a 'gift of gratitude' from the Dhao people on the Pacific island of Ndao. It was sent to JAARS with a note of their appreciation for the software developed at JAARS that helped make their Scripture translation possible: Speech Analyzer and Shoebox. Speech Analyzer, which I was blessed to help develop, is displayed on the computer. My wife Irene is helping hold the scarf.



BibleTranslator Chuck Grimes had been told by the Dhao, "[No one has yet been able to translate our language and you won't either!](#)" However, only two weeks later, Chuck had broken through the extremely complex tonal structure using Speech Analyzer! The translation was begun in 1999 and dedicated in October, 2012. Chuck's dad, Dr. Joe Grimes, developed the first portable *car battery-powered computer* for field translators in 1977. It was first used in Mexico and the Solomon Islands.

JAARS continues to develop even more powerful Bible translation software to help speed Bible translation and our Lord's immanent return He has promised after all nations have received His word. The Dhao scarf, above, is on display in the lobby of the Language Services Center at JAARS and is a great encouragement, not only to me, but to all the other computer programmers entering the building each morning. This link takes you to this author's article in the JAARS magazine with more details, including pictures, of computer-assisted Bible translation development in my early days. [K](#) For fascinating facts about the Dhao scarf with a great spiritual application, click [here](#).

About half the world's untranslated languages are 'tonal', so results in the field were spectacular when **Speech Analyzer** and Phonology Assistant became available. **SA** development was begun by Geoffrey Hunt, a translator in Ghana, a former electrical engineer. Ex-physicist Terry Gibbs finished the project at JAARS with another ex-physicist, two master digital signal engineers and two computer programmers, including myself.

In Chapter Two, I shared how [Hope was born with Christ](#). Before missionaries came, the Kuni-Boazi of Papua New Guinea had no hope because they were without Christ. *They didn't even have a word for 'hope'!* They have an astoundingly complex language with five tone levels plus inflections which indicate if the action is past, present, future, a statement or a question. *Additional linguistic codes bring a speaker's choice to over 100 tone patterns to choose from!* I'd be speechless! This sample is from 1 Zion (1 John).

Bible translator Roland Fumey is speaking Kuni-Boazi, a language of Papua Indonesia, which is being analyzed by Speech Analyzer. He said, "[Speech Analyzer \(SA\) has been a huge help in analyzing Kuni-Boazi and developing a spelling system that is clear and easy to read!](#)"



After 26 years, the Kuni-Boazi New Testament was dedicated with a joyous celebration in 2016! The Fumey's continue to bring hope, thanks in part to this computer software, as they they continue translation

of the Old Testament. It was exciting to be allowed to help develop Speech Analyzer for five years as a research assistant and tester! Our deepest gratitude to all our mission prayer Partners and financial partners who helped make this possible! Shortly after this picture was made, I was assigned as a computer programmer to help develop Phonology Assistant, another vitally important tool for analyzing unknown languages.

Duane Clouse, a Bible translator in a nearby country, told me, "Years ago, before translation got under way, three consultants failed, one after the other, to unravel the Kiri-Kiri tonal code. I can VERY confidently say that without CECIL and all the versions of Speech Analyzer, we'd still be at square one!" Computer professionals: might the Lord be calling you to help speed Bible translation? Contact <https://JAARS.org> for a *Check IT Out seminar*.

A year after my three heart attacks and troublesome heart arrhythmia, it became clear that I needed to slow down a bit. I'm not retired but continue to work from home at my own pace. I worked for several years on a research project to help improve Speech Analyzer and still do remote testing of new prototypes for both Speech Analyzer and Phonology Assistant for overseas translators and developers. I also delight in personal witnessing everywhere.

At right, I also served at JAARS as an on-call Italian speaker helping train media missionaries for around 15 years. This was truly a delightful ministry. Media missionaries learn to record Scripture and dub any language onto the *Jesus* film. A lady on the right in the picture reads the appropriate scripture for a precise time slot for the video. I then repeat it and it's recorded. This is so the sound track sounds more natural. On the field, a translator would read the Scripture and, even though the native speaker may not be able to read it yet, he can still proclaim Christ!



The desperate cry for getting videos into formerly unwritten languages was doubly underscored by one elderly lady overseas who said, "I can't become a Christian. I'm too old to learn to read our new Scriptures." However, a DVD with Jesus speaking her heart language brought a living Christ into her life and continues to make Jesus real to millions who may never learn to read around the world!

Hundreds, possibly thousands, have come to Christ through video media. Read the exciting account of one of them, an African bomb maker in chapter 1 of ***Immersed in Jesus!*** <sup>6</sup> Other amazing true accounts include Louise Derr, a former witch, and African Naphthli Mattah, whose chapter is entitled, *From Serving the Devil to Serving God in Bible Translation!* This author will send you a free copy while supplies last.



Irene served in JAARS Admin her first year but has been keyboarding Bible manuscripts from home for the past 20 years. This includes inserting complex linguistic and phonetic codes, headers, footers, and notes. *She's done a couple of manuscripts which were hand-written right from the field!* So far, she's keyboarded over 86 Bibles, or portions, as part of a large joint team in the U.K., Australia, and here in the US called *Mission Assist*. Recently, she keyboarded the Nengone Bible for 8,000 Pacific Islanders in the Loyalty Islands of New Caledonia.

She's just begun probably her hardest keyboarding task ever: a Romanized Cantonese Bible, substituting Roman characters for Chinese glyphs. When completed, we pray an estimated

72 million Cantonese speakers will be better able to read God's word!

**WOW!** I counted a choice of 46 codes she must enter to make the various linguistic and phonetic superscripts, subscripts, etc.! [Coincidence!](#) That's about the same number of other codes she had to learn while typing yearbooks over 57 years ago. God used that for her 'basic training' to prepare to keyboard new Bibles! Here's Leviticus 1:4, with the non-Romanized Cantonese glyph for 'religion' at far right: ㄌ 4 Waī-haī faán-tseuko.

宗教

(By the way, **The Discovery of Genesis**, by Kung and Nelson, details amazing evidence that 4500 years ago, the Mandarin Chinese were monotheistic! They also had symbols in their language for God, creation, Noah's ark with a family of eight, the universal flood, the Holy Spirit, Satan, demons, and much more!)

We share Christ almost everywhere. I particularly enjoy personal witnessing to vets, 'captive audiences' while waiting for medical appointments, even during medical tests, while shopping, and even in ambulances on the way to the ER on seven occasions. I wear my USS Ranger hat or my Marine hat which attract veterans and those thanking me for my military service. Each encounter rapidly morphs into a personal witnessing opportunity.

One soldier I met in an Ollie's store had been suffering from combat-related PTSD (Post Traumatic Stress Disorder) with few results after 14 years of treatment. After sharing how Christ could handle his PTSD, he said, "Thank you for your therapy!" This was the only time he ever smiled during the 15 to 20-minute encounter.



On Veteran's Day, 2016, I wore my Marine hat and noticed this 85 year-old ex-Marine eating all alone in this restaurant. I joined him for a great time reminiscing about our service. After sharing my testimony and leaflet, I learned he had no assurance of Heaven and I was overjoyed to point him to Christ which he accepted! Pray for him and other special contacts. (Could the camera have captured more than just the glare from the window?)

This leaflet contains my testimony of how I found Christ after 11 years as an atheist. **Wow!** or 'Cool!' is often the response from young people because of the picture of me in the back seat of a Navy F4 jet fighter with the radars I used to help engineer. <sup>93</sup> It's in the 12th printing and has been distributed by our partners coast-to-coast, in Canada, and a few in Guatemala. Superscripts link it to relevant chapters in this *free online book* you are reading. Over 70% of the book contains answers I found to questions about God, with a lot of scientific evidence supporting creation and the reliability of Scripture. How to receive and follow Christ is also included. (Free upon request. Click [here](#).)



I suppose the ultimate highlight of our 52-year missionary service would certainly be helping to field-train missionary students in personal evangelism in Britain and at the US Headquarters. I had many adventures for the Lord house-to-house, on the street, and in parks. Two-day 'faith treks' on 'sealed orders' include sending students to local government officials. They carry only a Bible, leaflets, and no money or credit cards. Several of our former students continue to serve on mission fields, some for 30 years or more. We're still in contact with some of them and we continue to pray for them. Helping develop Bible translation software at the JAARS Center in North Carolina would definitely be a very close second highlight of our missionary service.

People often ask us the secret of our 56-year marriage. I recently saw a good illustration of our 'secret' at our church's men's breakfast. During Paul H.'s devotional talk, he made a triangle with his fingers. God was represented by the apex and the two lower corners



represented the husband and wife. Paul said, "In an equilateral triangle (like the one on the left) the closer each of the two lower corners of a triangle are to the apex, then the closer they are to each other!" Always trying to stay close to the Lord is our continuous objective. But if we had to pick a single verse most responsible for our marriage longevity, we would pick Ephesians 4:32: "And be kind to one another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, just as God in Christ forgave you."

There have been trials. Irene had kidney cancer, I had three heart attacks, a mini-stroke, emergency gall bladder surgery, and heart arrhythmia bad enough that only the good Lord and my pacemaker have been keeping me alive since 2006. 😊 Not to mention a bad side-collision car crash last year that took ten months for recovery. Many of our previous monthly prayer letters have reported the 'Romans 8:28' good things that came from the accident and numerous doctor visits. I've had lengthy opportunities to share Christ with the ambulance paramedics, a trauma surgeon, and several nurses. We expect to learn a lot more that God did, unknown to us, when we get to Heaven one day. There we'll also meet Marine Corporal Stevens who still has no clue what his life did to get me onto God's path eight years after serving together at Pearl Harbor. What a reunion that will be!

Have we failed at times? Yes. Has Christ forgiven us? Yes. Today, our lives continue to be meaningful and very purposeful as we continue our active missionary service. Does God promise everyone the same happy life we've had so far? No, but all true Christians can confidently look forward to a future with Him one day knowing that any trials He permits are part of His grand overall plan for them. The apostle Peter compared our sufferings to the purification of gold. This process requires 'fiery trials' to totally melt it down so the impurities may be skimmed off.

This purification renders it more beautiful, more valuable, and more useable. One day we will know all the 'whys' of our spiritual 'fiery trials'. Then things of earth will fade away, all tears and sorrows will vanish, and we will finally discover what true everlasting happiness really is!

God has a blueprint, a long-range plan, for every life. At our age, we can look back and see how our lives have unfolded so wonderfully over the years. Here's my paraphrase of the charge King David gave his son Solomon who was to begin building the magnificent temple in Jerusalem. "Every part of this blueprint was given to me in writing by the hand of the Lord. Be strong and courageous and get to work, for the Lord my God is with you. He will see to it that everything is finished correctly." (1 Chronicles 28:19-20)

Don and Pat Wahl were also a part of this blueprint because they looked after my elderly mom in Oklahoma for many years. Without the Wahls, we probably would've had to leave our ministry at JAARS to care for her in spite of her strong desire that we remain in ministry. Thanks to the Wahls, we were notified of her final decline in time to visit, then return the next year when she went into nursing care and passed on. She was so, so proud of her son (me) who was still serving as a missionary after having been delivered from atheism.

After 52 years as 'faith missionaries' (no salary), we are still encouraged by how God continues to supply our needs. Though the Lord has taken nearly 70 of our prayer partners home to be with Him during the past 20 years, yet He continues to supply others to keep our work going for Him.

Like this turtle on a fence post, we know we didn't get here by ourselves! We trust our experiences will encourage some of you who may dream of missionary service but who are still held back because you're wondering, "Who would want to support me/us?" If God has indeed given you this





dream, then 'follow your dream'! We did and God has faithfully provided guidance and His provision these past 52+ years!

So moving forward, strengthened by His promises, and willing to endure whatever trials may be ahead, *we press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.* (Philippians 3:14). Whatever it takes, it will be worth it all when we meet Jesus one day and hear Him say, *"Well done, good and faithful servant; you were faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your Lord!"* (Matthew 25:21)

\*\*\*\*\*

This Easter card from the SIM mission wonderfully portrays our glorious life in Christ.



Until He calls us home, the Gaithers' beautiful song, *Because He Lives*, continues to encourage us by expressing the hope Jesus gives us: *We can face tomorrow, all fear is gone, and life is worth the living just because He lives!* (John 14:19 paraphrase)

**May we make missionary Amy Carmichael's prayer our own:**

**Give me the Love that leads the way,  
The Faith nothing can dismay,  
The Hope no disappointment can tire,  
The Passion that will burn like fire,  
Make me Thy fuel, O Flame of God!**

*May the peace of our Lord be with you, His love surround you,  
and His presence encourage and strengthen you in all circumstances.*

\*\*\*\*\*

## **GLOSSARY of BASIC CHRISTIAN TERMS**

*NOTE: References to Scriptures (verses) from the Bible will be of the form: Romans 1:4 which means the book of Romans, Chapter 1 and verse 4. The New King James Version is used in this book. Most other versions will say basically the same thing but in different words. The NIV is a very popular version also.*

### **Atheist/Agnostic**

**or Skeptic:** An atheist says there is no God; an agnostic is not sure; skeptic is often used to mean either one.

**Apostate:** A person who has renounced his faith or his religion or both.

**Apostles:** Strict definition: 'sent ones'. Scripture seems to define 'apostle' for only those who actually saw Jesus after His resurrection. (See 'Disciples'.)

**Born Again:** See 'Salvation'. (John 3)

- Christ:** Jesus' title meaning Messiah, the long-awaited and much prophesied Savior.
- Cult:** A religious denomination professing to be Christian but which incorrectly interprets Scripture, ignoring practices and general beliefs of the early church, or which adds doctrines not found in Scripture. They often create incorrect Scripture translations upon which their false doctrines are based. Jesus warned there would always be false prophets and false teachers.
- Deist:** A *deist* is one who believes in a god-creator but denies revealed religion. That is, a creator but who has nothing further to do with us afterwards
- Disciples:** Followers of Jesus before His crucifixion and resurrection. Today it could also mean any follower of Jesus. (See 'Apostles'.)
- Grace:** Divine undeserved favor, like our salvation being the 'gift of God' in Romans 6:23; **God's Riches At Christ's Expense**. We can't earn even part of it. (Ephesians 2:8-9)
- Hades:** Waiting place for the dead before Christ's resurrection. Under the first covenant of the Old Testament, sins were not forgiven but only covered for a year at a time following Yom Kippur sacrifices. They were not forgiven until Christ ushered in the new covenant of Grace. Those in the 'Paradise' section of Hades, like Abraham, Moses, etc. were taken to Heaven. Those in the 'fire' section, like the rich man of Luke 16, remain until the final judgement when it will become permanent: hell, the lake of fire Jesus spoke of so often.
- Hell:** The place where unrepentant sinners are punished for eternity. Jesus called it the 'furnace of fire' where there will be weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 13:50) In Luke 16, He described a rich man tormented in flame. This was not a parable since He contrasts that man with Lazarus. Jesus never used names in His parables. In Revelation, hell is also known as the 'lake of fire'. (Revelation 21:8)
- Holy Spirit:** Third person of the Holy Trinity. God is three persons in one (the Holy trinity) just as one man may be a father, a husband, and an engineer. God is essentially the same entity as Jesus and the Holy Spirit. All three have co-existed eternally. All were present at the same time at the baptism of Jesus in Matthew 3:16-17. Only God the Father knows when Jesus will return for His own. Jesus is before God's throne interceding for His followers, and the Holy Spirit is at work in the hearts of men on earth.
- KJV, NKJV, NIV:** **King James Version** of the Bible, **New modernized KJV** (No 'thee/thou'), **New International Version**, very popular easy-to-read version. (No 'thee/thou')
- LB, NLB:** **Living Bible** and **New Living Bible**, easy to understand paraphrased Bibles.
- Lost:** Those who have not yet received God's salvation. See 'Salvation'.
- New Testament:** Second major division of the Bible which is the fulfillment of the new covenant of grace prophesied in Jeremiah 31:31. The New Testament documents the life and teachings of Jesus who is the mediator of this new covenant. It contains many Old Testament prophecies of His coming and of our future. It also contains the history of the early church and the teachings of the apostles. (See 'Old Testament'.)
- Old Testament:** First major section of the Bible which covers creation, the early history of God's chosen nation Israel, the first covenant of the Law mediated by Moses, prophecies of cities, of nations, and the promised Messiah Jesus, and some poetic books. Many of the prophecies were not fulfilled until New Testament times. (See 'New Testament'.)
- Repentance:** A change in attitude and behavior resulting in following and obeying Christ.

- Salvation:** Obtained by receiving God's forgiveness of sin and the 'gift of eternal life' by asking Christ into our lives following repentance. (Romans 6:23, John 1:12, and Colossians 3:1) Thereafter we are promised an eternity of happiness with God in Heaven instead of in the 'furnace of fire' of which Jesus warned us many times. When one sincerely follows the steps above, he may then be called 'saved' as opposed to 'lost'. 'Born again' is another term meaning the same. (John 3)
- Satan:** God's archenemy, also known as the devil. He was originally the angel Lucifer, who with about a third of the other angels, rebelled against God. God cast them out of Heaven. These spirit-beings continually try to sabotage God's plans by tempting mankind to disobey Him. They manipulate events, thoughts, and desires for sinful things. Satan doesn't wear red underwear, sport horns, throw a grand party in hell for sinners, or torment others with his pitchfork in hell. God is in charge of hell, not Satan.
- Satan and his demons' true forms are those of angels but they can assume any form. Surprisingly, they were all originally angels who rebelled. Activities include hindering the preaching of the gospel on earth, tempting Christians to sin, performing miracle healings, and encouraging Satanic worshippers to call upon the spirits of darkness. On rare occasions they can impersonate dead loved ones at séances or reincarnations. Satan and his demons will eventually suffer the wrath of God even more than the most wicked human in the eternal 'lake of fire' (Genesis 3, Isaiah 14, Revelation 20, 21)
- Saved:** See 'Salvation'.
- scriptures:** Refers to the Bible which is organized into books, chapters, and verses.  
Example: John 3:16 means book of John, Chapter 3, verse 16.
- Theist:** Belief in one God as the transcendent Creator and ruler of the universe. It does not necessarily entail further belief in divine revelation to man.
- Unsaved:** Those who have not yet received God's salvation. See 'Salvation'.

\*\*\*\*\*

## APPENDIX A:

### ***SKEPTIC 'FAST TRACK', AUTHOR'S 'FAST TRACK' TESTIMONY***

Perhaps you'd like to read a short poem about my former atheist philosophy? Click [here](#).

To bypass the following and go to **MORE SKEPTIC'S QUESTIONS ANSWERED**, Click [here](#).

**Reminder:** Left-click on [bold blue underlined text](#) to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, and press ← (not <).

### **SKEPTIC 'FAST TRACK'**

**(Includes atheists and other doubters.)**

**Welcome! May I ask, "What led you to become an atheist/agnostic/skeptic?"**

**If you were like me, it was most or all of the reasons below at one time or another, which I borrowed from Appendix H.**

1. **"I DON'T NEED GOD AND DON'T CARE. I DECIDE WHAT'S RIGHT AND WRONG. Besides, I've never seen, heard, touched, or felt God." Click: [REPLY](#)**
2. **CHRISTIANS ARE ALL HYPOCRITES!" [REPLY](#)**
3. **"SCIENCE and EVOLUTION RENDERS GOD UNNECESSARY." [REPLY](#)**
4. **"I'M BHUDDIST, NEW AGE, INTO MEDITATION, ETC., NO GOD NECESSARY". [REPLY](#)**

5. **"GOD IS EVIL or POWERLESS, OR HE WOULD STOP SUFFERING AND ALL EVIL."**  
[REPLY](#)
6. **"ANGRY: GOD LET MY LOVED ONE DIE, I'M DEEPLY HURT, GOD LET ME DOWN. I hate God, even just hearing His name!"** [REPLY](#)
7. **"SANTA MADE ME AN ATHEIST!"** [REPLY](#)

Curious how an 11-year atheist like myself found enough evidence to become a missionary for 52+years? Click [here](#) or if you're in a hurry, click on my condensed version at '[Six Questions Light my Way](#)'. Return here after jumps (CTRL+ ←). If, however, you have specific questions you want answered first, click [here](#) then return to this point.

If you're convinced God exists, click [here](#) to jump to what to do next. If not, continue.

### BRIEF RECAP of EVIDENCE GOD EXISTS

The '(More)' links show evidence I found as a former atheist. (Return: Hold ALT, press ←)

1. EVOLUTION'S ACCIDENTAL CREATION of our universe is still not proven true and indeed is proven false by lack of evidence and mathematical probability. ([More](#))
2. THE MERE EXISTENCE OF OUR FANTASTICALLY COMPLEX UNIVERSE proves an intelligent creator just as the existence of the famous Mona Lisa painting proves there was an intelligent artist. (Psalm 19:1-4) Hear science speak: [More](#).
3. GOD GAVE US A CONSCIENCE TO HEAR GOD TELL US WHAT'S RIGHT AND WRONG and an EMPTY PLACE in our heart that ONLY HE CAN FILL. ([More](#))
4. LACK of TRUE JUSTICE ON EARTH DEMANDS A GOD OF EVENTUAL JUSTICE ([More](#))
5. EVIDENCE THE BIBLE is GOD'S WORD ([More](#))
6. JESUS' UNIQUE RESURRECTION FROM THE DEAD AND MANY POST-RESURRECTION APPEARANCES:
  - a. Powerfully declare Him to be he only religious leader sent by God, excluding all other earthly religions and philosophies. Was Jesus a [liar](#), [lunatic](#), or [Lord](#)? Two lawyers put Him on trial at these citations. [Z, 106](#)
  - b. Powerfully validate all he taught about God's love for us, about Heaven, about hell, and how to please God and eventually spend an eternity of joy with Him. ([More](#))
7. IS UNBELIEF IN GOD JUST A HARMLESS OPTION?  
We've all disobeyed God (lies, lust, swearing, and worse). All other world religions, except Christianity, base your eternal reward on how 'good' you were, according to all kinds of standards about what 'good' is. The real God will judge us on how good we were compared to righteousness of Jesus Christ Himself! (Acts 17:31)

Therefore, we all deserve God's wrath. Jesus described that wrath upon a man after death in the eternal, 'furnace of fire': weeping, wailing, and gnashing of teeth. (Romans 3:23, Matthew 13:50, Luke 16, Revelation 21:8) But God loved us so much, He sent His son to pay for our sins on the cross that He may give us eternal life as a gift! (Romans 6:23).

Jesus' unique resurrection from the dead on the third day validated all He taught about God and eternal life. *Our response?* Love and gratitude reverses our life's direction to turn from our sins and begin obeying Him. That's 'repentance', demonstrating 2 Corinthians 5:14-21 translated from God's word into our real world. Josh McDowell's dad is only one of millions of examples, including my own. Click [here](#) to read about the

amazing transformation of vicious atheist Josh McDowell into a world class Christian apologist and that of his drunken dad, whom Josh had planned to murder. Wow!

### **YOUR RESPONSE and WHAT'S NEXT?**

**1. The evidence and God's word have convinced you He's real and you need Christ.**

*You're a person of integrity who loves truth and will follow the truth, cost what it may. Come as u are, God will never give up on you but will help you take each step towards maturing into someone He can be proud of. (Philippians 1:6) 'Yard by yard is hard but inch by inch is a cinch!'* Ask God for help to become willing to do His will. Click [here](#) for the five 'B's to begin following Him.

**2. The evidence is powerful but you're just not willing to turn from whatever sin is keeping you from coming to God.**

You're still Satan's puppet and can't break loose. Jesus' power can cut those strings if you'd trust him and go with God's people. Ask God to help you to become willing as I once did.

[And you will seek Me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart.](#) (Jeremiah 29:13)



**3. Neither the evidence nor the Holy Spirit trying to reach you had any effect and you intend to continue to reject God.**

Perhaps you know you should come to God but intend to wait until you're too old to enjoy your sin. Then, after wasting your life, with your dying gasp, you intend to call on God and enjoy the best of both worlds. *What makes you think you will live until you're old?* Watch the evening news for a week and count how many were killed or incapacitated with little or no warning. You might also be among the 40,000 who were killed suddenly with no warning by drunk drivers, both in cars and in crosswalks.

*Also what makes you think your brain will be working properly even if you do live to be old?* My own dad rejected God until in his 70s and when I tried to share Christ. His Alzheimer's blocked that and he died not long afterwards. Your eternal future is at stake. Even more important to you would be that disobeying God eventually brings it's own suffering and heart-ache in this life. As Jesus said, **"We will reap what we sow!"**

Because God loves you, He won't give up on you. *Could this book be your last of many chances to turn to God?* He may, or may not, send others with the same basic message to point you to Him. If that doesn't work, God may start playing 'hard ball' in these progressive stages:

- a. **Empty life, suicide ahead:** Regardless of your wealth or fame, or whatever, life can become so empty and pointless your next step is to join around 47,000 others who committed suicide this year. That was my personal experience.
- b. **You finally begin to pay the wages of sin.** (Romans 6:23) Thousands of divorces each year, resulting from lusting after someone other than your spouse, end up in endless litigation, children suffering, and even financial ruin, not to mention mental suffering. There are two million men in prison, probably most from 'little' crimes like a few lies, a little bit of cheating, a bit of fraud, embezzlement, etc.
- c. **God may break your temporary body so your eternal soul may be saved.** As a last resort 'wake-up-call', God may allow physical suffering to break you loose from your rebellion. An unexpected automobile accident or stroke leaving you paralyzed for life, injury by a mugger, or even an incurable disease.

An eternity in hell is so horrible, God may have to take extreme measures to shake

you out of your rebellion. (Click [here](#) for a man who needed some years enduring torture and starvation in enemy prison camps before wanting to know God.) 'The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom', we read in Psalm 111. God loves you and wants you in Heaven instead of hell someday and will do whatever to wake you up. So be afraid, be very afraid of making Him your enemy by rebellion.

Do you really think the short-term pleasures of sin are worth selling your soul, then suffering God's wrath for eternity? Jesus said you can literally sell your soul in Matthew 16:26: "For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"

*Escape Satan's 'monkey trap' while you can! Jungle dwellers easily catch monkeys for roasting using a big heavy clay jar with a banana inside. The mouth of the jar is large enough for the monkey's hand to reach in but too small to grab the banana and run. He won't let go, so is easily captured. Are you still holding on to some pleasurable sins in Satan's 'monkey trap'?*



-----  
If you're still skeptical, I would recommend **The Atheist Delusion** video at this citation. <sup>96</sup> It's been viewed by 15 million!. It's mainly five-minute interviews with skeptics created to rebut probably the most widely read atheist 'manifesto' in the world: **The God Delusion** by Richard Dawkins!

=====

### **FIVE STEPS to FINDING GOD'S REAL and BEGIN FOLLOWING CHRIST**

God promises that '*If you seek Me with your whole heart, you will find Me*'. (Jeremiah 29:13) These five '**BEE's**' below will show how to receive God's free gift of eternal life, assuring us a place in Heaven, instead of suffering an eternity in hell, which is what all of us, less than perfect, deserve. (Romans 3:23) Also, you'll find your first steps to begin following Christ.



1. '**Bee**' in Prayer: Ask God with your 'whole heart' to reveal Himself to you, then:
  - a. **Listen** to God as He speaks to you through your conscience and through His written word, the Bible, beginning with the verses cited in this book. Click [here](#) for evidence the Bible is God's written word if you have not already done so.
  - b. **Examine** the obvious physical, scientific, and mathematical evidence.
  - c. **Follow courageously without reservation, wherever the evidence leads.** If you have not already clicked the link above for some former atheists who did just that, click here: [Five atheists](#). Included is Josh MacDowell, who left law school for a year to disprove God, Jesus, and the very foundations of Christianity. Also, I would invite you to read the testimony of zealot medical Doctor Nabeel Quareshi <sup>EE</sup> with 23 years of non-Christian religious indoctrination.

You may also add the testimony books of eight scientists, all of Ph.D. caliber, many of them university professors and former atheists, who followed convincing evidence of Jesus' resurrection, the very foundation and cornerstone of the Christian faith. Click [here](#).

2. '**Bee**'-lieve: God sent Jesus from Heaven to be the only means of forgiveness of sin and the only way to enjoy an eternity with God one day. Jesus' resurrection from the dead on the third day '*declared Him to the Son of God with power*' thereby invalidating all other religious systems' alternate ways to Heaven because no other religious leader

returned from the dead after three days in the grave. [More proof?](#) Jesus showed Himself alive, beginning the third day after his crucifixion, to many eye-witnesses over 40 days. (John 14:6, Romans 1:4, Acts 1:3)

*Be aware there are two kinds of spiritual belief:*

- a. Satan's type belief:** agreeing spiritual facts are true but behavior is unaffected. He and his demons believe in God and in Christ but they fight any attempt by God to clean up their life. (James 2:19)
  - b. True belief:** results in saving your soul from an eternity in what Jesus called the furnace of fire, and is marked by a long-term gradual transformation of your life as you begin by surrendering your life to God and allowing Him to help you begin obeying Him. *Evidence of change of your behavior, in the next few steps, show if you truly believe.* Just agreeing that the facts may be true will not save you.
- 3. 'Bee'-Convicted:** Realize that we've all disobeyed God (sinned) with both current and eternal consequences. (The Ten Commandments show us what sins can be physically committed, like stealing, killing, adultery, etc. But Jesus said *we can sin even in our thoughts!* (Matthew 5:28) Even one lie or one 'OMG' is enough to miss Heaven, if unforgiven. There is no 'balance' in the sky to weigh good and bad deeds.) (Romans 3:23, Revelation 21:8) True conviction is demonstrated in the components of commitment which follow.
- 4. 'Bee'-Committed: Repent and be baptized.** (Acts 2:38) Receive Christ's sacrifice for your sins and make Him Lord of your life as we're exhorted to do in John 1:12: "[But as many as received Him, to them He gave power to become the sons of God.](#)" Here's how, click [here](#). [Afraid or unwilling? Ask God to help you become willing as I did.](#) Here are the basic steps of commitment.
  - a. Repentance:** True repentance is godly sorrow for disobeying God that results in a change in your life direction to begin following and obeying Him. His loving forgiveness through Christ, who saved you from the furnace of fire, produces the gratitude that constrains you to begin following (obeying) Him, the *evidence of true belief* explained above. (2 Corinthians 5:14-21)
  - b. Baptism:** One result of true repentance is to be eager to take this next step of obedience, baptism. Baptism as an infant doesn't count. An infant cannot take the previous step of repentance required for baptism to be meaningful. (Acts 2:38) Baptism is a public proclamation you have begun to follow Christ. *It does not mean that you have suddenly become perfect. It means you've changed your life's direction and loyalties.* It's like the oath of allegiance immigrants take to become citizens of our country, forsaking their former loyalty to their old country.

Jesus said that if you are too ashamed to confess Him in this life, He will be ashamed of you in the next. If you don't have the courage to stand for Christ after all He's done for you, then it's likely you have not really repented or really believed the gospel. The change in your life seen by the sinful people you used to hang out with will be noticed. It may well be the first step for them to come to Christ like you. That was the case for me when I saw Christ in fellow Marine Corporal Stevens. *(It wasn't until eight years later that I was in a condition to remember him and begin seeking Christ but he made the difference. Click [here](#) to go to that part of my testimony.)* In Acts 2:38, the apostle Peter preached, "[Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ!](#)"
  - c. Witnessing:** With Christ now living in you, you now know the future joy that will be yours in Heaven and the terrors of the lake of fire you have been saved from. The

love of Christ in you will therefore plant the desire to share Christ with others, especially loved ones. (2 Corinthians 5:14-21) Click [here](#) for more.

- d. **Restitution:** is 'making right the wrongs you committed before receiving Christ'. This would include apologizing to those you hurt with cruel words or worse and restoring that which you stole, possibly anonymously or on the installment plan. Your explanation of why you are doing this can be a powerful force for drawing others towards Christ. More [here](#).

- 5. **'Bee'-Sanctified:** This is a life-long process of spiritual growth, during which the love of Christ motivates you to let God gain more and more victories over your sinful behavior. You then become more and more Christ-like to glorify of God. In other words, you become a 'new creature in Christ' which Jesus called being 'born again'. (John 3:1-3) [And what is our driving motivation? GRATITUDE](#) for what He's done for us: saving us from the furnace of fire to an eternity in heaven with Him, which we don't deserve. *You may add his watch over our lives with his great promise of Romans 8:28!* I would invite you to go to the Internet for a heart-felt musical way to say thanks. Just click on this link: [How Can I Say Thanks? The wonderful answer: To God be the Glory!](#)

*God supplies both the power to overcome sin and the certainty you're never tempted above that which you cannot resist. "I couldn't help it", doesn't fly. Though we may sometimes fall, He provides forgiveness and would say "Get up and try again." He has faithfully promised to be with us to the end. I love the chorus, "He's still working on me, to make me what I ought to be ... " (Luke 10:19, 1 Corinthians 10:13, John 1:9)*

*No, you cannot live the Christian life on your own. You must ask Christ to begin living His life through you! That will require daily refreshment and strengthening you can only get from time with Him in the Bible. May I recommend the best daily, small devotion book I've ever found: **Jesus Today**. It will help you grow into the 'masterpiece of His workmanship' He intended you to be in Ephesians 2:10. [111](#) No, you will also never become perfect but walking with Christ is a daily journey of small steps. 'Yard by yard is hard but inch by inch is a cinch!' God promises in Philippians 1:6 to never give up on you. If you fall, he would say, "Get up and try again. I'm still with you! Together, we'll eventually gain final victory!"*

*When you find yourself unwilling to obey God, ask Him, as I did (and even continue to do on occasion today), "Lord, please help me to become willing to obey you." You will need to begin attending a Bible-believing church immediately. 'Lone Rangers' don't last very long in our sin-soaked society. We would recommend an evangelical church which, in our experience, is more grounded in Scripture along the lines of the early church in the New Testament and less in rituals, ceremonies, and traditions.*

This citation will help you choose a church, detailing basic fundamental doctrines common to most fundamental Bible-believing churches and showing the biblical errors of two major cults: Jehovah's Witnesses and Mormons <sup>89</sup>

You will find it helpful to click [here](#) to jump to **How to Mature** presented as analogous to the training of a Christian Soldier in Ephesians 6, who instead of killing, makes the dead alive in Christ.

*Be steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord!* (1 Corinthians 15:57-58)

As a former atheist, I actually experienced the fulfillment of God's promise in Jeremiah 29:11-13. I hope I've encouraged you to do the same. During my 11 years as an atheist, I didn't have enough 'faith' to believe in God. Now, after 56 years continuing to honestly evaluate more and more evidence, like Dr. Norman Geisler:



**"I still don't have enough 'faith' to go back to being an atheist!" <sup>9</sup>**

=====

### **MORE SKEPTIC'S QUESTIONS ANSWERED**

**IMPORTANT: Several other vital skeptic's questions were answered previously.**

That includes, 'Why do I need God, I want to be free', and the "Five Steps to finding God's real."

If you skipped that, we'd invite you to left-click [here](#) to jump back.

#### **1. Who made God?**

Many try to squirm out of their accountability to God by asking this question. They feel that if no one can give them an answer, they 'win', and think they're excused from accountability.

My answer, "Why stop there? Show me the god who made Him and so on, until we get back to the very first god. Who made him?" I continue. "Your question is irrelevant because [we're accountable only to the God who has revealed Himself to us](#). *You are not excused from God's judgment because I cannot answer your question!*

#### **2. Formal logic clearly disproves the existence of God, right?**

Click [here](#).

#### **3. Am I not scientific to believe in only what I can see, touch, and feel?** Click [here](#).

#### **4. I'm busy. Don't you have a 'three-minute' version of proofs God exists?** Click [here](#).

#### **5. [Who is God that I should obey Him?](#)** (Left-mouse click this line to jump.) Also you may click [here](#) for a later version in Appendix E.

#### **6. What's wrong with 'Eat, Drink, and Be Merry'?**

This saying may have originated with skeptics or libertines centuries ago, but it is quoted by Jesus Christ. Read why Jesus' answered, "**Fool!**" to a very rich man in Luke 12:16-21.

#### **7. Why did God create hell?**

*God never created hell for people. It was created for Satan and the disobedient angels. Sadly, we who follow their evil ways and reject Jesus will also suffer their same fate.*

Jesus also said there will be 'weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth' for an eternity. Scary? [You bet!](#) Time to do something about your eternal future? [Then DO it!](#)

#### **8. Why does God allow evil to exist?**

[Because God created us to love and to be loved.](#) Robots cannot love. Love requires free will to choose to love and to obey or to disobey. Therefore God created man with a free will. Therefore, man has the freedom to be as good or as evil as he desires. God sometimes allows evil individuals to continue for quite a while for them to see just how evil they are to better determine their punishment later on. He has promised to put an end to all evil and evil-doers one day, which you may count on 100%! (Psalm 9:27, Revelation 19 through 21)

#### **9. Why would a 'loving' God throw people into hell? Not destroy evil? Allow Suffering? Allow people to die in natural disasters?** Answers are in [Appendix B](#). [Appendix C](#) goes further: [Hate God? How does atheism prove God?](#)

**Many examples showing God is not frustrated by the deeds of evil men!**

#### **10. Don't all intelligent people believe there is no absolute truth or morality?**

'No absolute truth' or 'no absolute morality', which I think you really mean, are both statements of what you just said did not exist, absolutes! *This a logical contradiction and therefore false. You have your own opinion about gravity? That will not change the law's calculation of exactly how fast you fall and the force with which you strike the ground. The law of gravity does not apply to you? Jump. You'll always come down at the computed*

*speed and momentum whether you choose to believe in gravity or not!*

*If 'no absolute morality' were true, then there's no difference between murdering a baby and giving bread to a homeless man. How about if the murdered baby was yours?*

God established the Moral Law for everyone. So you're not free to decide what's good or evil for you. That's exactly how God's number one angel, Lucifer, became Satan. (Isaiah 14:12-15) That means your 'freedom to decide' makes you Satan's puppet, therefore you will share his horrible fate one day. Click [here](#) for evidence that changed the life-long atheism of C. S. Lewis, an Oxford University professor, into a world-class Christian author.

### **11. How does the existence of God prove God and reject atheism?**

(Click [here](#) for an answer from a National Apologetics Conference.)

### **12. What's the evidence the Bible is the Word of God?** (This whole line is a jump.)

### **13. Isn't faith just a blind leap into the dark'?**

The Bible itself defines faith in Hebrews 11:1: "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen." The faith spoken of here is not a 'blind leap-off-a-cliff-in-the-dark-hope-so' type faith! **The great exploits of the 'heroes of the faith' mentioned in Hebrews 11 were motivated by real evidence. Jesus was 'declared to be the Son of God with power' by His resurrection from the dead! (Romans 1:4)** After His resurrection, He was seen over the next 40 days by many others. (Acts 1:3) *That evidence was the very foundation of the true belief that constrained the early church to fully trust in and rely upon God's word, even to the point of death.* The result was then to seek holiness and to stand strong without wavering in spite of losing all their worldly possessions and even their very lives.

Though faith is based on solid evidence, that's not all there is to faith. Jesus Himself must be the one to strengthen our trust in Him, especially when God seems distant or we are suffering trials. That's when we must choose to either follow Jesus or let our feelings drag us the other way. Remember, that *we're not to follow Christ depending on our feelings.* Satan can manipulate feelings. Remember the little 'Facts-Faith-Feelings' train in Chapter 4? *Facts power our spiritual train, not feelings.* Click [here](#).

**How do we strengthen our weak faith?** Romans 10:17 says faith comes by hearing and reading Scripture, the Word of God. Jesus' Spirit will then strengthen our faith so that we may persevere until we meet Him in person one day.

I repeat, faith is based on solid evidence, in stark contrast to the 'faith' of evolution, much of which I will show, is based upon unproven assumptions and even speculations stated as facts. Hence the title of Geisler and Turek's ***I Don't Have Enough Faith to be an Atheist.*** See *Evidence Resources*.<sup>2</sup> Sharing evidence is one of the main purposes of this book.

Before the 'Flying Walendas' there was Blondin. He first pushed a loaded wheelbarrow across Niagara Falls on a tight rope, then asked, "**Now, who's willing to climb into my wheelbarrow?**" That was a *great illustration of real faith: trusting one who had just demonstrated his power.* Jesus demonstrated He had power over life and death through His many miracles. He demonstrated His power over Satan by the liberation of the demoniac. He demonstrated His power over death by raising several from the dead including Lazarus who'd been buried for four days. Yes! We can fully and safely commit our lives and future to Him who has all power and who was mightily declared to be the Son of God by his resurrection from the dead! (Romans 1:4)



### **14. "Religion is just a 'crutch for the weak-minded?"**

This was a direct and forceful quote broadcast on TV by a former state governor of North

Dakota a while back. *Not true!* I'd invite him to consider the millions of courageous Christian martyrs who chose death rather than deny their faith over the last 2,000 years. Not long ago, ISIS murdered 124,000 Iraqi Christians who refused conversion to Islam.

And how about the *14 years torture* endured by Richard Wurmbrand? (Click [here](#).) Here's two scriptural rebuttals to this 'misinformation.' **First**, Christianity teaches we're all 'cripples' because we can never earn our way to Heaven. (Romans 3:23) The only way to Heaven is by receiving Jesus' unique sacrifice for our sins. (John 1:12) **Second**, Jesus' return from the dead and His appearances for 40 days afterwards 'declared with power' He was sent by God which makes Christianity unique! (Romans 1:4, Acts 1:3)

The real 'crutches' today are alcohol, drugs, and illicit sex. They're portrayed every day on TV, in the movies, and in other media as easy ways of coping with stress. However, rarely do they show the devastating long-term results. A recent TV broadcast stated that, on average, 66% of all crimes and a similar percentage of suicides were committed under the influence of alcohol or drugs.

### 15. Too many hypocrites in the church?

Agreed! Even one is too many. However, Jesus dealt with many hypocrites in His time and said there would always be a few because deceit is part of the evil nature core of man. *Hypocritical Christians do not disprove Christianity; they prove disobedient, or unconverted Christians!* God knows who they are and they will be severely punished. *However, you can't point your fingers at hypocrites and expect that to excuse your disobedience.* Four of your fingers point right back to you! (Hebrews 4:12.) Intellectuals: condemning all of a certain class based on only a few examples is called 'extrapolation' or 'generalization' and is one of the 63 fallacies of formal logic: the genetic fallacy, which incorrectly casts doubt on the source of belief based on behavior rather than evidence for or against the source.)

Be careful how you judge hypocrites. Some may still be early 'works in progress'. They may be at the beginning of their walk with Christ. *How about you, are you perfect?* God knows who the true hypocrites are and Scripture says they will be punished much more severely than even unrepentant sinners.

In my experience, some skeptics call all Christians hypocrites because they 'know' there's no God, therefore no one else truly believes in Him either. However, I feel most who reject Christ using the excuse of 'hypocrites' are only throwing up a smoke screen to hide their slavery to some sin. Why do crooks counterfeit money instead of paper bags? Because the money has real value. By the same token, hypocrites show that real, true, and faithful Christians must exist and have something of value worth counterfeiting! When you stand before God for final judgement, yelling about hypocrites won't help because without Christ, you'll be judged *and condemned* by your deeds and only your deeds, not theirs! (Hebrews 14:12, Romans 3:23)

During my four years in the Marines, most of the professing 'Christian' fellow Marines seemed to be hypocrites. However, Corporal Stevens stood out among the phonies as a real Christian by returning love for persecution. As a result, *eight years later* he became my first tangible evidence that there may be a real God after all. That encouraged me to begin searching for evidence there might be a real God.

I've found that those who hurl accusations of 'hypocrite' often do so for three reasons. **First**, some accusations of 'hypocrite' may be correct if they have actually seen bad behavior of a professing Christian over a long period of time. Just remember that after inviting Christ into their lives not everyone gets off the ground really fast like the old biplanes did. Some are like big jets that need a mile of runway to get airborne.

**Second**, some non-Christians, seeing imperfections in the lives of some Christians, believe *ALL Christians think they are good enough for Heaven* and are therefore self-righteous hypocrites. *(There are two types of Christians who actually do deserve the epithet 'self-righteous'. Some are still leading the same sinful lives as before but go to church. Others think they can 'earn their way to Heaven on the installment plan'.)* Most of the people who've accused me of being self-righteous believe they're already good enough for Heaven just as they are. This is the very definition of 'self-righteous'! So which of us is really self-righteous? The only people in Heaven will be those who know they're not good enough but trust in Jesus' sacrifice and God's grace. (Romans 3:23 Ephesians 2:8-9)

**Third**, some may be trying to hide from God by accusing others of being more sinful than they are. Ask yourself just how perfect you are. When you point the finger at others, remember you're pointing the rest back at yourself. Those who point fingers are kind of like a murderer saying, *"I'm a whole lot better than he is. I only murdered one person but he murdered five."* The bad behavior of others does not make you innocent. 'Finger-pointers' will get a BIG surprise when one day they stand before God who has said that they *will give account only for their own sins*. (Romans 14:12)

#### **16. 'Evolutionists may not have all the answers but 'they'll figure it out eventually'?**

This was the reply I got from a skeptic who could not answer a series of intelligent creation questions: *"And where did that come from?"* Looks to me like he was just waiting for more unproven speculation to justify his life without accountability to God.

*Darwin himself, in one sense, is also still waiting over ~160 years for evolutionists to 'figure out' why his proof of evolution has never been found. A missing link here and there does not prove evolution! Darwin's own proof is massive chains of millions, even billions of fossil series for each of the 8.7 million species of life. Not even one series has ever been found among 100 million fossils in museums around the world. Click [here](#) for the Cambrian era fossils which prove no evolution happened. More: 'The fossils still say NO to evolution' at this book citation. [38](#)*

'Figure it out?' I'll take scientific evidence instead, that proves evolution never happened. Click [here](#) for 22 scientific reasons evolution is mere speculation which eliminates the need for a God to whom we're accountable.

During the past ~160 years, more valid discoveries have been made disproving evolution than those asserting it. Among them are debunking a long string of 'missing links', from the 40-year deceit of the Piltdown Man, to the fake, fairly recent 'feathered dinosaur' from China. We may add key historical missing links, later repudiated, of Ardi, Lucy, and many others over decades. Having a few 'missing links' wouldn't prove evolution according to Darwin. He required enormous chains of fossil links showing gradual evolution over millions of years. He said he couldn't understand why they hadn't been found *in abundance*.

The skeptic above has enormous 'faith' in his nebulous 'they'll figure it out'. Further, he has foolishly entrusted his entire life and eternal future to *whether or not unknown scientists will finally prove what has already been disproven*. He will tremble before God one day when his life comes to an end, possibly suddenly, like the 40,000 who were killed by drunk drivers in 2016 or die during sleep. Scary! *I have infinitely less faith than you, skeptic friend. My faith, in a real God-creator, is based upon tangible scientific evidence, not 'hope so' feelings. Your 'faith' is a good example of the type many accuse Christians of, 'a blind-leap-off-a-cliff-in-the-dark' type faith.*

#### **17. What is 'sin' and why does it separate us from God?**

Sin is simply disobeying God. Though His laws are written in our conscience (Romans 2:15),

we eventually learn to either ignore them or justify our actions. Therefore God put them in writing in the Bible: *The Ten Commandments* found in Exodus 20, were delivered personally to Moses and the nation of Israel on fiery Mount Sinai amidst lightning and thundering. Most of us know, 'You shall not kill, you shall not steal, you shall not commit adultery, you shall not lie, etc.'

*However, when God sent Jesus, He extended those commandments to sinning in our thoughts plus sinning by what we should have done but didn't!* In Jesus' Sermon on the Mount in Matthew 5 - 7, all of us who think we're just as good as everyone else get a big surprise.

Just living our lives without a thought to God's laws breaks the very first commandment: 'to have no other gods before Him.' Hatred and lust violate His commands against murder and adultery. Several commandments have to do with sins against God Himself like the 'OMG' which breaks the second Commandment. Sadly, it now permeates our whole society. And who has never lied or exaggerated (yes, that's a lie also!) in their whole lives? *All of us have broken every single commandment repeatedly in thought or deed and we need the forgiveness which God provided in Jesus' sacrifice.* (Romans 3:23, Romans 5:8, Romans 6:23, Revelation 21:8)

As if that were not enough, who of us has always kept the **11<sup>th</sup> Commandment** given by Jesus in John 13:34: 'to love others (all the time) as Jesus has loved us.' He was willing to suffer agony on the cross to pay for our sins even for those who hated Him. Would you be willing to suffer agony for the rude, angry driver who shook his fist and swore at you?

#### **18. Is atheism a sin?**

It disobeys the first of God's 10 commandments to have no other God than He who created our universe. *Atheists are literally their own God* because they alone decide what is good or evil for themselves. This was exactly how the angel Lucifer became Satan. **You have thus become his 'puppet' and disciple.** (Isaiah 14:12-15)

#### **19. How can we be reconciled to God?**

Bible translators to the savage Auca in Ecuador could find no Auca words for 'reconciliation' or 'forgiveness'. The Auca only knew revenge, like most everyone without Christ. However, if on a trek through the jungle, they encountered a deep ravine they could not cross, they bridged the gap by cutting down (killing) a tree, selected to fall across the ravine. **Surprise! The Auca word for 'tree across ravine' was the word the translators used to describe Jesus' sacrifice which bridged the unfathomable gap across the ravine of sin, providing reconciliation with God through forgiveness!** (After most of the Auca came to Christ, they changed their name from Auca (savage) to Waorani (people). They were now God's people!



As God sent the Auca translators a unique way to convey His love through Christ, He's also continually sending ordinary Christians, missionaries, and even 'paper or electronic missionaries' to all countries of the world to give opportunity to be saved. Those who eventually go to hell are those who choose hell, of their own free will, by repeatedly rejecting the only way God has provided to stay out of hell: the suffering and love-sacrifice of Jesus Christ. (John 3:16, Romans 5:8)

When a doctor says you would die unless you took a well-tested drug, if you refused and then died, whose fault would that be? Yours! You don't need to understand how the medicine works or why or how someone created it. You only need to just take it or die.

## 20. How about a sin I committed only once long ago? Sins I don't commit anymore?

All sins are immediately recorded in God's book. Unless repented of and forgiven through Christ, they're still there and will be evidence at your judgement. That judgement is not to determine if you're guilty or not but to execute God's judgement in the furnace of fire depending on its severity. Unfair? If a cancer patient refuses a guaranteed cure, then dies, whose fault is that? (Revelation 20:11-14, 21:8)

## 21. Aren't all religions the same and eventually take us to the same place?

**Untrue and untrue!** 'Don't steal, don't lie, etc.' are innate in the conscience we are born with. Though most religions also teach this, you don't need a religion to tell you what your own conscience has already told you. It's 'written in our hearts' by our creator. (Romans 2:12-16) We would invite you to continue to the next question for a full answer.

## 22. Which is the right religion or church?

Back when I was an atheist searching for truth, I studied every religion I could find. They all seemed to fall into only three categories:

- a. **The true gospel:** [Jesus excluded all other religions by proving](#) He was the only one sent from God to be our sin sacrifice, providing the only way to God's Heaven and the only way to escape the eternal 'furnace of fire' He spoke of more often of hell than of Heaven. Jesus' proof was powerfully demonstrated by His resurrection from the dead on the third day. (Romans 1:4, John 14:6) (Click [here](#) for resurrection evidence.) No other religious founder returned from the dead after three days in the grave and then was seen over a period of 40 days afterwards. Neither was any other religious founder born of a virgin, deserving the title 'Son of God'. Over 300 fulfilled prophecies, describing myriads of details of Jesus' first coming, validate Him and the Bible as God's word. (Click [here](#) for more on prophetic evidence, including a math professor's astounding mathematical evidence.)

We have direct access to God through Jesus without earthly priests. (1 Timothy 2:5) God forgives both major and minor sins through Jesus' sacrifice. This is wholly through God's Grace. We cannot earn it, even partially, by good deeds or suffering in fire after death. (Ephesians 2:8,9, Hebrews 1:3) After our repentance, beginning to obey God is motivated by gratitude for our salvation, not to help us earn it on the installment plan. (2 Corinthians 5:14-21). Many main-line church denominations hold this central core of beliefs but differ in minor areas Some are called 'inter-denominational' but check out their Statement of Faith before joining.

- b. **False gospels taught by cults:** [Your good works must be added to Jesus' sacrifice.](#) (See the last paragraph of 'a'. above.) God's word in Galatians 1:9 has some very strong words against those to teach a gospel different from that which He delivered in 1 Corinthians 15. (see 'a.' above).

[Mormonism](#) teaches you must earn part of your salvation like all other cults. Unique is their baptism by proxy for dead relatives. They're unable to meet a previous requirement of repentance but Mormons are great at looking up genealogies! Also, if you meet their requirements and undergo special rituals in their temple, you may become a 'god' to rule your own world forever. [Jehovah's Witnesses](#) wrote their own Bible in the late 1800s after deciding everyone else had been wrong for 2,000 years. Besides earning part of their way to Heaven, no Hell (also no justice), and several failed predictions of the dates of the end of the world all prove they're false prophets.

There are other groups too numerous to mention but the 'test' is whether they teach

a different gospel that that which was delivered in 1 Corinthians 15. This citation has brief leaflets on some cult details as well as the teaching of some sound church denominations. <sup>89</sup>

- c. **'Earn your way' religions:** This is by far the largest group of religions in the world. Eastern religions earn their way to merit Nirvana, as they undergo many reincarnations on higher planes. Nirvana, is being swallowed up by the **'Cosmic Consciousness'** where *you, as an individual, no longer exist*. Paradise at last? Well, in a way. No more pain and anguish of seemingly endless lives from reincarnations, maybe a few as a rat or bug when you were bad. (Karma)

But Nirvana is just a form of 'spiritual suicide' where you and your unique personality disappear. Not only do the verses in 'a.' (above) also apply here, but Hebrews 9:27 excludes reincarnation: We 'die once, and after that the judgement'.

A huge, powerful world-wide religion believes their religion is true because it was delivered by a supposed 'angel'. If it contradicts the true gospel (1 Corinthians 15), then that 'angel' would be a spirit impersonator whose purpose is to lead us astray from God. It gained major significance as a world religion, beginning in the seventh century with their slogans, **'Death to idolaters!'** and **'Convert or die!'**

(Click [here](#) for Five Steps to Finding God is Real.)

### 23. Which is the right Bible translation?

Good question. There are many that are good because there is more than one way to convey the same basic thought using different words when translating from any language. There are also some bad translations full of false doctrine. Click [here](#) for details. This *Rose Publishing* pamphlet citation will give condensed general information for 20 of the most common acceptable ones, including how many translators for each, reading level, etc.. <sup>88</sup>

### 24. Who'd die for a known lie?

Many believers in many religions are willing to die for their belief. However, **who would be willing to be tortured and to die for what they knew was just a lie?** Hebrews 11:6 says that without faith it's impossible to please God and that true faith is based on facts, not on 'blind leaps'. *The central fact and foundation of the truth of Christianity is the bodily resurrection of Christ and His many appearances during 40 days afterwards.* This mightily sustained millions of martyrs worldwide during their suffering right up through this present hour. Click [here](#) to read about Richard Wurmbrand, tortured for his faith for 14 years. Also, a news broadcast not long ago reported ISIS had gone door-to-door killing 124,000 Christians who refused to 'convert'. Often they killed the children first to terrify the parents into 'conversion'.

### 25. Just choosing to ignore God, I believe, is the same as being a 'de-facto' atheist.

Just ignoring someone, according to radio's *Take a Minute's* Harold Sala, is the highest form of insult. <sup>88</sup> You may think that just ignoring God is not nearly as bad as being an out-and-out atheist. The end results are the same: an eternity in the furnace of fire that Jesus warned us about.

By your example you are also negatively influencing others to follow your godless lifestyle. **There is no neutral ground.** Though ostriches don't really stick their heads in the sand to ignore an attacking lion, as some people believe, yet those who ignore God are doing that very same thing. God will allow us to ignore Him for a time, but because He loves us, He will give some time to repent. He will not continue to ignore us indefinitely. God sometimes allows bad things to happen to get our attention. Sometimes this is necessary to remind us that we're not in control of our own lives as so many people think. Sometimes it takes a fire,

hurricane, flood, or other natural disaster to wake us up. Losing everything forces us to re-examine what's really important.

## 26. You may also really be a 'de-facto' atheist though you 'believe' in a 'god-creator'!

Following are a few types of people who create a false 'god' in their own imagination. Rejection of God's standards and the false hope of no future accountability is what they all have in common. Though believing in a 'god-creator' is a step in the right direction yet unless they eventually find Christ and have their sins forgiven, they will not see Heaven.

**First**, there are those who do believe God created our universe and He only lets good things happen. He 'winks' at sin because His standards of right and wrong are the same as theirs, so no big deal. They think Heaven is waiting because they're so much better than some of their friends. **Second**, are those who also believe God created but after that has nothing to do with them now, or in the future. Einstein, Spinoza, and the former notorious British atheist Dr. Antony Flew <sup>42</sup> are in this category. **Third** are 'theistic evolutionists' who believe their 'god' created our universe by evolution, then has nothing more to do with us.

Darwin invented this type of mythical 'god' by saying, 'let us suppose there was a power ...' to explain the unimaginable complexity of the human eye. A description of this 'power' could only be of a mythical god who 'oversaw' (directed) every step of evolution for every creature in around 8.7 million species over millions of years simultaneously. <sup>36C</sup> Dr. Francis Collins, who led the world-renowned team that sequenced the human genome, would be one high-profile exponent of theistic evolution today. He is widely accepted because he appears to 'straddle the fence', of evolution and biblical creation. Let's compare the two.

## 27. Couldn't God have used evolution to create our universe?

Theistic evolution directly contradicts the Bible's Genesis account in many ways.

- a. BIBLE: Man was created instantly from the dust of the earth.  
EVOLUTION: Man accidentally evolved from lower life-forms.  
Where did they come from? No scientifically proven answer.
- b. BIBLE: There was *no death* until after Adam and Eve sinned.  
EVOLUTION: Countless life-death-life cycles right from the accidental beginning of life.
- c. BIBLE: The first life was created by God.  
EVOLUTION: The first life evolved accidentally in primordial slime or hot vents in the ocean floor. Who made those chemicals? Who orchestrated life from them?
- d. BIBLE: The now proven *law of biogenesis declares* that life can only come from life and that all life reproduces only 'after its own kind'. No cross-species evolution.  
EVOLUTION: All life evolved randomly from chemicals that evolved into the 8.7 million different life-forms we have today, each type evolving from a predecessor. (And where did the chemicals come from? From speculation, not science.)
- e. BIBLE: God created every person with a purpose in life to help fulfill His eternal plans.  
EVOLUTION: We have no ultimate purpose beyond our own appetites since we are only accidentally evolved animals. We're 'free' to do as we please, limited only by the likelihood of getting caught and punished by law enforcement.
- f. BIBLE: Future eternal life of happiness in Heaven or eternal suffering in the 'non-air-conditioned place'.  
EVOLUTION: No ultimate accountability for secret sins. *Results: Two million men in prison, venereal diseases, AIDS, broken homes and lives from an ever-growing flood of divorces, etc. (British atheist, Richard Dawkins, put this 'recipe for disaster' on London busses: "There's probably no God. Now stop worrying and enjoy your life." <sup>77</sup>)*

More on the Bible. It's proven itself the true Word of God over the last several thousand



years in at least four ways: **prophecies fulfilled, archeological discoveries, lives transformed,** and the **martyrdom** of those who chose death rather than renouncing the truth written in Scripture. *Through the centuries, this willingness to die rather than deny God's truth continues to lengthen the long chain of spiritual 'forensic evidence' right back to Jesus' day.* Recently, a newscast reported 124,000 Christians were martyred in Iraq. ISIS went door-to-door slaughtering any children who confessed Christ or refused to become Muslims – right in front of their parents. All these children are now in the arms of Jesus while their murderers, though evil, are given perhaps another chance to repent before they're finally held accountable. Such is God's love and grace. Pray these murderers will come to Christ for forgiveness.

Now, let's take a closer look at evolution. Not one example has ever been found of a single series of uninterrupted fossil evidence which Darwin said would absolutely prove evolution. Neither has evolution ever been demonstrated in the lab as illustrated by the 71-year evolutionary experiments on fruit flies. (Click [here](#)) **Yet after all this, theistic evolutionists say God used evolution. Their 'God' is really Darwin's mythical 'god', the mysterious 'power' that guided all evolution simultaneously for millions of different species for millions of years.** <sup>36C</sup> Does God's commandment, **'You shall have no other 'gods' before Me'** ring a bell? Do evolution and the Bible really tell the same story? Find more answers at this link:

<http://www.creationmoments.com/radio/transcripts/could-creation-and-evolution-be-telling-same-story-0>.

## 28. Isn't just believing in God enough to get to Heaven?

Even Satan and his demons believe in God but he's going the other direction! (James 2:19) Only those who realize they're sinners, who have repented, and received Jesus as their savior will be in Heaven. Jesus himself excluded every other way to heaven by rising from the dead on the third day. (John 1:12, John 14:6) Click [here](#) for more.

## 29. Isn't 'religion' the cause of most wars?

**a. NO!** Of the 1,000+ wars recorded in all of world history, only 8% were truly about religion. The rest were political wars that often used religion to justify their aggression. You'll find the documentation going back to 1618 in Peter Hitchens' book. <sup>83</sup>

Dr. Frank Turek found only seven percent in the **Encyclopedia of War**. Islam was responsible for four percent of all wars, over half of the wars genuinely about religion.

**b. Don't include true New Testament Christianity in your list of 'religions!'**

Religions are man's ideas to reach God, or some 'happy hereafter' through ethics, rituals, or philosophies. Instead, Christianity is God Himself reaching down to man through His Son Jesus Christ, who was incarnated as a man, to teach us about God His father. Because He loves us, God then offered His Son as the only acceptable sacrifice for our sins, thus making the only way to Heaven for us. (John 14:6)

(Seen on church message board: *Famous last words: "I did it MY way!"* Sad.)

How do we know this is true? Jesus' resurrection from the dead validated all His teaching was from God and was witnessed by a multitude of people besides His disciples. (Acts 1) Click [here](#) for evidence of the resurrection. Multitudes of lives transformed through the centuries testify that Christianity is unique and should not be included in a list of mere 'man-conceived' religions.

New Testament Christianity teaches love and peace, not the 'convert or die' of some radical religions I could name. Christians who start wars in the name of Christ are hypocrites and will incur God's extreme wrath in the life to come, also often in this life.

**c. Hiding behind 'religion' won't 'fly'. God sees through your flimsy excuse. Come to Jesus!** He's *'the way, the truth, and the life; no one comes to God except through Him'*

because Jesus' sacrifice for our sins is the only one God has said He will accept.  
(John 14:6)

- 30. Are you holding a grudge? I have 'good news and bad news'** in this 'joke with a lesson'. "Doctor, I'm dying. Everything I touch hurts: head, chest, arms, legs, etc."  
After exam: "I have good news and bad news. **Good news:** you're not dying."  
**Bad news:** you have a broken finger. Naturally everything you touch hurts!"

*1001 Illustrations that Connect*, —C. Larson

**The lesson:** An unforgiven hurt can make every aspect of your life miserable. Nelson Mandela, the South African freedom crusader, was asked if he still harbored anger against his mistreatment during his many years of unjust imprisonment. "No," he replied, "Otherwise I'd just be in another kind of prison." The 'bars' of this prison are bitterness, self-pity, anger, plotting revenge, but NO PEACE.

To have peace, we must first yield our life to Jesus and let Him forgive our sins. Then He asks us to forgive others as He has forgiven us. (Ephesians 4:32) Naturally if a crime had been committed, the police should be called and justice administered. However, God still asks you to forgive him on a person-to-person level which I have also seen Christian victims do from time to time on TV newscasts. Often prison is where many criminals find Christ as we've seen in Chuck Colson's ministry. <sup>2</sup>

- 31. How can there be one God but in three persons simultaneously?**

The Holy trinity is one God: the Father, the Son (Jesus), and the Holy Spirit, all at the same time. No, I don't understand it either. He's God, I'm not. *But I don't have to understand that to get to Heaven.* For now, the way I partially understand it is that the same man can be an engineer, a father, and a golfer all at the same time. For now I'll trust Him a bit longer until I finally get my answer from Him one day.

- 32. God didn't answer my prayers so He doesn't love me or doesn't even exist?**

No! If you are truly 'delighting in the Lord' He promises to give you the desires of your heart. (Psalm 37:4-7) However, they must not contradict His long-range plans for you or for others, which you cannot know. The answers may also depend upon other conditions or events, also unknown to you, and He has a perfect time which could be years from now. 'Delighting in the Lord' also means trusting that He knows best, even in trials and suffering. (Romans 8:28) Click [here](#) for more, including God's three types of answers to all prayers.

- 33. Why should we pray? God already knows our needs.**

Do you see God, majestic Creator of our universe who one day will be our judge, as primarily your personal servant instead of vice versa? Is this perhaps just a smokescreen to hide from or just ignore God to live your life your way? How could we sing the old hymn, *What a Friend we have in Jesus*, when we never talk to Him?

Psalm 145:15 says, 'the Lord will be near to all who call upon Him'. The converse is also true: If you don't talk to God He will always be distant, even enough to be, practically speaking, out of your life! In adversity, prayer shifts the focus from your hurts to the One who can help, in His way and in His time of course; it's one of the purposes of adversity.

Don't be like the cold, unfeeling husband who broke his wife's heart by saying:

"I told you 25 years ago I loved you. If that changes, I'll let you know."

God will never be a true, loving friend to you unless you speak with Him every day.

Click [here](#) for an outline at *How to Pray and also How NOT to Pray*.

- 34. Does our calendar offer historical evidence for a real Jesus?** Click [here](#).

- 35. How can Jesus be God's Son? Isn't that blasphemous?**

This is a belief of major religion who cannot see beyond human powers. Jesus is called

both 'the Son of God' and the 'son of Man' because he was both. A couple's mature son is often sent on a mission as his father's representative.

So it was with God. Jesus existed in eternity with God who sent him to earth on a divine mission to redeem mankind from sin. It was easy for God to cause the virgin Mary to bring Jesus into our world. After all, He had created all life from nothing. It was an 'incarnation', not a natural conception. Jesus' miraculous virgin birth was a sign to show the world this was a fulfillment of God's prophecy of Isaiah 7:14 so the world would know Jesus was sent from God. (John 1:1-14)

### 36. How can we 'love' God who is a Spirit?

Loving God is shown by our obedience. Jesus said: 'If you love me, keep my comandments and my Father and I will love you and abide with you!' (John 14:15 and 23)

\*\*\*\*\*

### **Author's Fast Track Testimony: Six Questions Light my Way from Atheism to Christ!**

Click [here](#) to read a short poem (forward/backward!) about my former atheism?

#### 1. Isn't God only for kids and deluded old people?

That was my 'step into atheism' at age 15 in spite of being raised by a godly mother. I wanted to be somebody important. Four years in the Marines worked for a while.

#### 2. Success as a radar field engineer with a Navy fighter squadron! *I was really somebody, or was I?*

After an air-to-air missile shoot, our squadron, including myself, got a Letter of Commendation from the U.S. Naval Bureau of Weapons. I then received more commendations from the squadron skipper and the manager of Raytheon, my parent company. ([More](#))



#### 3. An empty, pointless life ahead, booze didn't help, suicide ahead, what to do?

After nearly a year searching for life's meaning in philosophy and intensive study of non-Christian religions, I found only opinions. Booze helped deaden the pain of a pointless existence but only for a time. Suicide was my next step.

Then I remembered Marine Corporal Stevens from eight years before, while I was in the Marines. I saw a real God in his life as he was persecuted but showed a loving Jesus-like spirit in return. So I decided to see if science could support the idea of a God. After exposing the fake science behind evolution ([More](#)), I spent three more months studying the incredible intelligence behind our universe, evident in astronomy, mathematics, physics, etc. ([More](#))

The result? It strongly demonstrated it was highly 'probable' God existed. *Just as the existence of your house proves there had to have been intelligent designers and builders. The fantastic intelligent design evident in the existence of our universe is powerful evidence of an intelligent designer and builder.* However, I couldn't get any further than 'probable.' How could I be sure? I took my notebook of questions and seeming contradictions to church, my first visit in 11 years. After getting nearly run over the parking lot (by my future wife) I cornered the pastor after every service. He did answer some questions but not all of them.

#### 4. What evidence did I find proving the Bible is God's word?

For me, fulfilled biblical prophecy was a major evidence, especially of the 300 details of Jesus' coming. The exact time He would present Himself as the promised Messiah was predicted to an accuracy of within two days, 445 years in advance! NASA confirmed this time interval which was measured between recorded historical events. Could you, with

100% accuracy, guess 300 things about the next person coming around a corner on a busy street hundreds of years later? How about 50? Fifty details were prophesied and fulfilled during Jesus' crucifixion and resurrection. Only God could've done that. ([More](#))

Many prophecies of Jesus' coming were found in the ancient *Dead Sea Scrolls* ([More](#)) which match Scriptures in our modern Bible! Phonies? No, those scrolls were scientifically confirmed by radiocarbon 14 dating to have been written *at least one or two centuries BEFORE the events occurred*. Only God can predict future non-scientific events with that much certainty. And why did millions of early Christians choose death, torture, and even a gruesome death devoured by wild beasts in public arenas over nearly three centuries at the hands of 10 Roman emperors? They could've saved themselves by simply denying Jesus' resurrection and offering a pinch of incense to the pagan Roman gods. Who would die for a known lie? Millions of other Christian martyrs worldwide continue through the centuries to affirm the truth of the Bible that God's Holy Spirit has revealed to them! ([Click: Evidence Bible is God's Word](#))

### **5. Who is Jesus to say He's the only one sent from Heaven with God's message?**

I spent more time researching this than any other question. Many religions assert a prophet or some set of rituals or some supernatural revelation which is the doorway to eternal happiness. Is Jesus unique as the only prophet to have returned from the dead?

Eye-witnesses reported that He raised the dead (Lazarus), healed the sick, and made the blind to see. However, since Satan can also counterfeit these, Jesus' was *powerfully declared to have brought God's message by His resurrection from the dead* on the third day. This was followed by 40 days showing Himself alive afterwards, on one occasion to 500 in Galilee before returning to Heaven. (Romans 1:4 and Acts 1:3)

(Click: [Resurrection Evidence](#)) *What was Jesus' message to us from God? That He loved us to much, He sent His only Son to pay for our sins to open the way to Heaven for us. (John 3:16 and 14:6)*

In Jesus' Sermon on the Mount in Matthew 5, 6, and 7 He made clear we can disobey God (sin) in thought as well as deed: hatred=murder, lust=adultery, and just leaving God out of your life violates one of God's most important commandments: to have no other god before Him. (Leaving God out means you are your own god.)

### **6. how did I go from '99% probable there may be a God' to 'God is real?'**

Blaise Pascal was right so many centuries ago when he said, "There is an empty place in the heart of every man which can only be filled by Jesus Christ." I prayed directly to God Himself! "God if you're real, I want to know. If You show me, I'm a man of integrity and will follow the truth, no matter where it leads. ([Jeremiah 29:13](#)) But right now, I'm honestly not willing to do that so I'm going to have to ask you to help me become willing!"

I'd always thought that **if** it turned out there was a real God, Heaven, and hell, that I'd wait until I was on my deathbed and after enjoying a lifetime of sin, to gasp out my last prayer for mercy and slip into Heaven. After all, I was just as good as most everyone else and a lot better than some others, including a fellow engineer who bragged about raping a girl on a dark bridge while drunk. I'd never done that nor murdered anyone. Why, I didn't feel I was evil enough for Hell. How dare anyone tell me I was not good enough for Heaven (if it existed)! Certainly my good deeds outnumbered the bad ones! Whoops! Two problems here.

**Surprise!** God says He will not judge us by how good we think we are, compared to others, our church attendance, or how hard we try to be good. I felt I was a really good

guy, better than most. However, God will judge us according to the *perfect righteousness of Jesus Christ*. (Acts 17:31) Was I OK? No! Think you're OK? Who among us has never profaned God's name by using it to make what we say more powerful, like OMG for instance? **Who has never ever lied, lusted, cheated or stolen?** In addition to those deeds, I was terrified to read in Matthew 5, 6, and 7 that we can break all of God's Ten Commandments in thought alone, *without actually committing the act!*

**WHOOPS!** Also, was I surprised to learn there are really 11 Commandments! In John 13:34, Jesus Himself handed down this 11<sup>th</sup> commandment: "Love one another as I have loved you." Wow, who has ever measured up to that standard their whole life? We're all sinners by both nature and behavior. Therefore we all fall short of God's standard and cannot hope for Heaven based on our efforts. Do you think because God is love, He will just overlook our human weaknesses? Romans 3:23, 6:23, Luke 16:19-31, and Revelation 21:8-9 are all His emphatic No! However, God loved us enough to send Jesus as the only sin sacrifice for us to make the way to Heaven possible. (Romans 5:8 and John 3:16)

**What if I were one** of the thousands who die every year with no warning or time to repent and turn to God? **40,000 people were killed by drunk drivers, suddenly and unexpectedly, in only one year, many through no fault of their own.** (Scott Pelley, CBS News) Scripture teaches that everyone already has eternal life, either in Heaven or what Jesus called the 'furnace of fire' of everlasting torment, hell. There is no other alternative in spite of some religions' soothing but false teachings which contradict Scripture. Time for me to wake up! (Matthew 13:50)

**God became absolutely real** when God's Holy Spirit convinced me I'd disobeyed Him (sinned) and needed forgiveness. I then invited Jesus into my heart and life, then did an 'about face' to begin following (obeying) Him. **First step:** I no longer needed my 'booze crutch' to cope with life. **Second step:** My bad language now seemed wrong, offensive to God and therefore ungrateful after what He saved me from. I didn't need to swear, profane God's name, or lie to make my conversation more important.

**Motivated by gratitude, my life did an about-face to begin following (obeying) Him. I'd been Satan's puppet,** controlled by my ungodly desires for prestige, money, pleasure, etc. But Jesus cut those strings and I was now free! No, I didn't become perfect. After over 56 years, I'm still not perfect. But the direction of my life is now guided by God's teaching in Scripture. When we fall, He has provided forgiveness. (1 John 1:9) He encourages us to get back up so He may continue the work He has begun in us. (Philippians 1:6) My mom was ecstatic that God had kept after me for the 11 years it took for Him to draw me to Himself — surprisingly by granting me success as an engineer. **(More)**



**If you're a parent,** we want you to know that if your children have strayed from the Lord, as I had, He will lovingly pursue them as He did me. Proverbs 22:6 promises that if you train up a child in the way he should go, when he is old he will not depart from it. In between those two points God will continually pursue your child to draw him to Himself. Because of this, God's love is sometimes called: 'The Hound of Heaven'!



John P., son of missionary parents, had a secret sinful life. His parents learned the Lord had never given up on him. He repented just before dying of AIDS at age 31. Do you have wayward children? Don't give up, the Lord will continue to pursue them to the end. Write us for a free copy of 'Man in the Mirror'. **FF**

### What next?

**My 'day job' in field engineering was no longer the center of my life's purpose. Knowing that God, Heaven, and the eternal lake of fire (Jesus called hell) were all real, I was constrained to share Christ with my relatives, friends, neighbors, or even strangers. (II Corinthians 5:14-21) Because of long and uncertain hours, I could only rarely attend church I needed to grow in the Lord. So I resigned my engineering position with the Navy.**

My life took on new and satisfying meaning as I delighted in pointing others to Heaven by sharing Christ's message. As a child of God I could now have unshakeable joy in any situation, even bad ones, based on His promise in Romans 8:28: whatever happened, that was not of my own doing, was part of God's long-range eternal plan for my life. After 56 years, I'm not yet perfect but I'm still striving to be all that Christ wants me to be, guided mainly by the books of Ephesians, Colossians, and 1 and 2 Timothy. More? Click: [How to Mature in Christ](#). ***The power of God's promises enable a committed Christian to rest confidently in adversity and to proclaim boldly Christ's message of eternal love. (Isaiah 26:3-4, 2 Timothy 1:7-9)***



**Life is just a stepping-stone.**

**A pause before we  
make it home.**

**Our final destination is a place**

**Filled with God's love, His majesty,  
and His grace!**



Butterfly stepping stones so wonderfully portray the Christian's liberation from life's dark, restrictive, and temporary cocoon to free flight towards a bright eternal future with God!

\*\*\*\*\*

### **APPENDIX B: Answers to Hard Questions**

**Why Would a 'Good' God Throw] Good People into Hell?  
Not Destroy Evil? Not Stop Suffering? Allow Natural Disasters?  
Where Was God? Forgiveness! Claiming God's Promises  
Guaranteed answers to all your 'Why God? questions'.**

**Reminder:** Left-click on [bold blue underlined text](#) to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, and press ← (not <).

**NOTE: You'll find more questions in the 'Why God ...' category in Appendix A.  
If you have not already examined them, click [MORE SKEPTIC'S QUESTIONS ANSWERED](#).**

-----  
**How Could a 'Good' God Throw Anyone Into Hell?**

**For the same basic reasons a 'good' judge would throw offenders into prison:**

- 1. Justice demands retribution** for breaking the law which was established for the good of society. For instance, 'you shall not steal, you shall not kill.' (Where did I hear that before? Oh, God's Ten Commandments!
- 2. Justice is a deterrent** that discourages others from breaking the law. But not, of course, the 2+ million 'geniuses' currently in prison who thought they were too smart to get caught.
- 3. Because earthly justice is imperfect**, only God makes the 'punishment truly fit the crime.' A few years in prison with free room and board, TV, even college courses, is no consolation to the mother of a raped and murdered child. Our earthly justice is too often imperfect! Too

often, the 'punishment doesn't fit the crime'.

Some prime examples are serial killers, especially those who delight in torture and rape, like Richard Ramirez, the Night Stalker, and the BTK killer (Bind Torture Kill). And how about Hitler, Stalin, Pol Pot who had millions murdered? As a former atheist, the lack of true justice on earth was one of the things that demanded a just God who could make 'the punishment fit the crime.' He will do this at the last judgement.

4. [Most of us feel we aren't evil enough to deserve hell](#) but none of us are quite good enough for Heaven either. A loving God has the solution. It's possible to [KNOW we have eternal life with God one day.](#) (1 John 5:13) How? Click [here](#) for 'How Good Must I Be?' and [here](#) for 'Why Should We even Care about God'. As you begin to feel God's love for you, your life will be filled with joy, purpose, and courage for the future.

### **Why Doesn't God Destroy All Evil Now?**

1. [God's love and mercy](#) constrain Him to grant more time for even the most evil people and nations to repent. 1 Peter 3:9 says, "[The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.](#)" God's promise to end all evil is assured one day in Psalm 9:17 and Revelation, chapters 19-21.
2. [God allows evil to test Christians](#) to determine if their faith is real. (1 Peter 1:7: 'faith tried with fire') When everything goes well for Christians, not even they know for sure if their faith is real until it is tested. *If they pass the test, they are strengthened, Satan is defeated, God is glorified, and the unsaved sit up and take notice.* The latter would show that God is real in the life of the persecuted Christian. *Though it took eight years to 'sink in',* my first step out of atheism into a wonderful life in Christ, was when a persecuted fellow Marine, Corporal Stevens, returned God's love for vicious persecution at Camp Pendleton! (*To know more, you may click on [Author's Fast Track Testimony](#) or [2. The Flight.](#)*)
3. [God has the right to establish His Moral Law](#) for mankind for two reasons. Because He is the Creator of our universe and knows what behavior will make us happy in the long run. Drunkenness, lust, fornication, adultery, lying, stealing, and even murder are real fun for some people but it eventually causes horrible suffering later on, both for the sinner and always for many others. Our divorce courts and prisons are full of examples of those who thought they were too smart to get caught.

God is like a two-sided coin: *a God of love on one side and a God of justice on the other.* He could not be a loving God if he did not punish evil. Otherwise that would make Him evil.

### **How about those who've never heard of God and Jesus?**

[God is continuously commanding and sending](#) missionaries every day all over the world to take the gospel to them. (Matthew 28:19-20) He made everyone with a conscience to hear His voice if they wish. To refuse God's invitation to come to Jesus is the equivalent of a cancer patient refusing the only cure that can save him.

### **Why destruction or even death from natural disasters?**

1. [For those who know and love Christ](#), it may be a *trial to strengthen their faith*, being reminded that this life and its possessions here on earth are only temporary, and to help equip them to better minister to those who don't know Him. If they die, it was God's time to call them 'home'. *Backslidden Christians* would get a 'wake-up' call, "[Time to get right with God!](#)" However bad, from a Heavenly point of view, disasters are also part of God's long-range eternal plan based on His promise of Romans 8:28 that '[all things work together for good to them that love God](#)'. One of those is that this group, by remaining steadfast in their

faith, can be examples to and even minister to those who don't know Christ and His salvation.

2. For those who do not know Christ, disaster can also be a 'Romans 8:28' for their good. God shows His love to them by sending a *wake-up call* they need to prepare to face death without warning, followed by God's judgement. Loss of everything they own would also help some to realize earthly possessions and self importance are never permanent and that they should 'lay up for themselves treasures in Heaven' instead as Jesus exhorts us. Many will meet disaster recovery workers who will come because they want to show God's love and some may even delight in sharing Christ.

**John Newton** was a former drunken, brawling atheistic, 18<sup>th</sup> century slave trader. He realized there was a God after all when he saw God's power and majesty while being tossed about at sea by the most violent storm he'd ever seen. He repented, became a pastor, evangelist, and hymn writer, writing the most widely known hymn ever written, *Amazing Grace!* Later, with Wilberforce, his witness was a major factor in helping persuade England to stop their evil slave trade.

### **It's OK to hate the 'god' you think let you down!**

The mere mention of 'God' throws some people into a frenzy of anger. If you meet one, tell them, "*Good news! It's OK to hate that 'god'; I would too! But that god does not exist!*"

The real God's long-range loving care for us behind the scenes was illustrated by this great story I heard on Harold Sala's BBN radio program, *Guidelines*. (<https://bbn1.bbnradio.org/>) *A man had compassion on an ant so dropped him a bread crumb. The ant ran, terrified. The man got down and repeatedly blocked the ant's path until the ant finally realized this giant terrifying man had been directing him to something good: nourishing food!* Sometimes, God uses unpleasant 'road blocks' to direct us down His path to something good for us or for others.

In **Chapter 6**, you'll read of several of these unpleasant 'road blocks' (including losing two jobs) which God put before us. But they eventually directed us into our wonderfully satisfying mission career of 52+ years! You'll find in this appendix some who were 'directed' by God through suffering. In **Appendix C**, you'll read how unpleasant 'road blocks', even by evil people, directed a number of others into the wonderful life-path God had prepared for them.

God did not let them down during these trials. He was redirecting them according to His loving promise of Romans 8:28! He will tell us all about it in Heaven one day; then we'll understand.

*He knows the future, we don't. He's God. We're not.* Heaven one day! What could possibly be better than that? So thank You Lord for this trial: "In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you." (1 Thessalonians 5:18)

### **Bullying and Bargaining with God**

**Some try to 'bully God'** into doing something for them with, "If You loved me, you'd ..." How selfish! Their love for God is directly proportional to what God can do for them, not vice versa. When God doesn't respond, they angrily turn against Him, convinced He doesn't care. They may have angry outbursts at even the mere mention of His name. Others, not caring that God may have His own plans, are '**one way bargainers**': "If You do this for me, then I'll do that for You!" The height of arrogance! I've met a few ex-Christians of both these types.

It's not uncommon for even true Christians to waver for a short time after a great loss but they eventually bounce back. Those who never recover did not know the real God who is absolutely sovereign and has a long-range plan for our suffering as I've just shared.

### **"Why did God let me make that bad choice?"**

Pastor Lehman Stauss had counselled a young woman to not marry an unbeliever. When it soon



ended in divorce, the woman shifted the blame to God. God would've probably answered her question something like this, "You are not my robot. I gave you a free choice. Blame only yourself."

### Why Would a 'Good' God Allow Suffering?

A young boy, passing by a church, asked a stone mason why a loving God would permit suffering. The stone mason replied, "See that hole up there near the steeple? I'm fitting this stone down here so that one day it will fit in up there."



Suffering makes most of us ask, "Why God?" I shall endeavor to show that for those who love God, every suffering helps shape us to fit into God's overall plan for us or for others. *Our guarantee? God's promise of Romans 8:28!* Because God loves even those who ignore, defy, or even hate Him, sometimes sending suffering is the only way God can bring them to the end of themselves and get them to look heavenward That was true in my case, as you may have read, when an empty life drove me to the brink of suicide.

**Clay or wax?** People react to suffering or adversity in different ways like clay or wax. Placed in the sun, **clay** becomes rock-hard but brittle. These represent people who are driven to blame and even hate God during adversity. (Click [here](#) for the testimony of a former Bible-burning God-hater and how he found the truth.) Others, like **wax**, become softer and more pliable when warmed by the sun. They are drawn closer to Him as they are reminded they are not in control of their destiny but are dependent upon God's help and comfort in adversity. They trust He has a long-term purpose for their trials. Whether one is clay or wax depends upon which god/God they were following: a 'god' of their own creation or the true living God.

**'Wax'** types found that God really did care, feels their pain, and even has a long-range plan for their eventual good and that of others, in spite of suffering according to His wonderful promise in Romans 8:28. Any guarantee for that promise? YES! GUARANTEED in this life by the fulfillment of the 700+ year-old prophecy in Isaiah 53 of Jesus' resurrection from the dead which powerfully declared Him to have come directly from God! (Romans 1:4) Guaranteed in the next life because God Himself will show you precisely how He worked out His plan for your good and or for the good of others.

Overwhelming additional evidence include his many miracles, his post-resurrection appearances over a period of 40 days and to over 500 eyewitnesses! Fulfillment of Jesus' prophecies of the utter destruction of the magnificent temple in Jerusalem and scattering Israel to the four winds add more credibility. What other religious leader returned from the dead and which of them prophesied He would return from the dead after three days in the grave? NONE! ([More](#))

Jesus reminds us that He does love us and He does care: "Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." (Matthew 11:28) Also, 1 Peter 5:7 encourages us with: "... casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you!" I love the old gospel song, *Farther Along: 'Farther along we'll understand why, cheer up my brother, live in the sunshine, we'll understand it, all bye and bye!'* – when we see Jesus! **How can we know that?** God promises it in Romans 8:28. I like the Gaither version with Russ Taff. You'll see some tears of gratitude in close-ups of some of these folks who've truly experienced Jesus' comfort. Just let it run and you'll experience more fantastic, encouraging numbers by the Gaithers, including *The Unclouded Day, I'll meet you in the Morning, and O The Glory did Roll at this site.*

<https://www.bing.com/videos/search?q=further+along%2c+gaithers&view=detail&mid=A01DE8787885C4952348A01DE8787885C4952348&FORM=VIRE>



God's main task is not to keep everyone perpetually happy as many people believe! He is not our 'bluebird of perpetual happiness'. His ultimate objective is to continually perfect our character so we become more like Christ, thereby drawing others to Himself. Comforted by the 'God of all comfort,' we are then better equipped to minister more effectively. (2 Corinthians 1:4)

By personal experience I have also found that when all goes well for too long, I, like perhaps most people, tend to drift away from God. I've learned that any adversity that drives us to our knees pulls us back towards God and helps our faith grow so we're more prepared to help others.

Pastor Scott Vail expressed this so well when he said, "[The view from the mountain peak may be exhilarating but nothing grows up there.](#)" Spiritual growth occurs only when our faith is stretched beyond what seems comfortable and sometimes it reveals we do not have real faith in the real God at all but in a 'god' of our own fantasy. Suffering can redirect us to the true God where we find help and comfort.

Our trials are not just haphazard events like the 'red-neck philosopher's' pickup truck: "[Sometimes you're the windshield, sometimes you're the bug.](#)" God has a 'blueprint' for every life, and He has planned how each life relates to so many others, no matter how short or how long, from babies to oldsters. (Psalm 139)

Before we get too deeply into suffering in general, the burden of seeing our own child suffer is often greater than our own. These books by Lynda T. Young, nationally known author and speaker, can be of considerable help: ***Hope for Families of Children with Cancer*** <sup>GG</sup> and ***Hope for Families with Children on the Autistic Spectrum***. <sup>HH</sup> Both are part of the very supportive *YOU ARE NOT ALONE* book series.

### WHERE WAS GOD?

In John 11, we read that when Martha and Mary's brother Lazarus was about to die, they summoned Jesus. However, He delayed coming until Lazarus had been dead for four days. When Jesus did arrive, Martha knelt at His feet but her faith had gone cold. Like so many others, she felt that Jesus just didn't care and had let her down. She accusingly asked the accusatory 'Where was God?' question in John 11:21, "[Lord, if You had been here, my brother would not have died.](#)" Jesus felt her pain and He wept with her. His answer: "[I am the resurrection and the life!](#)" He demonstrated that when he raised Lazarus from the dead and that's why we can also trust Him with our lives and eternal future.

We also don't often see the reasons behind the suffering God permits. But in the case of Lazarus, it is both clear and encouraging. *Allowing Lazarus to die meant Jesus could then raise him from the dead, an enormously more amazing miracle than only healing!* As a result, so many believed in Jesus as their Messiah (*and were now Heaven bound!*) that the Jewish authorities began to plot His crucifixion!

Disaster? No! Jesus' death would be God's sacrifice to provide forgiveness of sin for the whole world and declaring with power, He had brought God's message that we too may live with Him in Heaven one day! Jesus had delayed coming to heal Lazarus to work out much larger plans!

Not long after my 80<sup>th</sup> birthday, like Martha and Mary above, I was frustrated by a delay in revising this book by a trip to emergency with acute heart failure. When told I must spend a day or two in care, I was angry that my



plans screamed to a halt.

Recalling the '*Delays Are Not Denials*' article I had read the previous evening, I was reminded that God's long-range plans transcend our immediate ones. <sup>cc</sup> As a result of this ordeal, I had wonderful opportunities to share the love of Christ personally, quite at length, with my ambulance paramedic (see picture), a nurse, a doctor, and others, *all God's 'captive audiences'*. Perhaps we'll meet some of them in Heaven one day! What could possibly be better than that? So thanks Lord for this delay You had planned: "In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you." (1 Thessalonians 5:18)

Here's what God might say to three broad categories of those who ask 'Where was God?'

1. To those who have been truly following Jesus, He might say, "I already know where you are. You're still my child but are still in shock from that unexpected, traumatic event that seemed to bring your entire world crashing down. I did not fail you. I do care and I do love you. *I'm where I've always been, working out My long-range plans for you and that that may touch a lot of other lives as well. Trust Me just a little longer. Stand on My promise of Romans 8:28. One day, I'll show you all the details. For now they're far beyond what you could understand.*"
2. To war and crime victims who are angry and hurt, God might say, "Where was I? Weeping that humans I had created with a free will choose to do evil instead of good. In spite of that, they will not frustrate My long-range plans. Read the last book of the Bible!" You may be interested in reading a review at this citation for ***Rage Against God*** <sup>83</sup> by Bible-burning, former atheist, Peter Hitchens. Billy Graham's answer to why God allows evil was recently posted on Face Book: "Why are there so many dirty people in the world? Christianity, like soap, must be accepted and applied!" (condensed)
3. To those who hope to escape eternal accountability based on accusing God of being weak, incompetent, or even wicked for not stopping all evil in the world, His answer might be something like this. "I created mankind to love and to love me. Robots cannot love so I gave all mankind total freedom of will to choose to do evil or good. At the same time, I wrote my glory in creation so you're without excuse to not believe in me.

I also provided guidance through a conscience. I love you so much, I sent my own Son to suffer for your sins. Receive Him, repent, and follow Him. You can then expect a future of eternal joy one day." (Psalm 16:11) Just as a cancer patient who refuses to follow the doctor's treatment will die, refusing Christ allows the cancer of evil to devour lives, then inevitably drags souls to a living death for an eternity in what Jesus calls, the lake of fire. If you reject God because He permits evil, click [Appendix C](#) for much more.

### **AGAIN, WHERE WAS GOD?**

**The Day Every Thing Went Wrong.** Rouene, one of our long-term faithful ministry partners, sent us this anonymous story of a man who overslept and his car wouldn't start, so he was late to work. At lunch, a new waitress messed up his order and after a long hard day, his new foot massager wouldn't work. He asked, "Why God?" Here's what he learned later.

Being late to work saved him from a crash with a drunk driver! His regular waitress was home sick with a disease that he didn't get. His new foot massager was defective and could have electrocuted him. This may not have been an actual case, yet *we cannot know (yet) the countless times that God orders events we think are bad but which are, in reality, examples of His protection.* He shows He loves and cares for us and is watching over our lives, though unseen, and in ways we don't even know about! (Romans 8:28) Here are a few more thoughts.

## 1. God's purposes go far beyond any temporary suffering He permits here on earth.

We've just touched upon this above with the story of Lazarus' resurrection which illustrates that God's long-range plans reach clear into eternity. Heaven is so wonderful and hell is so horrible, He will resort to any means to bring men to Christ, and through their experiences often many others in the future as well.

**C. S. Lewis**, an Oxford professor, would be only one of many examples. His mother died a horribly painful death when he was only ten. He immediately became an angry skeptic because he couldn't understand why a good God would've permitted that.

However, his struggle to understand eventually led him to faith in Christ. Lewis shares in the final two chapters of his book, ***Surprised by Joy***, how he finally found Christ after many years. On a recent dramatization of his life on Moody Radio, he was honored with the title, *Apostle to the Skeptics*. His classic, ***Mere Christianity***, has pointed many skeptics to Christ including lawyer Chuck Colson. Colson was under indictment during the Nixon Watergate scandal. He came to Christ through Tom Phillips, former CEO of Raytheon, my former employer when I was a radar field engineer. Phillips first witnessed to Colson personally, then gave him a copy of C. S. Lewis' ***Mere Christianity***. After finding Christ through Lewis' book, he founded *Prison Fellowship* which has helped countless prisoners find Christ and to turn from lives of crime to living for Christ. <sup>2</sup>

## 2. God loves us but evil exists because He also gives everyone a free will.

*Without free will, we'd only be robots and robots don't have a choice to love.* Sadly, some men are more evil than others. Satan exploits this to the maximum. The faith of combat veterans is often severely tested by seeing first-hand the unspeakable cruelty of war. Long-term PTSD (Post Traumatic Stress Disorder) is, unfortunately, often the result.

Recently I met a former church member who had served tours in Afghanistan and may also be a victim. His first words were, "I don't like what you missionaries do! Jesus and I are not on speaking terms any more." I told him that God still loved him and offered him evidence from this book to correct his misconception that God was evil. Instantly, he became so furious he stood up from his chair to strike me but pain made him fall back down. (Thank you Lord!) He really needs our prayers. Let's be of good cheer. In the final book of the Bible, we're promised that good triumphs over evil, evil-doers are punished, and the righteous in Christ enjoy an eternity with Jesus.

### Forgiveness

#### Suffering hurt or even cruelty can be an opportunity to demonstrate God's love.

Hard? Impossible without Christ's spirit in us and working through us. In fact, Scripture tells us tribulation can prepare us to minister to others in an amazing and most effective way: 2 Corinthians 1:4 tells us, essentially, that 'God comforts us in our tribulation, so we may be able to comfort others.' Not only by sharing comfort verses like Romans 8:28 and 1 Peter 5:7, but by forgiving those who have hurt us. The latter can be one of the most powerful witnesses for Christ living in us. You may have already read my testimony of how Marine Corporal Stevens' returning good for evil when persecuted was one of my most powerful evidences there was a real God after all — eight years later!

**TV reports** murders every day. Often, parents or spouses of the victims are interviewed. Replies range from, "Justice was done" to "I hope he rots in prison" to "I hope he gets beat up every day," to "I pray he burns in hell!" In sharp contrast, I vividly recall the Emanuel AME Church massacre of nine by Dylann Roof in 2015. Washington Post journalist Mark Berman's post included several videos of the victim's relatives, one after the other, forgiving him on

national TV. WOW! It is also our Christian duty to pray that the criminal may find forgiveness and new life in Christ instead of demanding payback.

On a recent *Guidelines* radio broadcast, Harold Sala shared how a very deeply troubled Christian mother finally found peace after the murder of her son. It went beyond just personal forgiveness. She sent a Bible and this note to the murderer, now in prison. "God's Son, Jesus, was also murdered. However, Jesus asked God to forgive His murderers, even as He was dying in agony on the cross. God can also forgive you for murdering my son if you repent and turn your life over to Him."

### What is Forgiveness?

**Forgiveness is 'letting go and letting God'** deal with the people who hurt you as He sees fit, whether they ask for your forgiveness or not. God commands us to not avenge ourselves. (Romans 12:19) Jesus demonstrated His love for us by dying for us while we were still offensive sinners. (Romans 5:8)

*Therefore, Christian forgiveness is not just pretending the hurt is not there but you are no longer seeking revenge.* Legal justice maybe, but not revenge. In fact, Christ says we should pray for our enemies (tormentors)! (Matthew 5:43-48) Pray that your tormenter may repent, turn to Christ for His forgiveness, then make Jesus Lord of his life. If he does not, God will use His gentlest methods first on your tormentor to draw him to Christ. If those fail, He may have some 'other ways' to bring the rebellious to Himself. Be patient. Trust God. Keep praying. His love won't give up. Neither should yours.

**Forgiveness is seeing** the real enemy is Satan. Do not let him make you into his **BMP: 'Bitter Memories Puppet'** which gives Satan a 'handle' to control your life. When the 'endless playback tape' begins to replay your hurts, cast them upon the Lord and begin thanking God for your blessings, one by one, including your loving friends. Memorize and recite the Scriptures above and Satan will loosen his grip on you, for the moment. (1 Peter 5:7)

### Why and how must we learn to forgive those who hurt us?

1. **Forgiveness expresses our gratitude** to Christ who has forgiven us, and continues to forgive, our sins. (Ephesians 4:32)
2. **Jesus commands us** to forgive or He will not forgive us. (Matthew 6:14-15) (This is personal forgiveness. Only a judge has power to 'forgive' crimes.) *Forgiveness is not denying the hurt.* It's turning your tormenter over to God, *not for punishment*, but for 're-education' that may guide that person into repentance and to turn their life over to Christ. Pray for them and expect to meet them in heaven one day. That's the Christ-like spirit that glorifies God. Following this section, I'll share some real-life examples.
3. **To prevent the 'root of bitterness'** from destroying our joy in Christ with 'poor me pity parties' or even completely de-railing our Christian walk. (Hebrews 12:15)
4. **Hurts are opportunities** to become more Christ-like because exercising forgiveness is how we actually demonstrate Jesus' love to the unsaved in a very powerful way. It's also a major step towards healing our hurt because it helps us escape the 'poor me pity party'. (Matthew 5:44-47, Matthew 6:12) If the person who deeply hurt you is a Christian, let him know you are hurt, trust the Holy Spirit, and follow the steps in Matthew 18:15-18.
5. **Your forgiveness is a 'living letter' from God!** I've previously shared in Chapter 2 how Corporal Stevens' reaction to persecutors was my first real evidence there might be a real God after all. (2 Corinthians 3:2) A number of examples follow.

### Meet a few Christians who learned to forgive.

**Brooks and Jean Davis**, our friends for many years, did not forsake God when their 39-year-old son was cruelly beheaded after an 18-year struggle with drug addiction. They attended every court session of their son's murderers in another state over eight long years. Many would've turned their backs on God with, "[Where was God?](#)"

Instead, Jean wrote a book to share how the Lord brought her and Brooks through many years of extreme distress and how they learned to forgive and turn their hurts over to Christ. On pages 72-74 of ***Keep on Keeping On***, you'll find some of the Scriptures that helped the Davises through this major ordeal. <sup>1</sup> Chief among them is Lamentations 3:21-24 which begins, "[Yet there is one ray of hope ...](#)" That hope was Jesus. The late U.S. Senator Jesse Helms commented that this book, a *Christian Choice Award* winner, "[... is an inspiring story for every person searching for help, hope, reassurance, and healing](#)". This book can be of great help to others suffering from addiction or dealing with the criminal justice system. You may contact Jean at her website: [keeponkeepingonbook.com](http://keeponkeepingonbook.com).

**Elisabeth Elliott**, widow of one of the five missionaries martyred by the Aucas in 1950s Ecuador, together with Rachael Saint, sister of one of the martyrs, returned to the murderous tribe to complete Bible translation. They so powerfully demonstrated God's love through forgiveness that many came to Christ. In fact so many Aucas found Christ and gave up their evil ways, they had to change their tribal name from Auca (savage) to Waorani! You'll find details in Elisabeth Elliot's powerful book, ***Through Gates of Splendor***. An International speaker, she continues to broadcast daily the Lord's love and forgiveness worldwide on *Gateway to Joy*. The Auca story is summarized in this free download. <sup>95</sup>

**Josh McDowell**, now a world-class apologist, was formerly an aggressive, hardened, atheist who planned to kill his abusive, drunken father. Click [here](#) for details of what happened after receiving Christ's forgiveness and extending that to his father.

**Nelson Mandela**, the black South African anti-Apartheid activist, was unjustly imprisoned for decades. He was asked if he hated those who did that to him. "No", he replied. "[Otherwise, I'd just be in a different kind of prison!](#)"

**Amish school shooter's mother** wrote ***Forgiven*** in which she reports that the Amish community had forgiven, in Christ's name, her son who had murdered so many little innocent children.

**Pastor Erick Plyler's Christian growth** was stunted and without joy until he learned to let go of the grudge he held against those who murdered his father when he was a young boy years before. Click [here](#) to jump to *GOTTA GIVE UP GRUDGES*.

**Corrie Ten Boom** is undoubtedly the greatest example of forgiveness I know. In a Nazi death camp in the '40s she saw her sister and father brutally murdered along with hundreds of others. Years later, after a church service, one of her Nazi guards, who had become a Christian, extended his hand in fellowship, reconciled to God and to Corrie through Christ! Corrie became an international speaker, has written 20 books, and encouraged countless Christians to likewise forgive through her example. This was one of God's long-range purposes for her suffering and an opportunity to extend Christ's forgiveness to her abusers, a fantastic 'Romans 8:28'! Here's how Corrie describes her faith under trial:

["When your train disappears into a dark tunnel, you don't throw away your ticket and just jump off. You just sit still and trust the engineer!"](#)

I was very blessed and encouraged today by her daily devotion book, ***Each New Day***, now in its 15<sup>th</sup> printing. On page 77, Corrie beautifully illustrates Jesus' admonition in Matthew 6:9-15 that if we cannot forgive our enemies He cannot forgive us: "[He who cannot forgive others breaks the bridge over which he himself must pass, for every man has the need to be forgiven.](#)" Her life story is detailed in the great book and movie, ***The Hiding Place***. <sup>23</sup>

In stark contrast, I personally met several Jewish survivors of the Dachau Nazi death camp while serving in Italy in the '70s. They never learned to forgive so the rest of their lives was an angry, miserable repetition of 'poor me' and of hurling evil accusations against God, whom they had rejected, for not saving them.

**An American bombardier had his intense hatred transformed into Christ-like love**

which helped bring to Christ the Japanese Navy pilot who had bombed Pearl Harbor!

(Click [here](#).)

I don't pretend to know all the reasons why God permits suffering in every case but it's enough that God knows. If you've read Chapter 6 of this book, you've already seen how His promise in Romans 8:28 worked out multiple times in our lives: losing two jobs plus Irene's excruciating ear ache that directly resulted in an unexpected opportunity to preach Christ to the Libyan Jewish refugees in their synagogue in Rome, Italy, back in the '70s.

Later on I'll be sharing a few more examples of how the power of God's promise of Romans 8:28 did indeed cause seemingly bad things to work out for good in the long term. Until then, here's some great advice I found on our friend Katy's Facebook site with a slight tweak: "No matter what your problem is, don't nurse it, don't curse it, don't rehearse it. Just give it to God."

How? by casting your burdens upon God. (1 Peter 5:7) How does one do that? By allowing Him take care of it in His way and in His time. Though I've shared this elsewhere, I believe it bears repeating here. Jesus was crucified between two thieves. One was angry and accusatory. The other was repentant and because he was willing to trust Jesus just a bit longer, that very day he joined our Lord in Paradise for a joyful eternity. **Trust Him just a little bit longer!**

**More Personal Friends Whose Trials Prepared Them to Help Others**

**Fantastic 'Romans 8:28' Results From Shooting:** After Brooks and Jean Davis ([above](#)) had waited seven years for the trial of the murderers of their son, a few days into the trial, shots rang out from another courtroom in that same building. They were on lock-down for three hours. What happened? Brian Nichols, on trial for rape, had killed a judge and several others before making his escape. He then held Ashley Smith hostage for seven hours. Ashley was the widow of a murdered husband and had turned to drugs to cope. The gunman's repeated invitations to take drugs with him were refused at the risk of her life.

She read Chapter 32 of Warren's *Purpose Filled Life* <sup>E</sup> to the gunman, which obviously also spoke to her because she later got victory over her own drug habit. (Warren's book jumped to number two on the New York Times Best Seller list so thousands of others would've also been touched by this tragedy.) Ashley got out of the house on the pretext of picking up her daughter but called the police, then called the gunman and convinced him to give himself up.

The gunman surrendered to police and ten years later, Ashley is still drug free. She continues to inspire other drug addicts to kick this vicious habit. She's now remarried, has three children, is working as a nurse, and is an inspirational speaker encouraging other drug addicts to get clean and stay clean. Ashley's original book acknowledges the hostage situation was an extreme act of God to bring her to repentance when all else had failed. The book is therefore named after the gunman: **Unlikely Angel!** <sup>BB</sup> It became the movie *Captive* in 2015 and is a super Christian film. **Pray** that Brian Nichols, the gunman, may find Christ's forgiveness like so many others have done who only listen when they reach the end of their road in prison.

**Dr. Ted Bergman**, a research physicist for the Navy, had to stop and evaluate his life when his young daughter died from disease. You'll read what happened a couple of pages later when I contrast his reaction with that of Charles Darwin who also lost a young daughter.

**David Coppedge**, third from right in the photo, led this team at NASA's Jet Propulsion Lab that helped develop the Cassini Mission space probe which went to Saturn and its moon Titan. David is still battling incurable cancer. His blog details his current courageous and inspiring struggle: <http://davidcoppedge.com>. David also documents heart-breaking injustices which he suffered for his faith during his 14 years at JPL while leading this computer team. In spite of all his trials, like Job in the Bible, David has remained faithful to the Lord and continues to minister to others personally and on his blog site. He's a great inspiration to me and to many others. We'd also invite you to visit his amazing apologetics sites: *Creation-Evolution Headlines* at <http://crev.info> and the exciting adventure site at <http://creationsafaris.com/>.



*(NOTE: David is the son of microbiologist Dr. James F. Coppedge, who earned five college degrees, and became a champion creationist. We will meet him later on when he refutes evolution by proving mathematically that the probability was nearly zero that even one gene in our DNA could've evolved accidentally. When we were invited some years ago to share Bible translation technology with the youth of a California church, we were quite surprised to learn that the pastor's wife Judy was David Coppedge's sister! In fact, it was here, by God's providence that we learned of David and his dad's great book. <sup>33</sup>)*

**Jeanne Tomlinson**, another of David Coppedge's sisters, wrote ***Hope For Those Who Hurt***. It relates how Christ sustained her while coping with her husband's five brain surgeries, cancer, a paralyzing stroke, and a lingering death. [M](#)

**Gene Love** was a beloved fellow church member. His memorial service at our church included this wonderful thought: *'We see the present clearly but He sees the first and the last. Like a tapestry, He's weaving you and me to become what He wants us to be.'* I would add that He sees the beautiful Heavenly side of the tapestry. We see only the rough, earthly, reverse side of the tapestry. Whatever happens, we can know that God is at work 'weaving' our future with love, based on perfect fore-knowledge and coordinating it with the lives of many others: <http://www.goodreads.com/quotes/741391-life-is-but-a-weaving-the-tapestry-poem-my-life>. *Unfolding the Rosebud* is another deeply moving poem which was read at my mom's funeral: <http://www.crossroad.to/Victory/poems/rosebud.htm>.

**US!** On November 6, 2014, the very day after completing a very intense four-month-revision of this book, the cause of Irene's lethargy and nearly 20-pound weight loss was diagnosed as a large [seven-centimeter cancer on her left kidney](#). Irene's response echoed that of Judy Lamb, one of our fellow church members, who was diagnosed with terminal cancer. *"Whether I'm healed by the Lord or the doctors or whether I die and go to be with Jesus, this is a 'win-win' situation!"* Irene's kidney was removed successfully. Nine months later a lesion was found on her pancreas. We're in the Lord's hands no matter what happens. What could be better than that? We're trusting God for whatever lies ahead in accordance with His future plans for us and also for others. *Faith is not about everything turning out OK. It's about being OK no matter how things turn out! (Romans 8:28!) 'The eternal God is your refuge. And underneath are the everlasting arms.'* (Deuteronomy 33:27)

God's promise of Romans 8:28 assures us that God's long-range purpose will be to somehow use suffering as part of His long-range plans. On frequent medical visits I always get opportunities to share Christ personally or by leaflet. On several occasions there has been an opportunity to share with the medical team who was about to begin one of my surgeries. You may also add paramedics on the way to emergency. I was happy to be used to carry God's message to very busy medical personnel who may never hear the true gospel in a church but God wants them all to have a clear chance at Heaven. *"For to me to live is Christ, and to die*



is gain." (Philippians 1:21)

### **More Who Have Endured Suffering but Remained Faithful**

**Job**, whose life is detailed in the Bible book of Job, remained faithful to God in spite of terrible suffering and thereby won a great victory over Satan who had challenged God to a test. Job was a very rich man but in a single day he lost all ten of his children, his servants, and 11,500 head of livestock. Then he was afflicted with large painful boils from head to foot. God had confidence Job would pass the 'suffering test'. Job did, saying: "Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him." (Job 13:15) Job recognized that he was only a temporary steward of all that God had given him. His possessions and even his children were only being lent to him by God, owner of all things. Therefore he could say, "The Lord gave, and the Lord has taken away. Blessed be the name of the LORD." (Job 1:21)

Scriptures tell us that previously, in Heaven, Satan had challenged God saying that if all Job's possessions were taken away, Job would curse God to His face! However, strengthened by God and unknown to Job, he won a great victory over Satan in this heavenly confrontation. It was a powerful testimony among Job's friends. Then God gave him ten more children and doubled the riches he had before. Not only that, but God even granted him long life to see four generations of his children. Meanwhile, his original ten children were enjoying eternal happiness in Heaven. Let's move forward to some more modern heroes whose trust in God conquered their grief.

**Horatio Spafford**, a prominent lawyer in the late 1800s, lost his two-year-old son and then his fortune in the Great Chicago Fire. His wife and all four remaining children were then lost at sea. Yet his faith in God was unshaken and in spite of these tragedies wrote the hymn, "It is Well With My Soul" in 1878 which endures today, 139 years later, as one of the best-loved hymns of all time. It's been a comfort for millions undergoing suffering and trials.

**Robert Rogers** lost his wife and all four children in a 2004 flash flood. Did he accuse God of making a mistake? No, he continued to trust God and accepted this tragedy as part of God's long-range plans with a future reunion in Heaven one day. He even resigned his career as an electrical engineer to found the *Mighty in the Land* ministries. (From ***Into the Deep***, published by Tyndale house.)

**Joni Eareckson Tada's** outstanding example today echoes Job's great faith. When she was 17, a dive into unexpectedly shallow water broke her neck, paralyzing her whole body. She was helpless, trapped underwater unable to move, and could only wait for the release of death. However, God still had a plan for her life. Surprisingly, just at that time, He sent a crab to bite her sister Kathy, still on shore. Kathy yelled, "Joni, look out for the crabs!" But Joni was nowhere to be seen so Kathy dived in and saved her sister just in time.



Wishing only for death during months of grueling rehab, Joni must have accusingly asked many times, "Where was God"? On page 219, in ***A SPECTACLE of GLORY***<sup>24</sup>, her wonderful devotional book, she writes that, being unable to die, she then asked God, "Show me how to live!" God did, drawing her from the pit of absolute hopelessness to give her unique 'spiritual wings' to rise above despair and minister to millions of others disabled like herself. Regaining only the use of her neck, she began a worldwide ministry to other disabled and even enjoys painting pictures holding the paint brush between her teeth!

We listen to her daily radio broadcast. Each time we hear her happy, cheerful voice, we are reminded of the miraculous way the Lord had literally led her through the 'valley of the shadow of death' to prepare her to minister to millions for so many years. (Psalm 23) God

has even given her a loving husband. Joni's paralysis and her sister's crab bite were only two of many seemingly bad things which turned out to be fulfillments of God's long-range plans for her good. Yes, 'all things do work together for good to those who love God' because He planned our futures before we were even born! (Romans 8:28 and Psalm 139:11-18) Those who do not love God cannot expect good to come from bad things unless it drives them towards Christ.

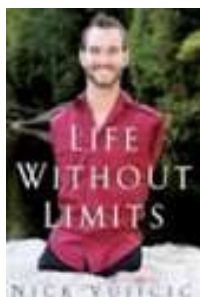
The name of her other devotional book, ***Pearls of Great Price***, gets its name from the fact that the irritation of a grain of sand inside an oyster is what creates valuable pearls. <sup>24</sup> *Likewise, if we love God, the adversities sent by Him, as in this case, develop priceless character that prepares us to minister to others. Another adversity she's endured is a five-year battle with cancer.* Her terrific ministry site: [www.joniandfriends.org](http://www.joniandfriends.org).

**Missionary Rev. Vic Ramsay** was sentenced to prison and his ministry dismantled because he was unaware he owed British income tax while ministering in England. In his prison cell he wrote a long letter to God beginning with, "Dear God, I hereby resign my Christian faith." However, God did not abandon Vic. Over time, Vic regained his faith and learned he had a particular gift of ministering to his fellow prisoners who had drug problems. After serving his sentence he founded one the most successful faith-based drug rehabilitation centers in that part of England!

**Harry Emerson Fosdick** was a well-known preacher of yesteryear. He was also human and suffered a breakdown so severe he felt that even God had totally abandoned him. He wrote ***The Meaning of Prayer*** in which he documented his sufferings and also his recovery. God had not deserted him after all but had been there all the time. (Read Romans 8:35-39 for a [list of things that cannot separate us from the love of God!](#)) During the past nearly hundred years this book has helped multitudes of others, a dramatic fulfillment of God's promise in Romans 8:28.

**Donnie**, a little deformed child whose suffering eventually brought an engineer to Christ, is one example of how God could even use the suffering of a child. You may read the full story in an article by Charmaine Brazda in the September 1991 issue of Billy Graham's *Decision* magazine. Mitta was a God-ignoring, night-clubbing, chemical engineer from India. A Christian friend invited her to visit a children's hospital. At the hospital Mitta began a long-term friendship with Donnie, a pitiful five-year old with hydrocephalus, who'd been hospitalized for years.

Horribly deformed, the boy's head had grown so large Mitta could not lift it from the pillow. Surprisingly, on every visit the child talked about Jesus and repeatedly told her that Jesus loved her. He also asked her to take his little drawings as love-gifts to Jesus. Donnie died only three years later but their long-term relationship had laid the foundation for her personal transformation by Christ several years later in her home through a minister on TV.



**Nick Vujicic** was born without arms or legs. Instead of whining, Nick is thankful to God for what he has rather than being bitter about what he does not have. He could've easily become a 'God-hater', but instead, he's an avid evangelist and international speaker. He's authored six inspirational books, including his great devotional book *Limitless*, as well as the one shown at left. Nick's cheerfulness, his godly spirit, and indomitable faith have opened many doors for sharing Christ, a great fulfillment of God's promise of Romans 8:28! Meet Nick in his book and learn how he overcame enormous handicaps and how he met his wife four years ago. <sup>x</sup>



Amazingly, Nick was invited to North Vietnam where he spoke to 25,000 young people in a Hanoi stadium. This was reported by the press on May 23, 2013. A North Vietnamese soldier stood behind him and he was limited as to what he could say. But he did say he'd come 'because Heaven IS REAL!' His great deformities opened a door for witness in one of the most cruel and war-like countries in the world. *He was the first foreign Christian ever invited to speak in North Vietnam! Also, he spoke to the largest audience ever addressed by a foreigner!*

**Washington Roebling** designed the Brooklyn Bridge. However, he was bed-ridden and had to be carried there when it was completed 11 years later. He then exclaimed, "Just like the plan! Just like the plan!" That's what I believe we'll say in Heaven one day when we look back upon our sufferings and setbacks. We'll see they too were "Just like the plan!" God has plans not only for us but plans that perhaps helped bring others we've never even met to Christ. I really look forward to meeting Corporal Stevens in Heaven one day when he learns that his faith under persecution, back in 1954, was also part of God's plan to start me on the road to finding God and eventually to be called into missionary service these 52+ years!

God's overall plan for our lives is wonderfully pictured in this beautiful scarf, woven from tree bark fuzz, on a loom consisting of four sticks in the ground, by the Dhao, a Southwest Pacific tribe near Indonesia. It was presented to JAARS in appreciation for the software we helped developed which enabled translation of the Bible into their previously unwritten, unanalyzed language. Many previous attempts had failed. (Click [here](#) for more details.) Each string had been pre-dyed individually with a splotch of color here and there. Not pretty! But when fitted together with the rest of the strings, wow! Looking back, God had planned every 'splotch', including some suffering, into each day of my life, represented by each string, to prepare me for His service! In the same way, He is also preparing all His servants to carry out His unique plan for them which also may include some trials and suffering. The overall end result will be both beautiful and eternal! <sup>κ</sup> 'I know the plans I have for you: to give you a future and a hope!' (Jeremiah 29:11)



=====



During extreme suffering, it sometimes seems as if we're being bombarded by the heat and glare of a relentless desert sun, totally hiding God's 'stars of hope': *His faithful promises*. However, with the coming of the darkness of despair, God's 'stars of hope' are revealed in all their majesty. They had been there all the time! Sometimes it's only when the dark curtain of despair descends that God's 'stars of hope' appear to teach us lessons we never could have learned in any other way, lessons about standing strong on God's promises that helps prepare us to minister to others. (In Scripture we read that Job cited the constellation Pleiades twice, left, to demonstrate God's amazing power of creation. Because the Pleiades resemble a diagonal cross, Job unknowingly reached forward through the centuries to touch the cross of Christ! (Job 9:2, 9-10, 38:31)

### **Envious of the wicked who enjoy themselves but never seem to suffer?**

So was this Psalmist. Read what he had to say in Psalm 73.

Also here's a repeat of the link to the *Farther Along* gospel video which will be encouraging: <https://www.bing.com/videos/search?q=further+along%2c+gaithers&view=detail&mid=A01DE8787885C4952348A01DE8787885C4952348&FORM=VIRE>.

### **Contrast: How Charles Darwin and My Friend Ted Handled a Daughter's Death**

Charles Darwin, founder of evolutionary theory, is said to have turned from God as a result of the death of his ten-year-old daughter Annie from scarlet fever. He refused to accept that God

had a better long-range plan for her. Though Darwin may have attended church before this tragedy, it's obvious to me that he had lost touch with God. It is true that even Christians may continue to grieve the loss of a loved-one for quite some time but eventually they pull out of it. We know that even this tragedy was part of God's long-range plan and that our loved ones are many times happier in Heaven than when on earth. Unable to accept that, it seems that Darwin sought an alternative to God: evolution.

Ted Bergman is a long-time personal friend of mine and a genuine Christian. He also lost a daughter to disease like Charles Darwin did. However, in contrast to Darwin, Ted's real faith sustained him and therefore He did not abandon God and turn to some godless philosophy like Darwin's evolution. Instead, Ted's tragic loss caused him to re-evaluate the best use of the rest of his life knowing that he too would die one day. Later, God clearly called him to leave his well-paid job as a Ph.D. research physicist for the Navy to eventually become the leader of Bible survey operations worldwide for Wycliffe Bible Translators.

Millions on distant mission fields have been blessed with God's word and one day will be in Heaven because of Ted. He knows that one day he will rejoin his daughter in Heaven, as well as a multitude of those who found Christ because Ted surrendered his life for God's service. Darwin, instead, never got over what he thought that God had done to his daughter. He then created the alternate mythical 'god' of evolution that totally denies God's existence.

Christian martyr Jim Elliot's observation seems quite appropriate for Ted who had left behind a lucrative profession to serve Christ: "He's no fool who gives up what he cannot keep to gain what he cannot lose." Jim's widow Elisabeth, who also lost two more husbands, wrote a book entitled, ***On Asking God Why***, a collection of short articles questioning suffering and the good that can come from it. <sup>72</sup>

I see two spiritual lessons to be learned from the death of Bergman's and Darwin's daughters.

**1. Adversity can be the 'great revealer' of our true spiritual condition.**

This would be the 'wake-up call' of adversity previously shared. I've met quite a few who, like Darwin, failed the 'Psalm 9:9-10 test' during adversity or who had unrealistic expectations of God being their servant instead of vice versa. Darwin's faith was proven false. Ted's faith was tried and proven real. The end result of his grief was deeper trust as he embraced God's call to deeper loyalty resulting in a lifetime of Christian service.

**2. No one dies, including children, until they've completed God's plan for their lives.**

For Darwin's daughter Annie, that plan was completed at age 10 when she died. No one dies 'before their time' in God's eyes. There's more in **[Appendix C](#)** about why evil is permitted by a loving God.

I recall ministering to a tearful mother while serving in Italy. She sobbed out how her two-month-old daughter had battled a serious bout of pneumonia. She kept praying, "God, I don't care what you want. I just want my baby to live." The baby did live but later brought years of shame upon herself and her mother by living the life of a drug-addicted prostitute, infecting who knows how many men, thereby destroying an untold number of families, leaving children to grow up without a father, often in poverty.

God does love us and has a long-range plan for each of us based upon His knowledge of the future. Trust Him just a little bit longer and one day He'll show you the big picture.

**A Few More Reasons for Suffering and 'Fiery Trials'**

- 1. As a test of our faith:** Is it based on loyalty to Christ or just trying to sneak aboard Jesus' 'happiness train'? It's so easy to fall away when things go too well for too long so

God allows trials to 'wake us up' to our need of Him. (Deuteronomy 8:11-14, 1 Peter 1:6-7)

- 2. As preparation for ministering to others.** In John 15, Jesus described Himself as the true vine. We are the branches which are pruned in order to bear more fruit. One result is that we are to comfort the suffering with the same comfort we received from Christ. (2 Corinthians 1:4) Other results including toughening us to be better soldiers for Christ (2 Timothy 2:3-4) and to develop patience, hope, and courage. (Romans 5:3-4)
- 3. As a demonstration of real faith** to the unsaved, that Christianity is not just a 'happiness crutch', but its promises are true and sustain us even in suffering.  
*May we endure as seeing Him who is invisible!* (Hebrews 11)

Acres of beautiful flowers in Switzerland bear a heavy burden of snow all winter. Hurtful? NO, it provides protection against withering winter blasts and abundant water in the Spring when it melts! (**Hope for Each Day**, Billy Graham, July 15: The Blessing of Burdens.)

*Again, Jesus' invitation is, "Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." (Matthew 11:28-30)*

### **The Six Stages of Grief**

I would like to conclude with a recent TV interview of nationally known pastor and best-selling author, Rick Warren. <sup>E</sup> Rick was asked on a TV show how he coped with the suicide of his 27-year-old mentally ill son. He replied with the following six stages of grief. (I went through these myself when I lost my younger sister after her long bout with cancer.)

- 1. SHOCK** for nearly a month. Rick just couldn't fully grasp that his son was gone.
- 2. SORROW** continually with occasional uncontrollable outbursts of tears.
- 3. QUESTIONING: Why? Why now?** Rick said that even if God told us all the 'Whys?', our minds could not grasp all the ways in which a loved one's death would affect both us and a multitude of other people over many years, many of whom we don't even know. Take heart! One day in Heaven, we may be surprised to meet unsaved loved ones who were 'shocked' towards Christ by your tragedy! *(This stage may also include self-accusatory 'If only ...' speculations about which nothing can be done now but which only deepens one's grief. Let go and instead, start helping bring your living loved ones to Christ so you can meet them in Heaven one day as well.)*
- 4. SURRENDERING** in trust and hope to God's promises like Romans 8:28.
- 5. TENDERIZING** of the heart occurs after surrender making us much more compassionate towards others who are grieving. Rick (and I) became much more sensitive towards those who had suffered similar loss. The 35,000 letters of condolence the Warrens received were mostly from others who had grieved like Rick. Most grieving people will respond to us because we have felt what they are feeling now. Therefore they too may be 'tenderized' towards God.
- 6. SEEKING OUT** other grieving people to help comfort them occurs as a natural result of allowing time to go through the first five stages. *Even with God as our refuge, it just takes time to work through the stages above. Time becomes God's great grief-healer. Christ-likeness is God's ultimate objective for our brief time upon earth and suffering is part of the process to become more compassionate and loving.*

*Bad things sometime happen to make us appreciate the good things we had never noticed.*

***Live in the past = depression. Live in the future = anxiety.***

***Live in the present with Christ = PEACE!***

*If you are a Christian who is suffering the loss of a loved one, then know that your steadfastness in Christ can be a powerful testimony to encourage some who are far from Christ to begin trusting Him. Someone once said, "Death is only the last shadow before the brilliant, glorious 'heavenly dawn' when God will answer all your 'Why?' questions"*

### **Loved Ones You're Not Sure Went to Heaven?**

**There's hope!** Doctors tell us that the brain lives for up to four or five minutes after the heart stops. While we may not know whether any given person actually received Christ and His forgiveness yet we also don't know what may be going on in the dying brain during those four or five minutes before all function ceases. However, we certainly do not want to put off receiving Christ until that last moment. It may not work for us. If you're a Christian, make every effort to get the gospel to your loved ones while they are still able to decide for Christ. We all need to live in such a way that others can see Christ at work in our lives.

This citation has more about 'If God, why suffering'? <sup>22A</sup> To go deeper into the subject I would highly recommend ***The Case for Christ*** which includes an investigative interview by Lee Strobel (former 15-year atheist), with Charles Templeton, former co-evangelist with Billy Graham. <sup>1</sup> A heart-wrenching magazine picture of a starving child caused Templeton to 'lose his faith'. He then wrote a whole book about why he turned his back upon God. Billy Graham had no answer for Templeton's doubts and for a time wavered himself, but not for long. Unlike Templeton, Billy decided he did not need to have all the answers but would just continue trusting Him who will one day show us all things. Faith won the day and he went on to become a great evangelist. (Heb. 11:6) Strobel thoroughly refutes Templeton's 'illogical' logic of 'suffering = no God'. Other in-depth investigations by Strobel expose seven more of Templeton's faulty, often vicious, logic questions that unfairly condemn God and deny hell.

If you're under great stress or suffering, you are invited to do as the apostle Peter did when he felt overwhelmed: "Cast all your care upon Him, for He cares for you." (1 Peter 5:7)

### **Conditions for Answered Prayer or Claiming God's Promises**

It is in adversity that we look to God's promises for hope. Much has been shared about His promise of Romans 8:28. There are many other promises, but we need to learn how they may apply to us, or if they don't. Some of God's promises apply to all believers all the time such as "Because I live, you too shall live." and "I will never leave you nor forsake you." (John 14:19, Hebrews 13:5) Many other of God's promises were made only to certain ones back in Bible times but some of those were also meant for us to claim today. Just as our money only has real value when it is backed by an equivalent amount of gold or silver in the Federal Reserve at Fort Knox, so all of God's promises are trustworthy because they are backed by His own validation: the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead. "For all the promises of God in Him are Yes, and in Him Amen, to the glory of God through us." (2 Corinthians 1:20)

Imagine a person saying, "Jesus promised, **If you ask anything in My name, I will do it.**" (John 14:14) "I didn't win the \$10 million lottery, therefore Jesus does not love me, God does not exist except as a fairy tale in the minds of you stupid Christian fanatics."

This is the most common way of misinterpreting Scripture: taking a verse out of context. A seminary professor once said, "Text without context is pretext!" If you read the verses before and the verses after the one above you'll see there are at least three conditions here.

**First:** To 'glorify God,' in the previous verse. This implies that you have previously turned

your life over to Him. Not to 'feed your greed', get revenge, or gain some unfair advantage.

**Second:** We must be in a state of obedience to Him, required in John 14:15. Sometimes God withholds blessings until we get victory over some particular sin.

**Third:** *It must not contradict God's long-range plans for you or for others you may not even know about.* If you're walking with God, He blesses you and gives you good things but only if they fit into His overall plans for your life and into the lives of others. We can't know how, so "YOUR will be done" should end every request. He's God, we're not.

### **God's Timing: His Three Answers to Prayer or Claiming His Promises**

If we correctly claim one of God's promises in prayer, God always answers but in His time and often not exactly in the way we wanted! I don't have all the answers. But in my experience, it seems God answers our prayers, or a promise we have claimed as our own, in one of these three ways, according to Romans 8:28: for our good and that of others long-term even though it may be adversity short-term.

- **Yes**, God loves us deeply and wants to bless us abundantly. But knowing the future, He will only grant requests which are in accordance with His long-term plans for us and for others as well, perhaps for those we don't even know and years into the future.
- **NO**, for the same reasons given above for 'Yes'. (How would you answer your 6-year-old child who asked you for an AK-47, ammunition, and a Ferrari to go around shooting all the kids he didn't like, or maybe a gallon of whisky for a block party?) In John 11 we read Jesus delayed coming until Lazarus had died and rotted in the grave for four days. *Short-term, bad. Long-term, good*, because Jesus then raised him from the dead, drawing countless others to God. Paul, the greatest New Testament missionary, was afflicted with some infirmity he called a thorn. Though he implored God three times to remove it, God refused. *Short-term, bad. Long-term, good*, because God knew he needed that to keep him humble and useful. (2 Corinthians 12:7) Yes, God can do anything we ask but only if it conforms to His long-term plans for us and for others as was mentioned above. Even Jesus Christ added, "YOUR will be done" when praying the evening before His crucifixion.
- **Wait**, when your request is dependent upon something else or someone else, perhaps even upon something we know nothing about, or perhaps God's waiting for our obedience to something He has already pointed out that needs to be corrected.

We also should realize that He does not always, nor promptly, grant promises to heal when we ask because He may be perfecting our own endurance and patience. He also may be using us to demonstrate our faith to others by our steadfastness despite our suffering in order to draw others to Himself, as he used Nick Vujicic, Joni Eareckson Tada, and a host of others shared earlier. *Wait on the LORD; Be of good courage, And He shall strengthen your heart; Wait, I say, on the LORD!* (Psalm 27:14)

### **The Bridge to Fully Trusting God's Promises!**



My long-time missionary colleague, Dr. Roger Smalling, shares a profound thought in his booklet, *How to Grow in Faith*. <sup>S</sup> 'Nebulous hope-so' faith becomes true faith only when it's built upon God's promises! I would say 'Amen' to that. I would also add that the 'bridge to God's promises' is also supported by the cables of overwhelming scientific and other tangible evidence that God is truly real, that He loves us, and that the Bible is trustworthy and wholly reliable. Further, this 'faith bridge' is supported upon the massive pillars representing our realization that we have disobeyed God (sinned), have

received His forgiveness, then have begun to turn from our sins (repentance). *Only then do God's promises apply to us.*

After that, the [bridge of God's promises](#) provides safe passage over the rocky canyons and pitfalls of this life, then over the deep, dark, and frightening river of death to a joyous eternity with Him. [What's the bedrock upon which all is supported?](#) [God's love demonstrated](#) to us when He sent Jesus to suffer and die for our sins, then giving us His '2 Corinthians 1:20 guarantee' by resurrecting Him on the third day:

**'Jesus is the YES to all the promises of God!'**

=====

### **Suffering Summary, 7 Reasons**

**First:** [God still loves us and He still cares for us.](#) *Suffering is part of God's long-range plan for our eventual good and the good of others.* It fits into God's much larger, long-range plan which we often cannot know until we meet Him. For me, my success in engineering followed by disillusionment with life, then suicidal depression, were all part of God's 'master blueprint' for me in the same way that every part of God's blueprint for the magnificent temple was given to Solomon in 1 Chronicles 28. Those plans were 'Romans 8:28' for my life. You may ask, "What is the foundation upon which God's promise of Romans 8:28 is built?"

This illustration I discovered recently explains that so well. A farmer was asked, "Why did you put '**God is Love**' on that weather vane on your barn, because He's unpredictable like the wind?" The farmer replied, "No, it's because no matter which way the wind blows, and whether calm or storm, God always loves us." Nothing can separate us from the love of God and if we love Him, we are 'more than conquerors' of the battles against adversity because they're part of God's plans for us which then reaches others. (Romans 8:37-38) By the way, 'loving God' is shown by obeying Him, not just an emotion, as Jesus said in John 14:15.

*God's long-range plans are beyond our understanding so trust Him a little longer. Details of things on earth, including our home, shrink to insignificance when viewed from a satellite. If we keep a heavenly perspective by trusting our heavenly father, our earthly problems also shrink to insignificance.*



**Second:** [Suffering tests if we have real or 'fantasy' faith.](#) We often don't really know the status or depth of our faith until it is tested. *Psalm 9:9-10 affirms that suffering is the 'great revealer' of what type of faith we have, real or just fantasy: 'Those who know the real God will cling to Him in time of adversity'.* (I've already presented several examples.) Those who don't know the true God will blame, hate, and even curse Him when severe trials come. *The same sun that can soften wax, making it more moldable and useful, can also bake clay so hard it can no longer be molded into anything useful.* (Dr. J. Vernon McGee) The clay's brittle and easily shattered as those of you know who've ever dropped a porcelain cup. *(Those who turn against God during trials are very often those who are following the wrong 'god' who think he is supposed to make only good things happen.)*

**Third:** [Suffering strengthens our faith and make us more Christ-like.](#) Just as gold is refined by being melted, then skimming off the impurities, so our faith can be purified and thus strengthened by repeated trials as He makes us more Christ-like. [We might look at adversity as God melting us, then 'pouring us' into His mold.](#) (1 Peter 1:7-8) Also, remember that even raw materials for glass cannot be shaped into anything useful until it's heated red hot and melted. Any suffering which drives us helplessly to our knees can teach us to trust God more.

**Fourth:** [Suffering prepares us to minister in a meaningful way to others who are suffering.](#) If you've lost a spouse or a child, no one can empathize **more deeply** than you. Don't believe



the ubiquitous 'they were taken before their time'. Not so! God has a long-range plan even for calling babies to Himself. If you can trust Him just a little longer, one day He will show you His whole long-range plans for you and your loved ones.  
(2 Corinthians 1:3-4, Proverbs 3:5-6)

When things go well for too long, we all tend to drift away from God because we somehow just don't really feel that we need Him. (Deuteronomy 8:11-14) Sometimes a 'suffering test' reveals our faith to be phony, built on our own desires and unrealistic, excessive expectations from a 'god' who really doesn't exist. Suffering can then direct us to seek the real God who can sustain us in times of trouble.

**Fifth:** *Suffering, yet remaining faithful, brings glory to God and powerfully draws unbelievers to Him.* The unbeliever expects you to whine and accusingly ask, "Where was God?" When you stand strong on God's promises, you speak to hearts in a unique way. As a former atheist, learning of Christians who endured incredible suffering, torture, and even martyrdom, yet remained steadfast in Christ, was very credible evidence that helped bring me nearer to finding that God is real.

**Sixth:** *Suffering teaches us to trust in God's day-by-day guidance.* Many times we've made trips to destinations where we've never been before. As soon as we enter the address into our GPS, it knows exactly how to get us there. We have 'faith' in multiple unseen satellites orbiting around 11,000 miles above the earth, each with an atomic clock. The voice from our GPS only shows us only one step at a time. Jesus also often only lets us see only one step at a time as He guides us.



Some of the streets are rough and bumpy but if we continue to follow instructions, we will get to our destination. We always have the freedom to just ignore the GPS if we wish, but if we do we could end up in a bad, dangerous part of town or hopelessly lost on a dark country road. If we miss a turn and get lost, the GPS will re-compute to direct us back onto the correct route. *What a great picture of our Proverbs 3:5-6 walk with Christ!* As long as we follow Him, He will guide us in spite of 'bumpy roads'. I use my 'reverse sequence' version of the Alcoholics Anonymous prayer when trials come:

Dear Lord,

Give me the wisdom to know the difference between what can be changed and that which cannot. Give me the power to change that which can be changed and the grace to calmly accept that which cannot be changed and then move on.

Many of you know the story told of a king in ancient times whose wise men gave him this motto to engrave on his ring, which would be appropriate in good times or bad: "This too shall pass!" We need to be aware that both good and bad in this world are temporary. That's why I'm so glad I've put my faith in God who is working behind the scenes permitting both good and bad for our eternal good. One day even the world itself will pass away to usher in God's new kingdom.

**Seventh:** *Suffering may be a test to see if God can entrust us with more difficult tasks for Him.*

I believe Moses had passed all his previous tests when he was given a huge opportunity. God was going to wipe out the Israelites who had fallen into idolatry and create a new nation through Moses alone. This would've brought great glory to Moses. However, he interceded by asking God for another chance for Israel. Demonstrating God's love and grace, Moses saved a whole nation and brought great glory to God. Click [here](#) to return above for examples.

**Trust God!** While working on this book I see only my *Word* program running. However, if I open Task Manager, it shows me 72 other programs running in the background at the same time! I can trust Task Manager. *In the same way, God's promise of Romans 8:28 is our 'Task Manager' assuring us that He has long-range plans of exactly how our trials and suffering will affect other people and situations both now and in the future, all totally hidden from us.*



### **Still Don't Have All the Answers? Just Pull your Ripcord!**

When a parachutist jumps from a plane, wouldn't it be foolish of him to refuse to pull his ripcord because he must first compute wind direction, how fast he's falling, how his hair looks, etc.? No, first he pulls the ripcord, then literally trusts his life to his parachute. We're all in 'free fall' towards death. **So, in spite of still having a few hard unanswered questions about God, or about our adversities, let's pull the ripcord by trusting Him 'just a little bit longer' until we finally meet Him face-to-face. There we'll get all the answers and learn how our adversities fit into His larger plan. then we'll certainly say, "It was worth it all!"** I would like to add that looking back on my 56 years of following Christ, **He has proven His promises true over and over. Not always in ways I had expected but true nevertheless.**

If you are disillusioned with life after rejecting God, one day you may find yourself on the 'street of broken dreams' as in the song *People Need the Lord*. Jesus will be waiting for you there to fill that empty place in your heart with His everlasting love. (Jeremiah 31:3) I would invite you to continue reading into the next section to see how even evil men cannot frustrate God's ultimate long-range plans. Let's close on a humorous note that follows.

### **Red Neck Version of Romans 8:28 on suffering**

A deacon began to pray, "Lord, I hate buttermilk. I hate lard and I ain't too crazy about white flour neither." The pastor thought the deacon had lost his mind but the deacon continued: "But after you mix 'em all up and bake 'em in a hot oven, I just LOVE those biscuits!" After we've come through the heat of trials, one day we'll LOVE what the Lord did through us as we learn it was all part of God's long range plans for our good, and also for others you may be unaware of!

### **GUARANTEED ANSWERS to ALL YOUR 'WHY GOD?' QUESTIONS**

**Short answer:** Repent of your sins, receive and begin following Jesus. One day in Heaven, He can reveal all His reasons we can often know nothing about in this life.

**Why God does not want us to know all His reasons now:**

From Romans 8:28, we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, and also for others in ways we may never find out in this life. In this Appendix and in Appendix C I've shared a few cases in which God's mysterious purposes were revealed through suffering and even evil. However, Hebrews 11:6 says, 'Without faith it's impossible to please Him.' This makes clear that *God does not intend us to understand the 'why' of all his divine operations in this life.* God has shown His limitless love towards us and He wants us to love Him in return by exercising our faith trusting Him.

*If we truly love God and trust Him with our eternal future, surely we can trust Him for answers to things of lesser importance until we arrive in Heaven! There, He can detail His reasons for everything if we ask. I feel however, that once we arrive in Heaven we'll be so overwhelmed with His glory, all our 'Why God?' questions will disappear.*

\*\*\*\*\*

## APPENDIX C More Answers to Hard Questions

### Hate God? Does Formal Logic Disprove God?

#### Oxford Professors' Evidence of God's Moral Law, Can Evil Men Frustrate God's Ultimate Plans? Did God Commit Genocide?

**Reminder:** Left-click on [bold blue underlined text](#) to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, and press ← (not <).

#### Do you Hate God Because You Think He's Weak, Unfair, or Even Evil?

SUPER-ANT is a tiny ant who's the strongest ant in the world and is convinced he knows more than all other ants. He has no concept of what a train even is, except it makes annoying sounds. He therefore hates the train. One day, he hears it coming, climbs up on the track, and with one tiny arm raised, says, "I, SUPER-ANT, have no idea who you really are, I don't know the future like you, or how you make things fit together according to your schedule but you're annoying, so I COMMAND YOU TO DISAPPEAR FOREVER!" We know that didn't end well. But what SUPER ANT didn't know was that the noise of the train scared the anteaters away who would've devoured their whole colony in an hour. Also all the ants feasted every day on food scraps tossed out the train windows but they were totally ignorant of any connection to the train or how much the train had blessed them! Following are some answers to frequent questions of atheists.

#### 'Silly Syllogism': Does Formal Logic Disprove God?

While I was a physics major in college, some fellow 'college geniuses' used this 'silly syllogism' of formal logic to disprove God and thus escape accountability to Him at the Judgment. We 'wise' 18-year-olds gathered in Neely's dorm room, smoking pipes and 'wisely' discussed the world's philosophies and religions, according to our great store of 'wisdom and knowledge'.

- God is loving and all-powerful.
- God permits evil and suffering.

-----  
Therefore, by the law of non-contradiction, God cannot exist! NYAA!

(A longer inductive version of this syllogism states that IF God is all-powerful, either He can't stop evil or He doesn't want to, making Him evil rather than good. A similar contradictory premise is also often presented about His being a loving God.)

*As Perry Mason, the TV defense lawyer would say in court, "Assumes facts not in evidence!" This syllogism assumes, incorrectly, that God is weak or evil, because He has no good reason (we know of) for allowing suffering and evil.*

*The fallacy that renders this syllogism untrue in the real world is that the missing premise is God's promise in Romans 8:28 explaining why He temporarily allows suffering and evil: 'And we know that ALL things work together (long term) for good ... ' While specifically it's only for those who love God, yet in the diagram below, we see that His love and mercy can also use 'all things', including suffering, evil, and even death, to draw the evil-doer to Himself. (This citation has another 'logical' proof we're only simulations in a computer being manipulated by superior creatures. <sup>85</sup>)*

#### WHY GOD PERMITS SUFFERING AND EVIL

Dr. Michael Schermer, one of America's most published atheistic author and a fierce debater, says, "Evil is the best evidence there is no loving God". Here's how I would answer.

We were created in God's image to be loved by Him and to love Him in return. Robots cannot love. Therefore God gave us free will to be as good or as evil as we choose. ('Loving God' is not just an emotion but eagerly allowing Him to direct our lives (by obedience) to reflect God's love, revealing Him to others as we 'let our light shine'. Matthew 5:16)

God offers us an eternity of joy, but for now, He *temporarily* allows suffering and evil to accomplish His short and long-term goals in us and in others. (Romans 8:28) One day, all tears will be wiped away and un-repentant evil mankind will be punished. (Revelation 21:8)

For those of you unfamiliar with the Bible here are the names of the books abbreviated below.  
Matt.=Matthew. Luk.=Luke, Jhn.=John, Rom.=Romans, 2 Cor.=2 Corinthians, Phl.=Philippians  
Heb.=Hebrews, 1 or 2 Pe.=1 or 2 Peter, Rev.=Revelation, Ps.=Psalms

## HOW GOD USES SUFFERING AND EVIL

↓

**Those who love God and show it by joyfully allowing Him to direct their lives. (2 Cor.5:14-21)**

↓

Suffering strengthens their faith.  
(1 Pet. 1:7)

↓

Suffering prepares them to minister to others who suffer. (2 Cor. 1:4)  
(Click [here](#) for Joni, a paraplegic example, and others in Appx. B.)

↓

The 'peace of God that passes understanding' sustains them during suffering or bereavement.  
(Phl. 4:6)

↓

They become '*living letters from Christ*' and greatly encourage others by their steadfastness in the faith during suffering or bereavement, trusting Rom. 8:28.  
(2 Cor. 3:3, Mat. 5:16)

↓

**END RESULT**

↑

**FULLNESS of JOY and PLEASURES FOREVER WITH GOD in HEAVEN:**

No more tears, suffering, or pain'.  
(Ps.16:11, Rev. 21:1-7)

↓

**Those who ignore, reject, or hate God's right to direct their lives and decide their own morality.**

↓

Suffering can be a WAKE-UP CALL:  
We must all die one day, then face God at the judgement.  
(Heb. 9:27, Rom. 8:28)

↓

Sudden deaths of loved ones in accidents or natural disasters are also powerful Heb. 9:27 calls.

↓

**Alcohol and drugs** are the usual '**crutches**' to cope with suffering, bereavement, and often an empty, meaningless life on the verge of suicide which I felt during my 11 years of atheism.

↓

**God's love and grace will wait for repentance**, but only for a limited time, while He tries repeatedly to draw them to Himself:

↓

**'God is not willing that any should perish but that all come to repentance.'** (2 Pet. 3:9)

↓

If God's loving offer of free forgiveness provided by Jesus Christ on the cross is refused?

↓

**END RESULT**

↓

**ETERNAL SUFFERING WITH SATAN**

in what Jesus called the 'Lake of Fire':  
'wailing, and gnashing of teeth.'  
(Matt. 13:42, Luk. 16, Rev 21:8)

I'm sure many readers are surprised to find themselves in the right column. Most of you feel you're not evil enough to deserve hell but remember, God's standard of 'good' is the perfection of Jesus Christ Himself. No one can meet God's standard to deserve Heaven by trying their best to be good (Rom. 3:23, Acts 17:31) But He loved us so much, He sent Jesus to pay the penalty for our sins by suffering on the cross, then rising from the dead on the third day to prove He, and only He, can open the doors of Heaven for us. (John. 3:16, Romans. 5:8, John. 14:6)

Refusing to receive God's 'cure' for your sins is like the terminally ill patient who refused to take the only cure offered by his doctor. Who's at fault when that patient dies?

We are not 'accidents of evolution'. Millions of 'missing links' proving evolution are still missing. <sup>38</sup> God ultimately created us to love and to love Him, with instructions (the Bible) on how to be happy in this life, despite tribulations, then to spend eternity with Him one day. *But we're all born with a 'disease' called sin: self-will to disobey Him.* Yes, even the Bible says there is pleasure in sin but it's only temporary and then brings down suffering upon us. (Look at millions of broken families from divorce and another two million in prisons plus some friends who 'lived the high life', for a while.

P.S. An unseen Satan laughs at how gullible those are in the right column. He gloats over having convinced them to disobey God. This helps his plan, hoping to overthrow God one day.  
(Click: [Appendix B](#) for more details related to the diagram above.)

### **Absolute Truth and Evidence of God's Moral Law**

The statement, "There is no absolute truth", seems to allow various cultures, religions, and individuals to decide for themselves what is true, what is good, and what is bad. Big problem! That IS a statement of absolute truth and thus contradicts itself. Formal logic therefore condemns it as invalid and untrue!

There IS, however, absolute truth! The standard of right and wrong declared by God, the Creator, backed by the existence of his handiwork, the complexity of all life in it, and the resurrection of Jesus Christ which mightily proclaimed his message was from God. (Romans 1:20, Romans 1:4)

For example, Bible translators have discovered that quite a few superstitious primitive cultures kill one of twin babies, believing it was conceived by an evil spirit. We call that superstition. God calls it murder. Here's the story of how an esteemed, but atheistic, professor found real truth.

**C. S. Lewis**, author of ***Mere Christianity***, was a professor at Oxford and a life-long atheist until he was in his 60s. Why? He felt evil excludes God who is supposed to be loving. However, Lewis asked himself, "How do we *measure* what is evil except against some standard?" He realized there had to be some universal standard against which we judge good and evil: the Moral Law of God. That morality, like the law of gravity, is not open to individual preference but IS absolute!

*Otherwise, the morals of compassionate Mother Teresa, who cared for dying beggars in India, are just as 'good' as the atrocities and holocaust of Adolph Hitler. Loving care is no better than cruelty, freedom is no better than slavery, caring is no better than being tortured and murdered. This totally blows away the philosophy (opinion) that morals are only relative with many different opinions of what's right or wrong is OK.*

Tell me, why would most everyone agree that it's morally wrong to torture a baby to death just for fun? Is it OK for your wife or husband to be 'relatively' sexually faithful? Laws require law-givers. There is a moral law; therefore there is a Moral Law Giver. *God's moral law is implanted in our consciences.* (Romans 2:15) If you're still unconvinced, go to this citation for eight reasons we know an absolute moral law exists. <sup>9K</sup> (By the way, Lewis' book was given to lawyer Chuck Colson by Tom Phillips, my former Raytheon CEO. It resulted in Chuck's transfor-

mation by Christ and later his founding of **Prison Fellowship** that helps thousands of prisoners find new lives in Christ. They have the lowest return to crime of any other program!)

(Click [here](#) to review the types of truth: Objective, Subjective, etc.)

### **How does the existence of evil prove God and reject atheism?**

Atheists misconstrue God's gift of a free will for everyone as freedom to decide what is good and what is evil! Eminent apologist and author, Dr. Frank Turek, spoke on evil at the 23<sup>rd</sup> National Apologetics Conference in 2016. He said, "The existence of evil does not disprove God at all. →It proves God and disproves atheism!"

**How?** Let me ask your *opinion*, "How long is an inch?" The National Bureau of Standards keeps a platinum bar as the 'absolute standard'. (Try hiring five carpenters to build you a house who all have different opinions of the length of an inch!) If God, our Creator exists, He has the right to set up the 'absolute standards' of good and evil for us.

**Does God exist?** Here's the simplest evidence I know. *Just as the existence and complexity of your house proves it had to have had an intelligent architect, seen or unseen, so God's existence is proven by the existence and super complexity of His creation of our universe and all life in it.*

God implanted in us the capacity to know Him and wrote His law into our consciences, so we are *without excuse to not believe in Him*. Because He loves us and wants us to love Him, He also gave us a free will to obey or disobey Him. (*Romans 2:15, Romans 1:20*) You might like to click [here](#) for philosopher Dr. Norman Geisler's book with eight reasons why we *know* there is an absolute moral law for everyone! **(More)**

Rejecting God makes it possible for anyone to become a cannibal serial killer like Jeffrey Dahmer who said, "What's wrong with what I did, I'm only an evolved animal!" Animals have no absolute standard of morality. Is that you? If so, then you could become another Jeffrey Dahmer, or worse, given the right circumstances. *There are no limits to the evil that can come from the hearts of those who reject God. "The fool has said in his heart, 'There is no God.' They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none who does good."* (Psalm 14:1)

Because the skeptic's definition of evil is subjective, where everyone decides where his particular 'evil' boundary is, God's absolute standard provides the only objective measure of what evil is, discrediting the very foundation of atheism: that no one needs God and all of us are free to decide how to live according to our own personal standards and life style. (Romans 14:1, Jeremiah 17:4) Click [here](#) to look at the 'world map on a cow' example'. It just created itself accidentally out of nothing? Not logical. Not true. No excuse! (Psalm 19:1, Romans 1:20)

**Ultimate proof God exists and therefore has the right to set moral standards for his creation?** Jesus' return from the dead was powerful testimony that not only God exists but validated all Jesus' teaching. (Romans 1:4). (Click [here](#).) God will punish all evil one day: Unless they repent, 'The wicked shall be turned into hell and all the nations who forget God.' (Psalm 9)

**"Why, I'm not 'wicked' or am I?" Surprise! Click [here!](#)**

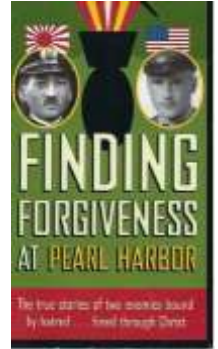
### **God's ultimate purposes will not be frustrated by evil men**

1. God planned for Jesus to teach us to know, love, and obey God, and to be the Savior of the world. However, Jesus was vilified, tortured, and killed by evil men. Jesus was not weak. God did not fail. Jesus came as God's sacrifice for our sins, prophesied over 700 years in advance. (Isaiah 53) Click [here](#) for how another prophecy computed His first coming to an accuracy within only two days after four and a half centuries, based on NASA astronomical data! Later, God demonstrated His mighty power to the world by raising Jesus from the dead. This proved that all Jesus claimed and taught was true for

all generations to come. (Matthew 28, Romans 1:4)

2. God planned for Moses to deliver His people from years of slavery. However, Moses lost his temper and used his free will to kill a cruel Egyptian slave master. Then Moses was a fugitive in the desert for the next 40 years. God used that to humble and train him to lead over three million of his countrymen out of 430 years of slavery in Egypt.
3. God planned for America to be a separate nation with a fresh start of righteousness as a Judeo-Christian nation. He allowed British tyranny to increase to the point that it sparked our revolution in 1776.
4. God planned that Sergeant Jacob DeShazer's plane would be shot down during World War II so that his intense hatred of the Japanese could be transformed into enough love to attend Bible school after the war and to return to Japan as a missionary!

Jake DeShazar had been a bombardier with the historic Doolittle raid of 1942. His plane, *Bat out of Hell*, ran out of fuel after the raid and he was captured. Several of the crew were shot and he spent 40 cruel months in a Japanese prison camp. Thirty four of those months were endured in even more cruel solitary confinement where he was tortured as a war criminal. This drove many POWs stark, raving mad. However it was in this POW camp that rebellious, hate-filled DeShazar came to the end of himself.



His captors passed around captured English books every three weeks to provide a privilege they could take away as punishment. After two years, Jake exchanged his *David Copperfield* for a tattered Bible. Its truths were proven to him by a mountain of fulfilled prophecies. He received Christ and Christ-like love. His bitter hatred of the Japanese was replaced by a loving desire to reconcile them to Christ. Incredibly, he began by forgiving, then showing kindness to his cruel guards just as Jesus had forgiven and shown love to him. Later, at least one guard came to Christ and became a life-long friend.

God had also planned to use DeShazar to transform the life of Japanese Navy pilot Commander Mitsuo Fuchida, leader of the planes that bombed Pearl Harbor in 1941. Fuchida would eventually preach the gospel in Asia with DeShazar and even in America with Billy Graham! Here's the exciting story.

After the war Fuchida learned from a returning Japanese prisoner that, surprisingly, the Americans had treated him very well, just the opposite of how the Japanese had treated their prisoners. Not only that but a young girl visited the camp regularly to help care for the Japanese prisoners, especially the sick. Even more astounding to Fuchida, was the fact that her missionary parents serving in the Philippines had prayed for forgiveness for their Japanese executioners before their beheading. They had followed Jesus' example at His crucifixion demonstrating God's love, even for sinners! Fuchida could not understand such 'enemy-forgiving' love and had never heard of returning good for evil in his Japanese culture. Shocked to the core, he asked, "[Where did mankind find such love?](#)"

One day, General MacArthur, the military governor of post-war Japan, summoned ex-captain Fuchida. At a railway station on the way, Fuchida received a copy of DeShazar's testimony, *I was a Prisoner of the Japanese*. This eventually led to Fuchida's conversion as well as later reaching 30 million people in 20 countries. Later, DeShazar and Fuchida began to preach together in Japan. The 30 churches DeShazar and Fuchida founded in Japan became 'centers of reconciliation', first with God and then with their former enemies. Fuchida even preached to the Japanese in America and toured with Billy Graham and other evangelistic organizations.

Read more exciting stories about how Fuchida narrowly escaped death several times at this citation. <sup>25</sup> On one occasion at Midway, Fuchida just had an appendectomy when his ship was hit by a bomb which blew him from his hospital bed through the side of the ship into the ocean, breaking both legs! Years later, Later, Fuchida realized that God had, by His grace, preserved him to eventually preach the gospel to his Japanese countrymen as well as to his former American enemies after the war.

*(The book and movie **Unbroken** tells the amazing story of another who suffered terrible torture during World War II but forgave his tormentors. Captain Louis Zamperini was also shot down and spent nearly a month in a life raft before being captured by the Japanese. He was then tortured for several years. After the war, his life was a drunken mess. That is, until he found Christ at a Billy Graham Crusade. His life was wonderfully changed and he returned to Japan to forgive his cruel Japanese tormentors and present Christ! The movie leaves that out so watch the rest of the story (or order the DVD) at: <http://billygraham.org/video/captured-by-grace/>. <sup>AA</sup>)*

**NOTE:** After World War II, General MacArthur called for thousands of missionaries to go to Japan to share the gospel. Among the many missionaries who responded was Pastor Lee Shelley, a former battleship sailor, who trained seven others as missionaries and led them to Japan. In 1957, Shelley founded the mission of which we have been members for 52+ years, *Christians in Action Missions, International*. <https://www.cinami.org>

5. God planned for **Josh McDowell** to become a powerful minister to young people. Not likely. He suffered as a child at the hands of a cruel, alcoholic, abusive father and also an abusive cousin. This so totally convinced Josh there was no God that he became a very adamant and outspoken atheist by the time he entered college. He delighted in ridiculing Christians, calling their belief 'garbage'. When seriously challenged, he left college to assemble proof for his book proving Christianity was all a fake. He delighted in showing Christians how stupid they were. However, the evidence convinced him there was indeed a God. Not only that, but God called him into a powerful ministry to young people through Campus Crusade. He went on to write many Christian leaflets and books. See this citation for more of Josh and his drunken father's transformation. <sup>13B</sup>

### **All Evil-Doers Will Eventually be Punished.**

God promises eternal justice when all un-repentant evil doers will be cast into the eternal lake of fire. Only in hell could their punishment truly be matched to their crimes and sins. If you don't know Christ, be aware that even one unforgiven lie is a sin against God. So are many other sins, including dishonoring Him by using God's or Jesus' name in vain including the ever increasing use of OMG in order to spice up your conversation. We may also add pronouncing curses on someone or some thing using the 'D...' word. It doesn't matter if you've forgotten your old sins. They're still written in God's book if you've never come to Jesus. (Revelation 20:12-15) While you won't suffer as much as Hitler or Stalin, your punishment will still be eternal and horrible. Settle your account with God today so you do not appear at this judgment. (Revelation 21:8)

**Keep in mind that God doesn't forgive sinners who do not intend to follow Christ.  
You can't fool Him!**

When I was seeking truth years ago, I wrestled a lot with the question of why God allowed evil. Not understanding everything did not stop me from surrendering my life to God. Instead of putting God on trial, I realized that as a sinner I'd already been tried and convicted! So I figured it was much more important to receive His forgiveness and meet Him in Heaven one day where He will answer all questions. These resources present more about 'If God, why evil?' <sup>9E, 22B</sup>

**Did God Commit Genocide?  
How could I love a God who committed Genocide?**



**Wrong word!** Genocide is committed by evil (human) nations who have no right to do so. The correct word here is God's justice! Humans have no ultimate right to exterminate other nations or races. God, on the other hand, originally created the human race, is therefore sovereign, and therefore has the ultimate right to do what He thinks best. A surgeon cuts out invasive cancer lest its 'evil' spread and eventually kill you. He has the right, and duty, to cut out the cancer before it kills you.

After many, many years of patience God was about to destroy the vile wicked cities of Sodom and Gomorra. However, Abraham interceded and asked God to spare them if he could find 50 righteous people. He was unable to find even one so God had to destroy them, lest their wickedness spread. By contrast, God's threat to destroy Nineveh resulted in the repentance of the whole city which was then spared because they turned from evil to God as the result of Jonah's preaching.

However, the Canaanites, even after centuries of God's patience, refused to repent, became intolerably evil, and were rapidly spreading their evil to other nations. For centuries, God tried every way to encourage them to repent but they continued to grow more evil. One day God said, **"Enough! Lest their evil continue to spread throughout the whole earth, they must be eliminated."** That was not genocide. It was justice and 'repair' that God alone has the ultimate right to do. It cannot therefore (hatefully) be called genocide.



God's nature is like a coin with two sides. On the one side He has demonstrated He is a God of love, showing grace, patience, and compassion. (John 3:16) The other side is absolute, fearful, and certain justice that cannot tolerate sin. (Revelation 21:8) If you cannot believe in a God who executes justice, your 'god' is one you created to serve instead of vice-versa. He doesn't exist, except in your imagination.

Let's look now at the Canaanite religion to see if there were any victims who needed justice and if their worship was really all that bad. Just how evil do you think the Canaanites were?

Only one example was their worship of Molech, shown in the picture. It included unspeakable immorality practiced as an act of 'worship'. Babies born of this immorality were burned alive: **'passed through the fire'** to Molech, in the idol's red-hot arms. Particularly devout worshippers even sacrificed their older live children in the same way.



God had appointed Israel to be His light to the heathen nations around them. He knew that if Israel became corrupted by the Canaanites, His name would be disgraced and no different from the idolatry so prevalent. He would also have had to cast Israel into hell along with the Canaanites. Just as a surgeon must cut out your cancer before it kills you, God called Israel, His chosen nation, to completely exterminate the Canaanites. Unfortunately, Israel failed. Vast regions of Canaan were untouched and sure enough, just as God had predicted, their evil practices spread to God's people in Israel. After many years waiting for Israel's repentance, God brought terrible judgment by allowing them to suffer under the cruel Assyrian and Babylonian captivities. After 70 years of cruel abuse in Babylon, Israel repented and God delivered them.

Closer to home, over **61 million babies have been 'offered'** upon the 'altars of convenience' in America since the Roe vs Wade abortion decision of 1973— 61 million who could've become productive businessmen, taxpayers, soldiers, etc. Dr. Richard Land, of the Southern Evangelical Seminary in Charlotte, NC, stated that around 41% of abortions are single women, 99% from

fornication with only 1% for rape. See <http://www.numberofabortions.com>.

Declaring a fetus as 'just a clump of cells' is heard loud and often, but it is wrong. We are all 'just a clump of cells'! *A fetus has a beating heart at only six weeks!* Just as I restrain myself from shooting you dead, you'll probably be alive tomorrow. If you just let that fetus alone, barring the unforeseen, in a few months it will be born as what it was all the time: a human being! (If the fetus threatens the life of the mother, sometimes hard decisions must be made.) Just as the Canaanites had done, aborted babies are also burned as medical waste. Some are sold for body parts. Unless revival sweeps America, how can we hope to escape God's eventual judgment for this?

I can understand why you may wonder why God does some things you feel are not consistent with a loving God. That's because we can't know God's long-term plans for the future, not only for us and our acquaintances, but often in the lives of people we may not even know. One thing is clear. He demonstrated His love for us through Jesus to make the way for an eternity of happiness. (John 3:16) So just trust Him a little longer, follow Him, and one day in Heaven you can ask Him all your questions. However, if you think you can escape your accountability to God by accusing Him of being evil, it won't fly.

In comparison to God, we are only a tiny fruit fly, whose miniscule brain can only be seen through a microscope. Yet some of us are sitting in judgment on a massive super-computer representing God. The fly is not a software engineer. The fly doesn't even have a way to learn about what computers do or how. Those who think they can outsmart God and escape the judgment are just arrogantly deceiving themselves. At the same time, they don't realize they're also only a puppet being jerked around by Satan. By the way, accusing God of being evil, or even implying it, is called blasphemy. He takes that very seriously!

America was originally founded on the basis of recognizing and obeying God. In our founding documents we read that all our rights under government are bestowed upon us by our Creator. Atheists don't believe in a creator but still claim their 'rights'.

Our nation has gone off its rails upon which it was uniquely founded. The government has arrogantly usurped God's powers to legalize rights which God calls sin, like gambling, pornography, abortion, legalized marijuana, and worse. (Romans 1) Pray for revival. Unless there is a major turn-around, we will be stomped under the heels of a cruel conqueror until we repent. We have centuries of examples in the Old Testament of how God used this last resort to bring nations back to Him. We already know who that 'cruel conqueror' could be. Sadly, many misguided Americans are joining them. God is warning us now with the longest war of our history which has just resumed with a vengeance by the most vicious, evil, and dedicated enemy we've ever known, ISIS.

We must all do our part to bring our nation back to 'one nation, under God'. (You who are accusing God of evil, just remember that if you've ever disobeyed God, with perhaps even a single lie, then you too are under God's wrath until you repent. (Romans 1:18)

\*\*\*\*\*

## **APPENDIX D BENEFITS of ATHEISM vs CHRISTIANITY**

**Reminder:** Left-click on **[bold blue underlined text](#)** to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, and press ← (not <).

### **The 'Benefits' of Atheism**

Imagine me now, before finding Christ, as an 'atheist missionary' ministering in a refugee camp to those who've lost everything, including loved ones. This would be the real message of atheism: freedom from God but also freedom from hope.

"I've come to free **you** from God's domination and to give **you** a new life of total freedom! If **you** can get away with it, **you** can do anything **you** want.

No more God watching over **your** shoulder at **your** secret sins. Adopt a 'binary attitude': **you're** number one, everyone else is zero. Only what **you** want counts. If others get hurt, well that's just too, too bad. Science has 'proved' we're only evolved animals so there is no absolute right or wrong and no accountability to some 'mythical god'.

The upside to atheism is that after **you** die and rot, there's nothing more! So those who murdered **your** family will not suffer as **you** have. Since there's no afterlife, there is no true justice to reward the good you've done or to punish those who've hurt you and your family. Therefore, hate **your** enemies and seek **your** own ten-fold vengeance now. (Of course **your** enemies' friends will then come after **you** and **your** family, but the main thing about vengeance is that it makes **YOU** feel good.)

Unfortunately there is one downside of atheism. Since **you're** only a random accident of evolution, **your** miserable life has been as totally meaningless as the bug **you** just squashed. But then, what does that matter?

What does anything matter except **your** pleasure of the moment?"

Thus would end my 'missionary atheists' sermon, backed up by evolution. Does anyone believe that the world would be a happier and more peaceful one by following this 'religion'?

### **The Benefits of Christianity**

Before I got to know Christ, I subscribed to the cliché, 'Christians are so heavenly minded they're no earthly good' and that the 'god thing', if true, was just *'pie in the sky for after you die'*. However, over the centuries, those transformed by Christ have greatly benefited mankind. These include the founders of the Red Cross and abolitionists who battled slavery in both America and in England. The latter includes John Newton, former slave-trader who became a minister, fought slavery, and later wrote the hymn *Amazing Grace*. Franklin Graham founded the mega-ministry *Samaritan's Purse* which is saving millions from starvation after wars and natural disasters all over the world in Christ's name. You may also add *World Vision*, and *Doctors without Borders* who fought Ebola in Africa.

Others include Chuck Colson, a lawyer sentenced to federal prison during the Nixon Watergate scandal. Colson came to Christ through Tom Phillips, former CEO of Raytheon, my former employer. Phillips first witnessed to Colson personally, then gave him a copy of C. S. Lewis' ***Mere Christianity***. Lewis was an esteemed professor at Oxford University who was atheistic until well into his 60s. His book, ***Surprised by Joy***, relates his encounter with Christ. Colson later founded the *Prison Fellowship* which, through the power of Christ, continues to transform many criminals into honest, God-loving, citizens. <sup>2</sup>

Every day on radio, you may hear testimonies from former drunks, addicts, and even criminals whose lives were transformed by the power of the resurrected Christ. Tune into the dramatized *Unshackled* radio broadcast on BBN Radio. <sup>4</sup> Harry Lauder, the 19<sup>th</sup> century Scottish preacher said that **he could tell where the lamplighter had been by the trail of light he left behind**. Christ is the **heavenly lamplighter**. Everywhere He goes, He brings hope, dispels the midnight gloom of sin and despair, and lights the way for Himself for others.

The 'god-thing' brought the power of Christ far into a remote Peruvian jungle to reach Chief Tariri, at right, as well as many of his headhunting tribe. He even evangelized neighboring headhunting tribes. The gospel stopped generations of murder, replacing it with Christian love. An evil witch doctor invoked the *Spirit of the Anaconda*, their most powerful spirit, to kill Wycliffe Bible translator Lorrie Anderson. Sure enough, she was soon attacked and bitten six times by a 16-foot anaconda who attempted to pull her out of her canoe. (Anacondas have around 100 tiny teeth.) Though covered with blood, Lorrie miraculously escaped. No one else had ever survived an anaconda attack.



This showed Chief Tariri that Lorrie's God was more powerful than their most powerful evil spirit. This was his first step towards Christ. The anaconda attack: a Romans 8:28 '**Short-term-bad, Long-term-good**', orchestrated by the Lord. Decades after coming to Christ, this smile still radiates his miraculous transformation from evil killer to a kindly Christian missionary to nearby headhunting villages! <sup>3</sup>

We recently acquired *SATAN DEFEATED*, a DVD of Lorrie and Chief Tariri sharing their amazing experiences on TV. They thrilled 30 million viewers in 1957 on Ralph Edward's TV show, *This is Your Life*. The main guest on the show was Rachael Saint, missionary to the vicious Auca. One of the five martyrs killed by the Aucas was Jim Elliot. He encouraged my going into missions with, "He is no fool to give that which he cannot keep to gain that which he cannot lose!"

In 2014, Africa suffered the largest Ebola outbreak in history. Who were the first to give their skills, and many their very lives, to help them? Missionary doctors and nurses showing the love and compassion of Christ by risking their lives to help save others.

### **What Christians Are Missing by Not Being Atheists**

***Christians are missing these 'benefits' of a lifetime of atheism proclaimed by these dying words of a few famous atheists.***

"I am abandoned by God and man ... I shall go to hell!" Voltaire, world-famous atheist.  
(Some years after Voltaire's death his home was occupied by the British Bible Society.)

"I would give worlds, if I had them, that the 'Age of Reason' had never been published.  
Oh, God, save me; for I am at the edge of hell alone ..." Thomas Paine, atheist author.

"I am as good as without hope, a sad old man gazing into the final chasm."  
Thomas Carlyle, Scottish philosopher.

"I know I am lost forever! Oh, that fire! Oh, the insufferable pangs of hell!"  
Sir Francis Newport, British skeptic, First Earl of Bradford.

**After this life, Christians are missing an eternity of suffering in what Jesus called 'the furnace of fire'. Read about a man who went there in Luke 16.**

### **Blessings Atheists are Missing by Not Being Christians**

Jeremiah 29:11-13 " ...thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope ... "

Jeremiah 31:3 " ...Yes, I have loved you with an everlasting love; Therefore with loving kindness I have drawn you ... "

Psalms 16:11 "...I will show you the path of life; fullness of joy; pleasures forevermore..."

Ephesians 3:16-18 " ...able to comprehend with all the saints what is the width and

length and depth and height — to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge; ... "

Romans 8:28 " ...all things work together for good to those who love God ... "

Philippians 4:6-7 " ...the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus".

Hebrews 6:19 " ...hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast ... "

John 14:2-3 " ...In My Father's house are many mansions ... I (Jesus) will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also."

Deuteronomy 33:27 "The eternal God is your refuge and underneath are the everlasting arms ..."

Two scientist's perspectives:

**"Heaven is for people afraid of the dark."** –Stephen Hawking, renowned cosmologist.

**"Atheism is for people afraid of the light."** –John Lennox, noteworthy math prof.

(Here's Dr. Lennox' quote from the movie, **God's Not Dead:**

**"Nonsense spoken by famous people is still nonsense!"**)

**After this life, atheists are missing an eternity of being loved by God and rejoicing with Jesus in Heaven one day.** Here are 21 more things atheists and skeptics are missing: Click [here](#) for **Christ's Bell**. Oh, one more 'downer' for being an atheist. Is an atheist's insurance invalid for natural disasters deemed Acts of God?

\*\*\*\*\*

## **APPENDIX E: Discovering, Following, and Maturing in Christ**

### **Why Should We Even Care about God**

#### **KNOW You're Going to Heaven One Day, Though No One Deserves it!**

Left-click on **bold blue underlined text** to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, press ← (not <).

#### **How to Mature in Christ: The Christian Soldier Model**

#### **Christian Soldiers Help Bring the Spiritually Dead Back to Life!**

#### **Why Should We Even Care about God?**

- 1. Because God loves us, and wants us to enjoy eternity with Him one day!**  
He promises 'Fullness of joy and pleasures forevermore!' (Psalm 16:11, John 3:16) We have abundant scientific evidence that God exists, the Bible is His word, and the resurrection of Jesus Christ on the third day validates them all, excluding all other religions.(Romans 1:4, John 14:6)
- 2. Because you and I, and everyone else, will die and face God. No do-overs, no purgatory, no reincarnation: 'Appointed once to die and after that the judgement.'**  
(Hebrews 9:27) A CBS news program stated that around **40,000 people were killed by drunk drivers in only a single year**. How many of them expected to die with no warning? How many were prepared to meet God? How about you?
- 3. Because none of us can ever become good enough to deserve heaven.**  
**Few of us think we're wicked or evil enough to deserve hell.** However, **none of us is good enough to deserve Heaven either for two reasons.** First: We'll be judged by God's standards: against the perfection of Jesus Christ Himself, not by how good we've tried to be. SCARY! (Acts 17:31) Second: Because we've all sinned (disobeyed God's commandments as amplified by Jesus in Matthew 5, 6, 7, and Romans 3:23) **The worst sin is leaving God out of your life**, making lust, pleasure, success, or power as your 'gods', thereby breaking the First

Commandment. This becomes the fountain head of all the sins that control your life.

4. **Because the furnace of fire (hell) is real!** *"I am tormented in this flame."* (Luke 16:19-24) Jesus used names here, not 'a certain man' so it's not a parable or a metaphor. Comment: Since hell is described other places as a place of darkness, I think the flames are black. They're certainly not like earthly fire because they're eternal and our eternal souls suffer, not physical bodies.
5. **Because if Jesus is not Lord of your life, you've 'sold your soul' for something else:** Jesus said you can actually *sell your soul*: "For what profit is it to a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul?" (Matthew 16:26) Don't waste your life! <sup>P</sup>
6. **Because Jesus can return at any time!** Scripture teaches Jesus will unexpectedly return with the clouds to take His own directly to Heaven. (Matthew 24) When? Prophecy affirms that can be any time after the Jews returned to their own nation of Israel which occurred in 1948, so *He could even come today!* Are you ready or will you be left behind to suffer God's wrath during the prophesied tribulation?
7. **Because delaying a decision for Christ will be hazardous to your future!** Continuing to disobey Christ means you ARE ALREADY IN on of Satan's attractive traps. Click [here](#). Ugly consequences ahead, both now and in your eternal future.

*The longer you leave Christ out of your life, the more resistant you will become to His message. Some medical condition or accident may then make you unable to even understand the God's plan for making it to Heaven. Two examples: my cardiologist hit with early dementia and my Dad, an award-winning surgeon. **Don't delay!***

If God's Holy Spirit has convinced you that you need to receive Christ, click [here](#) for how I, as a former atheist, received Him, His forgiveness, and a glorious future in Heaven. If not, [here's more](#).

\*\*\*\*\*

### **Receive Jesus as Your Lord and Savior Today!**

You've been thinking about this but keep putting it off? A brave climber rappelled down a remote, steep cliff. After many pendulum-like swings, he landed in a deeply recessed cave. *Disaster!* He tied a rock to the end of the rope but it slipped and swung way back out beyond his reach. *He knew if he didn't grab the rope on its next swing back, he'd be trapped and eventually die a long, slow death all alone.* Because He loves us. God gives numerous opportunities to accept or reject Him. We never know which will be the last! **Today** may be your last chance!



This book is God reaching out to you once more. You may never be as tender towards Christ as you are right now. Do you watch the TV news? Then you know that a drunk driver or a robber's bullet may end your life unexpectedly at any time. No more chances after that. **'Now is the day of salvation!'** (Hebrews 9:27-28, 2 Corinthians 6:2)

Yesterday, Pastor Fogarty ended his sermon with, "Come! Experience the wonder of walking **hand-in-hand with Christ!**" If you've never yet received our Lord into your life, you may [click here](#) to return to Chapter 4 and read the details of how I received Christ.

### **HOW TO MATURE IN CHRIST**

The Bible is so important to our maturing in Christ, a 'bird's-eye-view' may be very helpful to begin with. *Yes, men did physically 'write down' the words of the Bible, but with the exception*

*of recording many historical events, God dictated the message through His Holy Spirit just as executives dictate their letters to a secretary or assistant who physically writes the letter. (2 Peter 1:21) You may click [here](#) to jump to some proofs the Bible is truly God's word.*

The overall objective of the Bible is to show man how to know God and enjoy a joyful eternity being loved by Him forever in Heaven. (Psalm 16:11) That's possible only through Jesus Christ who proved He was the only one sent by God by his resurrection from the dead on the third day and appearing alive over the next 40 days. No other religious founder proved he had been sent by God in this way. Therefore, all other religions and ways to Heaven are excluded. (Romans 1:4, John 14:6) Lord, liar, or lunatic? Look at the evidence [here](#).

The Bible is divided into the Old and New Testaments. A 'testament' (or 'will') is a document with instructions to be carried out after the testator's death or disannulment.

The Old Testament (originally the Jewish Tenakh) detailed God's first covenant with man, the *Covenant of Law*. God made this covenant only with the Jews through Moses after liberating them from 450 years of slavery in Egypt. He gave them the 10 Commandments, a very extensive set of laws about food, etc. and a system of animal sacrifices once a year to forgive sins. You'd think their gratitude for liberation from slavery would be enough to remain faithful. It wasn't. After a while, they would fall back into idolatry (usually of a sexual nature), be punished, repent, then before long fall back into the same cycle over and over. Mankind's best people had failed to obey God's covenant.

**The New Testament:** After Israel failed to live up to their part of the covenant, God disannulled the Covenant of Law. Instead of giving up on all of us, God made a new covenant built not on the faithfulness of men, but on the His promises, the sacrifice of his own Son for our sins, and upon His love and grace. (Jeremiah 31:31, Ephesians 2:8,9). *This new Covenant of Grace, was mediated by Jesus Christ (a Jew) and was available to both Jew and Gentile.* (Hebrews 9:15) The whole book of Hebrews is an excellent and detailed exposition of this covenant and a good study Bible will detail where the Old Testament prophecies of its details were made.

No, the Ten Commandments were not thrown out with the Old Covenant. They are not only repeated in various locations in the New Testament but now include disobedience in thought as well as in deed. (Matthew 5:28 is only one example.) You'll find four gospels, eye-witness accounts of Jesus' ministry, a history of the first church in Acts, and a number of epistles (divinely inspired letters of instructions to new churches. Revelation ends the New Testament with a series of John's visions of the last days.

At any time, Jesus will take His own out of the world just before a seven-year tribulation when God pours out His wrath upon evil-doers. (Are YOU ready?) After that, He will descend to earth to save Israel and reign for 1,000 years. Revelation tells what happens next, which includes a special mission for 144,000 Jews. (Revelation 7 and 14)

NOTE: Don't be deceived, Jehovah's Witnesses say they will be the 144,000 but Scripture specifies 12,000 each from the 12 tribes of Israel.

## The Christian Soldier Model

We should be very grateful for the Roman soldiers who guarded Jesus' tomb after His crucifixion. They proved Jesus' disciples could not have stolen His body but that Jesus did indeed validate His ministry by rising from the dead, thereby declaring with power He was the only one sent from God with God's message. (Romans 1:4) That was doubly validated by His many appearances over 40 days afterwards. Not only that, but He Himself had prophesied He would rise from the dead on the third day after being killed! Here are some applications I've made in my own life from the Roman soldier's example in Ephesians 6.



### PRIMARY MISSION: TO RESURRECT THE SPIRITUALLY DEAD!

**We 'enlist' when** we realize we're lost sinners, repent, receive Christ's forgiveness, then give Him command of our lives and futures. *Christian soldiers lovingly preach a risen Christ to help build His kingdom by resurrecting the spiritually dead to new life in Christ:*

*"But God, who is rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead in trespasses (sins), made us alive together with Christ (by grace you have been saved), and raised us up together, and made us sit together in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, not of works, lest anyone should boast."* (Ephesians 2:4-9)

Romans 12:1 presents our 'enlistment' as a '*decisive dedication*' of our bodies. Since our degree of commitment determines the degree to which the Holy Spirit can guide us, we would highly recommend you read Chapter 15 of Wesley Duewel's, **Let God Guide your Day.** <sup>B</sup>

'Decisive dedication' may be described by the three 'B's:

**Be committed. Be obedient. Be guided!** (Proverbs 3:5-6)

### Christian soldiers are under orders!

God is our commander-in-chief, Jesus is the commanding general, and the Holy Spirit is His field commander. The Bible is our 'field manual' that inspires, instructs, and encourages us.

*No, we cannot live the Christian life on our own. We must ask Christ to begin living His life through us! That will require daily refreshment and strengthening you can only get from daily time with Him in His 'field manual'. May I recommend the best (small), daily devotion book I've ever used: **Jesus Today**. It will help you grow into the '*masterpiece of His workmanship*' He intended you to be in Ephesians 2:10. <sup>111</sup> No, you will also never become perfect but walking with Christ is a daily journey of small steps. '*Yard by yard is hard but inch by inch is a cinch!*'*

**"Be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might!"** (Ephesians 6:10) Therefore, we are not ashamed of the testimony of our Lord but courageously proclaim it with authority and power! (2 Timothy 1:8, Romans 1:4)

Christian soldiers are endowed with '**Holy courage born of faith**' by God's Holy Spirit! Memorize the ageless hymn, *Onward Christian Soldiers*. God prepares us for anything '*with the cross of Jesus going on before*': "I am ready for anything and equal to anything through Him who infuses inner strength into me. That is, I am sufficient in Christ's sufficiency! (Philippians 4:13, AMP) and "Lo I am with you always, even unto the end of the world." (Matthew 28:18-20)

### Christian soldiers stay together

There's a good reason why Christians are exhorted to '**not forsake the assembling of yourselves together.**' (Hebrews 10:25) *Because of our sinful society, consider yourself always in enemy*



*territory, Satan's country. Without the church's reinforcement and 'covering fire' of prayer and encouragement you will soon be overcome. After I received Christ I really wanted to be with God's people at church, Bible studies, men's breakfasts, etc., because there I found the acceptance and encouragement needed to go the long haul with Christ.*

**"You don't have to go to church"**, you say? If you're grateful to Jesus for what He's done for you, then you'd want to! This excuse is often a symptom that you are not yet actually fully committed to follow Christ. Don't be like Sergeant Bergdahl we saw on TV not long ago. While in Afghanistan, he felt he didn't need his platoon any longer. He wandered away and was quickly captured. He spent years in enemy prisons before our government traded several evil terrorists for his release, who quickly got back into action killing more American soldiers.

*Like a lion, Satan is continually looking for those whom he may devour and he specializes in picking off lone wolves – those who feel they don't need their church family any more or who, like a bee without a hive, just flit here and there, making acquaintances but not deep friends who can provide spiritual help and support! (1 Peter 5:8)*

Neglecting church is also like a married person saying, **"Yes, I love you, I'm grateful you married me, but I don't want to live with you!"** Also, please realize that the church is Christ's body in action on earth. Our primary motivation should not be to just hear an interesting sermon but to glean what we can apply to our lives and to help others. It's important, to reach out and take the initiative to get to know people at church. Look for ways to encourage, help, and bless them. You will thereby help fulfill one of the purposes of the church, to encourage and build up one another so that the church can take Christ's message to the world more effectively. (Don't forget to encourage your pastor as well!)

**Bored?** Try another church! Also, don't be put off by a few you feel aren't real Christians because there are, and will always be, both seekers and hypocrites in church. Be careful about judging. There will be new babes in the Lord as well as fellow Christians in all different stages of growth. Double-check whatever the pastor teaches against Scripture since there are also many false teachers out there whom Jesus warns us about. (Click [here](#) for more on churches.)

**CHRISTIAN SOLDIERS ALWAYS WEAR THEIR ARMOR**  
**The Helmet of Salvation: Maintains daily communications with HQ**  
**DAILY 'STAFF MEETING' WITH THE LORD!**

I begin and end each day with a brief time reading the Bible, mainly in the New Testament, and praying. I thank God before each meal. Tuning in to Christian radio at odd moments, like during my morning and evening shaves and while walking always gives me a spiritual boost. You'll find a world-wide 24/7 schedule at: <https://bnn1.bnnradio.org/>. Bible reading, prayer, and these programs continue to be my mainstay, allowing the Holy Spirit to work in my life these 56+ years. For details on the 'daily staff meeting' to stay strong in the Lord, click [here](#).

**Shield of Faith: Protects against Satan's 'fiery darts'.**

Satan continually tries to sabotage God's work by throwing 'fiery darts' of doubt and temptations at us through **distractions, deceit, and discouragement**. What if a soldier told his commander, **"I just don't 'feel' like fighting the enemy today"**. Our feelings can be as changeable as the storm-tossed sea. Sometimes we may even consider just giving up. If so, do what Christ did in Matthew 4. When all alone in the desert where no one else would know if He failed, Jesus was tempted by Satan himself for 40 days, He got victory by countering each temptation with God's powerful word from Scripture. That was His robust shield to repel spiritual attacks. Though the spiritual sword (God's word) is our primary offensive weapon, how many TV documentaries have we seen in which a warrior knocks his enemy down with a thrust of his shield? **"For the Word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the**

division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart." (Hebrews 4:12)

Let's remember that following Christ is not just a matter of our 'holding on' but realizing that at the same time Christ is holding us. In Philippians 1:6 He promises to complete the work He has started in us. Together we can stand strong! Recall the *Fact-Faith-Feelings train* in Chapter 4? *The 'Fact' engine must pull the train, not the 'Feelings' caboose. Feelings can change like the wind. Click [here](#). I love the chorus, He's Still Workin' on Me, especially this line in the chorus, "Don't judge me yet, there's an un-finished part!" <sup>ii</sup> How do we keep our faith strong?*

Daily drills with our shield of faith: the Word of God! (Romans 10:17)

### **Breastplate of righteousness: Draws others to Christ, defends against accusations of 'hypocrite'**

We should be motivated by GRATITUDE for Christ's forgiveness and promise of eternal life in Heaven. (2 Corinthians 5:14-15) The result is found in Colossians 3: "If then you were raised with Christ (from spiritual death), seek those things which are above." That means we begin to obey Him more and more closely. (*No, we don't become instantly perfect, but true repentance means reversing our life's direction to begin following Jesus.*)

One example I've previously mentioned in Chapter 2 is Marine Corporal Stevens' life which drew me towards Christ. We too are being watched by others who do not know God. Some are just waiting to hurl accusations of 'hypocrite' at us, believing that justifies their continuing spiritual rebellion. Live so they see Christ in us! Your faithful Christian life may eventually help in a major way to draw someone else to Christ. You may not even know that until he or she greets you in Heaven one day. For me, Corporal Stevens, who pointed me to Christ over 63 years ago, is still unaware that his Christian response to persecution was my first evidence there might be a God!

As a result, I began to avoid too close an association with ungodly friends that put pressure on me to conform to their ungodly standards. I avoided going to places where I knew I would be bombarded with temptations. I also began to avoid sinful literature and certain movies or TV programs that dishonored God or made sin and immorality into something 'everyone is doing' with no bad consequences. Even worse, immorality is twisted into 'harmless' jokes that make gross sin into just something to laugh about. Click [here](#) for how God may begin working in your life to reveal areas you may not realize He wants you to work on.

### **Belt of truth: God's word unmask Satan's lies.**

Scripture says Satan was a liar from the beginning. Only God's word can keep us from being deceived by so many of Satan's lies and half-truths so common in our society. (I would inject at this point that religion has not been the cause of most of this world's wars and suffering as I hear so often. (Click [here](#)) Satan's lies were the very foundations of Nazism, Communism, and even of some well-meaning but misguided religions. (David Koresh's Branch Davidians fire in Waco, Texas and Jim Jones' forcing 900 followers to drink poison Kool-Aid are only two.)

One of the most widely accepted lies of Satan in America today is '[your body belongs to you so you can do whatever you want with it](#)'. **Lie!** *Your body belongs to God.* We're only temporary stewards. (1 Corinthians 6:17-20) (*Humorous note: Our North Carolina pastor said that using God's word to detect Satan's lies is similar to a Navy minesweeper which can detect hidden underwater mines. After the service, my wife Irene used the term, "MIND-sweepers!" So VERY well said, Irene, a summary of these very important verses: 2 Corinthians 10:4-5!*) 😊

### **Sword of the Spirit: God's word powerfully defends us and 'raises the 'spiritually dead' from a life of sin for all who accept it.**

My final transformation to a life following Christ resulted from devouring Scripture which came alive to me, and then through me to others, by the power of God's Holy Spirit. Many others I

know had a similar experience. Hebrews 4:12 tells us that God's word is 'living and powerful'. **'Living'** because, unlike a real sword, [this one can make the spiritually dead come alive!](#) **'Powerful'** because, it's something only God can do. **How do we stay strong?** Daily drills with the 'sword of the Spirit', the Word of God! [Read it!](#) [Memorize it!](#) [Live it!](#)

### **Feet shod: with preparation to share the gospel: our primary mission**

The ultimate mission of the Christian soldier is to be Christ's ambassador to reconcile the lost to God which we've previously shared as '[making spiritually dead come alive in Christ.](#)' Wherever our feet take us, others should see Christ in our lives. (2 Corinthians 5:20) Some may be called to full-time ministry, but all born-again Christians are called to shine for Christ wherever He has placed them. [1, 93, DD](#)

The Lord's '[three-stage training orientation](#)' preview is found in 2 Corinthians 5:14-21.

**First**, constrained by our love for Jesus for what He's done for us, we are to steadily become more like Christ. We've covered this in the 'breastplate of righteousness'. **Second**, as we grow in Christ, we feel concern, then Jesus' REAL LOVE for the LOST who are headed for an eternity of suffering. **Third**, we will learn how to overcome fear and share what Christ has done for us. (1 Peter 3:15, 2 Timothy 1:7-9) Jesus then [commissions us for our 'rescue ministry of reconciliation': 2 Corinthians 5:20.](#)

*As Christ's soldiers, we are ordered to 'be ready always to give a reason for our faith.'* (1 Peter 3:15) *That means we need to always be ready to share our testimony of what the Lord has done for us, even though we may never see any immediate results. (I've already shared how Corporal Stevens' testimony and life example saved me from atheism,— eight later and he still does not know that!. God's word never returns void: Isaiah 55:11)*

**Prepare your testimony:** Compose two versions: *a detailed version, then a three-minute condensed version. A good testimony has these three basic parts: 1. What life was like before receiving Christ. 2. How you found Christ was real (include any special event that may have motivated you, like an empty, purposeless life, sickness, etc.), and 3. What we have now after receiving Him we did not have before. I think you'll find a whole new exciting life awaits you when you begin witnessing personally. Don't be afraid to use the authority of Scripture. That will demonstrate its power and credibility.*

*There are many ways to help build Christ's kingdom, like inviting friends and relatives to come with you to church, teaching, helping Bible translation, ministering to the homeless, supporting and serving in your church, outreaches, missionaries, etc. But sharing personally what Christ did for you would be at the top of the list.*

Click [here](#) for **How to Overcome Fear** in three steps and the three progressive levels of personal witnessing as you gain more and more boldness: '**TO**', '**TNT**', & '**STW**'.

### **Weaknesses a Christian Soldier Must Overcome**

#### **1. Soldiers mustn't become discouraged and surrender because they can't hold out.**

Expecting to be perfect all the time is unrealistic, like holding your breath. You can only do that for so long. We're promised no temptation is too much for us to resist and *the secret of victory is to re-take command of our 'thought fortress' by reciting memorized Scriptures and singing appropriate hymns or choruses, even if only in our minds.* (1 Corinthians 10:12, 13 and 2 Corinthians 10:5). Scriptures. (Click [here](#) for my three '**SSR**' steps to resisting sinful temptation.) We're not supposed to 'hold out' but to '*hold on*' to Christ. He also holds onto us: Philippians 1:6 promises that '[He will never give up on us!](#)'

**Note:** This is not a license to sin and falsely think you can enjoy the best of two worlds. If you truly meant business with the Lord, each failure should trigger repentance sooner or

later: regret, asking forgiveness, and endeavoring to not repeat the same sin. If you do not repent, He may send some bad things your way as wake-up calls. Hang in there. He will say, "Your're forgiven, now get up and continue following Me!" My favorite chorus: "He's Still Workin' on Me!" My favorite line: "Don't judge me yet, there's an unfinished part!"

Don't be discouraged if your progress seems slow. This toddler is on an unfamiliar and perhaps scary path and is both watching attentively *and holding her daddy's hand*. This is a great illustration of Bill Bailey's great song, "I Don't Know What the Future Holds, but I Know Him Who Holds the Future!" Click [here](#) for **Christ's Bell** which reveals our amazing 'position and possessions' we are given in Christ!



- 2. Soldiers are often sorely tempted when alone.** The true degree of loyalty of a Christian soldier to His commander, Jesus Christ, is revealed when he is attacked by the enemy (temptations) when alone. Re-taking the 'thought fortress' of your mind has already been covered in 1. above. Satan often sends sinful thoughts while we're trying to get to sleep.

Here's how I retake command of my 'thought fortress' as soon as I turn out the lights and get into bed. Silently, in my thoughts, I 'Enter into His gates with thanksgiving and into His court with praise!' (Psalm 100:4) I thank God for all the blessings I can think of, I praise Him, recite some favorite Scriptures, and then pray for the needs of relatives and friends. I often don't even know when I finish because I've fallen asleep! Sometimes God might even reward us with something special soon after resisting a temptation. However, we should never expect to 'bribe' or 'buy' God's favor by doing that which is only our spiritual duty.

- 3. Soldiers sometimes get bored and in a rut.**

**Danger!** It's often caused by neglecting to read God's word each morning and/or missing church too often. **Unstuck**, by the *Back to the Bible Broadcast* CEO, will be very helpful. [Y](#)

However, in my case years ago, after learning the basics of the Christian life, I was bored because I was ignoring the needs of my unsaved friends and Christ's command to start sharing what He had done for me. *When I began to share the gospel, timidly and only using leaflets at first, the 'lights came on' and the Christian life has been a joy ever since!* (Luke 8:39)

- 4. Soldiers are sometimes timid. Steps to Holy Courage, Born of Faith!**

Following Christ is not a Sunday morning spectator sport! It requires courage and sacrifice you can only acquire relying upon God's Spirit that lives within you when you receive Christ. Sacrifice to choose Christ's will over your own sinful desires. Courage to follow Christ instead of giving in to ungodly peer pressure from your friends. Boldness to share the reason for your faith. (1 Peter 3:15) The apostle Paul strengthened Timothy, a young pastor of the first century with these words: "For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind. Therefore do not be ashamed of the testimony of our Lord ..." (2 Timothy 1:7-8)

How do we make the connection between Jesus' power and courage that lives in us and our timidity? (Review the three steps to overcoming fear: click [here](#)),

**Faith is that connector:** *just believing God, then stepping out!* Moses, one of the greatest of God's leaders, was very timid. When God called him to go to a powerful Pharaoh in Genesis 3, an 80-year-old Moses said, "Who am I?" (I'm a nobody.) God's reply was essentially, 'Step out and **do it** based on your faith in Me! **After** you've done it, then you'll **know** God was your strength!' **Wow!**

**How do we get that faith?** Romans 10:17 says: *We get faith by 'hearing' the Word of God. Not just in your mind, but courageously flooding out into obedience that generates more faith!* When God called Joshua to lead Israel into Canaan, He commanded him to be of good courage and told him *where to get 'Holy courage born of faith'*: from God's Word! (Joshua 1:6-9) After receiving Christ, we all need *daily 'light'* from God's word, the Bible, just like this 'glow-in-the-dark' smiley face requires frequent exposures to bright light.

We must also fortify ourselves with memorized Scripture that becomes a part of us, available anywhere, day or night, even without your Bible.

We all look at ourselves in the mirror multiple times during the day. The Bible says *if we look at Christ (in Scripture) then gradually our character, as in a mirror, can become a mirror image of Him!* (2 Corinthians 3:18) How? By beginning and each day meeting with God for prayer and fortification from His word to prepare for our spiritual battles and often, for God's strategic spiritual missions. We meet with God again before bed to review our day, to ask how we might have done better, and to receive His blessings as we drift off to sleep, and perhaps enjoying His *"Well done, soldier of the King!"*

#### **5. Soldiers may be 'wounded' but need to get up and fight on.**

'Knocked down but not knocked out', paraphrases how Paul, the great missionary apostle, sometimes reacted to severe persecution from agents of Satan. It applies equally well when we have a spiritual fall. None of us will ever be perfect all the time but if we do fall, ask God's forgiveness, get back up, and get back into the battle. Christ will welcome you back, forgive you, strengthen you, and help you to do better next time. (1 John 1:9) Even a saying of Confucius applies well here: *'Our greatest glory is not in never falling but in rising every time we fall!'* (*This applies equally well to dieting!*) Each victory over sin can strengthen you for the next battle. *Be of good courage, and He shall strengthen your heart, all you who hope in the LORD.* (Psalm 31:24)



#### **6. Soldiers struggling with the turbulent thoughts of combat PTSD need help.**

Only Christ can help you bring your turbulent thoughts under control. (2 Corinthians 10:4-5) After leaving the military, I was told by a combat vet that those who struggle most with PTSD are those who exhibit I.A.M. symptoms: IDENTITY loss, ACCEPTANCE loss, MISSION loss. All three are to be found in Christ's **I.A.M.**: A new **IDENTITY** as His soldier, **ACCEPTANCE** as a Christian into the worldwide brotherhood of His church, and a **MISSION** to proclaim Christ. Your new mission? 'Rescuing' others for Christ, as detailed above as a Christian soldier who makes the spiritually dead alive to Christ! Marine Corporal Stevens was my 'rescuer' though it didn't 'take' until eight years later. (See Chapter 2.) *We can be soldier-ambassadors for the King of Kings and Lord of Lords!* (2 Corinthians 5:14-21) Wow!

Some of you may be blaming God for the evils of war instead of Satan, so click here on [Appendix C](#) for some reasons God permits evil and how God has even turned it to good. There are over 200 'Point Man' outposts of combat vets who have learned to overcome PTSD. They want to talk with you at [www.point-man-ministries.org](http://www.point-man-ministries.org), or contact [BudStrope@point-man-ministries.org](mailto:BudStrope@point-man-ministries.org). For books and other sites, contact my friend Jim, a Viet Nam vet at [www.healingtrauma.us.com](http://www.healingtrauma.us.com). Get help. There's no shame in a wounded warrior heading for the nearest aid station. They are there for you!

#### **7. AWOL Soldiers.** God does not let them go quietly because He loves them. His love and mercy will attempt to draw them back. Yes, His grace and mercy gives us all time to repent but we never know when He will say, **"ENOUGH!"** Then He will use stronger, even painful methods, like God's spiritual MPs to drag the wandering ones back. He may chastise us which

we find in Hebrews 12:8, just as we parents chastise our children when they are naughty. We love our children too much to let them go astray and suffer cruel consequences later in life. As a last resort God also deals with His spiritual children in this very same way.

## LETS GO DEEPER INTO CHRISTIAN MATURITY

### DAILY STAFF MEETING (Devotions)

I Peter 2:2 exhorts us, "As newborn babes, desire the pure milk of the Word, that you may grow thereby." Just as we need food to grow and stay healthy, so we need spiritual food each day to stay healthy and to mature in Christ. Someone once said, "I have two tigers in me fighting for control, the natural man who likes to sin and the spiritual man who resists. Which one wins is usually the one I feed the most!" That means starting and ending each day with Bible reading & prayer.

I use and highly recommend the **POWER BIBLE CD** by Paul Lindner for your computer, Kindle, or iPhone. (Online Publishing, Inc.) I recommend using the New King James Bible Version (NKJV). It also has numerous commentaries with answers to your questions. You can even look up words or Scriptures to pursue various investigations.

I'm particularly blessed by my 'talking' pocket Bible from JAARS which I can play anytime, like when getting ready for work or on a noon walk. I particularly like the Amplified Bible. It adds details, like a mini-commentary, from the original Greek which helps resolve ambiguities since the translation is not word for word but by the basic thought intended, the original objective.

You'll find a pocket testament in you pocket or purse a welcome companion whenever you have a spare moment. Begin reading in the Gospel of John to get a good look at Jesus and continue through Acts, the history of the early church. Romans should be next and is called the *Constitution of Christianity*. Ephesians, Philippians, and Colossians are probably the best and shortest books for 'cleaning up your act' so friends and loved ones won't call you a hypocrite.' I would then suggest 1 and 2 Corinthians. Then go back and read the other books. I would recommend our Jewish friends begin with Hebrews followed by Romans.

**LIFE, with His love, is  
God's gift to us.  
How we live our life is  
our gift back to God!  
Make it a  
FANTASTIC ONE!  
(2 Corinthians 5:14-21)**

To add variety and be greatly blessed, I would heartily recommend this free monthly devotional booklet/e-book, *IN TOUCH*, from Dr. Charles Stanley, one of the finest Bible expositors in the country. <http://www.intouch.org/Read/Magazine/subscribe>.



I am also encouraged daily by BBN radio's world-wide spiritual music and message broadcasts at 93.5 FM, available 24/7 in nine languages. [www.bbnradio.org](http://www.bbnradio.org).

I would also most heartily recommend Rick Warren's *50 Days of Transformation* course to those who wish to go deeper into a relationship with Jesus. It's available in print, MP3, DVD, etc. Warren is an internationally known conference speaker, pastor, and best-selling author. This course touches on each of the major facets of our Christian life in a most wonderful way. Churches all across America have been inspired by messages from this series. You may also experience Rev. Mike Lowery's contemporary free **Transformation** sermon series videos based on Rick Warren's *50 Days of Transformation* course is at the same link. <sup>E</sup>

### How NOT to Pray:

**"Lord, it's been 16 years since I bothered you, but if You'll just get me out of this jam, I won't bother you again for another 16 years!"**

## How to Pray:

This model is based upon Jesus' reply when His disciples asked Him to teach them to pray in Luke 11. You may first wish to click [here](#) to jump back to *Why should we pray?*

- 1. A snappy salute** of courtesy, respect, and admiration for your spiritual Commander-in Chief. *Daily reminders of God's transcendence helps us keep proper perspective.* Begin prayer by praising Him. Praise Him for His great power and majesty so evident in our universe, for the boundless love He has showed us in Christ by His grace, His preparation of our future home in Heaven, His ongoing care for us, both seen and unseen, His detailed plans for our futures, etc. You'll find praise examples in Psalms 8, 91, 135, 145 and many others. You may wish to begin your praise time by singing a hymn or a praise chorus to honor Him. (I honor Him for not giving up on me with *He's Still Workin' on me!* [II](#)) Most often, I begin my worship time with, "God, You're just [wonderful!](#)" **He is!** "Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace!" (Isaiah 9:6)
- 2. LISTEN: God also wants to speak to you!** Close your eyes, empty your mind, and ask God to speak through your thoughts. He may commend you for something you did for Him like holding back anger and unkind words or resisting some temptation to sin. He may also remind you of some kindness you failed to show. Maybe He will also zero in on some disobedience you need forgiveness for or that needs correcting. (Psalm 139:23-24: *Search my heart*) Often He will put into your mind things He wants you to do to stay close to Him, to bless others, and to share the love of Christ with a friend.
- 3. CONFESS: Spiritual cleanup.** Old Testament priests had to be cleansed by special washings and sacrifices for their sins before entering the Lord's sanctuary. Each day we need to confess any sins of either commission or omission the Lord revealed to us in the previous 'LISTEN' section, confess them, ask His forgiveness and strength to not repeat them. Unlike Old Testament times, no one needs a priest to forgive sins today. The earthly priesthood was abolished when Jesus paid for our sins on the cross. This was dramatically demonstrated when Jesus was crucified. The massive curtain in the Jewish temple sealing off the Holy of Holies was suddenly split from top to bottom, signifying we now have direct access to God through Jesus Christ, our High Priest who intercedes for us at the throne of God! (1 Timothy 2:5, Hebrews 9 and Hebrews 10)
- 4. EXPRESS GRATITUDE: Thank God** for all the many blessings He bestows upon us each day. Don't forget so many things we all take for granted and rarely think about. Also, how many times has He protected us from Satan's attacks of which we were totally unaware? One day He'll show us and we'll be ashamed we never thanked Him. Let us especially thank Him for His salvation and the place He's reserved for us in Heaven with the joy that will one day be ours! Also thank Him for the 'out of the ordinary' bad things that happen to you which clearly are not consequences of your own doing. They are part of His long-range plans for your good or for the good of others, or both. Your 'why?' will be answered in Heaven one day. (Romans 8:28, I Thessalonians 5:18).
- 5. ASK: Take all your needs to Him** as well as the needs of friends and relatives, especially those who are sick, those who really need Jesus and His salvation, and any other needs. You may ask anything but always add, "YOUR will be done. (John 14:14)

*Are you fretting and anxious about some situation?* Sometimes that's the only way God can get our attention. Whatever drives you helplessly to your knees brings God into focus as your only help. Cast your burden upon the Lord and He can give you peace, even in

the midst of your 'storm'! (1 Peter 5:6-7, Matthew 11:28-30, and Philippians 4:6-7)

**CONCLUDE: End your opening 'salute'.** We began our prayer with a 'salute' to God. The salute ends when the saluting hand is smartly brought down. We conclude our prayer by reminding ourselves that our access to God is only through the love and self-sacrifice of Jesus Christ who opened our access to God. That would be something like, "We ask these things in Jesus' name. Amen." (Amen means 'so be it', or 'may it be done'.)

God always hears the prayers of His people. His answer will be *yes*, *no*, or *wait* until some condition occurs, possibly involving those you don't even know, or possibly He's waiting for you to correct some disobedience. Click [here](#) to review the conditions for answered prayer and God's three possible answers.

### **ALWAYS LISTEN FOR GOD'S MESSAGES IN YOUR THOUGHTS! HE MAY ALSO WANT TO SPEAK TO YOU ABOUT:**

- **Priorities: I'm No Longer 'Number One'**

Perhaps the biggest change after receiving Christ will be in the behavior of those with the former selfish attitude most of us have before making Jesus our Lord, "I'm number one! If it's unlikely I'll get caught, I'll do what I want no matter what God says, or who it hurts, or any future consequences." *Selfishness is the deepest root cause of all sin.*

- **Housecleaning: Junks Gotta Go!**

When Christ comes to live in your heart, He will often speak to you first about your biggest sins. Then dirty stories, filthy language, and other speech disrespectful of God, like the ever-increasing use of **OMG** in recent years. Using God's name to express your excitement or surprise, instead of a sincere prayer, is gross disrespect to our Creator and future judge. It's kind of like a frivolous 911 call that can bring severe penalties down upon you. Since it violates God's 3<sup>rd</sup> commandment to not use His name in vain (frivolously), that also makes it a sin. *Therefore each time you disrespect God with an OMG or using His name, or Christ, to make your speech more powerful, it's just like doing a 'Three Stooges 'forked finger-poke' into both your future judge's eyes!*

- *No Hypocrites* is a devotion by the paraplegic hero you met in Appendix B, [Joni Eareckson Tada](#). It's a surprising personal daily checklist used by famous 18<sup>th</sup>-century preacher and church founder, John Wesley, and is still very much in use today. It will help you make sure people don't see you as a hypocrite. <http://www.joniandfriends.org/radio/5-minute/no-hypocrites/>



- **Gotta Give Up Grudges**

God will almost certainly speak to you about forgiving others as Christ has forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:32) That includes asking their forgiveness whether they accept it or not. (Your parents, spouse, and possibly your children will head the list!)

This very morning, we watched the telecast from Dr. Charles Stanley's church. He'd been deeply hurt by someone and found it very hard to forgive. God seemed to say to him, "How many of your sins have I forgiven you?" After that, Dr. Stanley never had a problem forgiving those who hurt him because Jesus had said that unless we forgive those who hurt us, He will not forgive our sins against Him. (Matthew 6:14-15) Later this same morning we visited a church where Jim, a fellow Marine Corps League member, attends. The pastor, Rev. Eric Plyler, brought a message on forgiveness. Two men had murdered his father when he was 10. Naturally he hated these men and forgiveness was the last thing on his mind even after the killers were caught and imprisoned. That also put Eric in a very real type of 'prison of the mind'.



**Eric's Christian growth was stunted** and his relationship with Christ seemed empty. Un-forgiveness had blocked his deep fellowship with Christ and was then self-perpetuating. Plyler shared that just as the Sycamore tree flourishes in the dry desert-like conditions of the Middle East, so un-forgiveness flourishes in dry spiritual conditions reinforcing itself until it takes over your every waking hour. Finally Eric forgave these murderers. **How?** By letting go of his hatred and turning the whole situation over to God to allow Him to handle everything. Just as Christ had prayed for His tormentors on the cross, Eric then began praying for the salvation of his father's murderers. His fellowship with Christ was restored and he experienced a new closeness with our Lord when he cast his burdens upon the Lord. (1 Peter 5:7) His exhortation, repeated perhaps 25 times during his sermon: **"Let it go! Let it go! Let it go! Let it go!"**

*(I would refer you to [Corrie Ten Boom](#) in Appendix B. She survived unspeakable cruelties in a Nazi concentration camp, yet emerged with not only her faith intact, but her later years were devoted to encouraging others to forgive!)*

- **Restitution**

If you've genuinely repented, you will hear from the Lord about apologizing to those you have hurt, including mean, hurtful words or even worse. Spouses, parents, and employers will top the list. As you explain your reason for apologizing is your new life direction in Christ, you will have great power in influencing others to also come to Christ. I've noted a number of spouses reconciled or even brought to Christ by radical changes in behavior of their mate after receiving Christ! (1 Peter 3:1: '... won by the conversation (conduct, in modern English) of their wives'.)

You may also hear from the Lord about making restitution for stealing. Jesus told a dishonest tax collector named Zacchaeus that his offer to restore stolen taxes was true evidence he was truly born again. (Luke 19. Note: restoring four-fold is not a command but only Zacheus' decision.) This can also be a powerful witness for Christ and has been done anonymously when to confess might mean jail time. An anonymous lady who made restitution for theft to a café many years ago, made the TV news last night. If it's a huge amount, regular anonymous small payments, each with some word from the Lord, is a way to handle huge thefts and cast powerful influence for the Lord.

**'WWJD'?** is a great rule to live by: **What Would Jesus Do?** If instead, your attitude is, **'Just how bad can I be but still barely squeeze into Heaven?'** then you're 'singing the theme song' of the true hypocrite. You will never enjoy the fantasy of the 'best of both worlds'. Asking that question would be the same as a soldier who asks his commanding officer, **"Sir, just how many days out of the week could I go out to fight with the enemy against us but still be a good soldier in our army as well?"** We know what would happen. That soldier would be in the guard house or before a firing squad in minutes. I recall a great hymn, called *Loyalty to Christ*, which I wish were sung more often in churches today.

The word 'hypocrite' originated with ancient Greek actors who hid behind a mask when they played multiple roles in a play. 'Hypocrite' means a mask. Don't be counted among the hypocrites, but also don't let false accusations of 'hypocrite' from your sinful friends discourage you. Their accusation is also a 'mask' as they attempt to hide from God's judgement by accusing Christians of being hypocrites or the only Christians they know are actually hypocrites so they believe all Christians are hypocrites. God knows your heart, and theirs! (Romans 14:12)

## WITNESSING for CHRIST: 'T.O.', 'T.N.T', & 'S.T.W.'

If you have experienced Christ in a real way, the love of God in you will motivate you to share Him with loved ones, friends, and even strangers so they may receive Christ's forgiveness and meet you in Heaven one day. Gratitude for what He's done for us motivates us to be his 'ministers of reconciliation' to others. (2 Corinthians 5:14-21)

### Overcome Fear in Three Steps

**ONE.** Memorize 2 Timothy 1:7-9: *"For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind. Therefore do not be ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner, but share with me in the sufferings for the gospel according to the power of God who has saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace, given to us in Christ Jesus before time began."*

**TWO:** Pray for holy courage and rely on the Holy Spirit to both strengthen you and guide you in your witnessing encounters. We can do nothing lasting without His enablement.

**THREE:** Stop thinking about what your prospects may be thinking of you.  
Get your mind on where that person will spend eternity without Christ.  
Exercise Christ's love for the lost through you!

### 'T.O.': TRACT ONLY Witnessing

There are hundreds of different tracts. Some are good, others not so good because they omit two essentials of the gospel: The resurrection of Jesus and necessity of repentance. (Get refreshed on the evidence of Jesus' resurrection by clicking [here](#) since that's the proof Jesus is the only way to heaven and is an essential component of the gospel.) The tract should have a space for attaching a label with your church information for prospects to continue in their search for the Lord.

*We'd recommend our tracts, now in their 12<sup>th</sup> printing. They also address atheism and link to this free e-book with answers to many questions I previously had as a former atheist for 11 years. With my picture in a Navy jet on the cover, almost no one refuses them. Young people often say 'WOW' or 'COOL'. Free upon request at: [evidenceGodsreal@gmail.com](mailto:evidenceGodsreal@gmail.com). <sup>93</sup>*



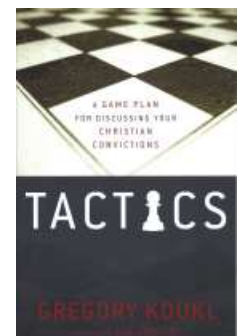
Always carry tracts with you. When out and about, it's easy to leave one with checkout clerks after you've checked out or perhaps anyone you don't know who speaks to you, or maybe someone you speak to, like asking where you might find the peanut butter or something while shopping.

### 'T.N.T.': TRACT 'N Testimony Witnessing

This is the next level. After giving a tract, just share your testimony in three minutes or less and then leave. (We shared how to prepare a testimony above: click [here](#).)

### 'S.T.W.': Shoot the Works! Full Witness

Get the **SHARE JESUS WITHOUT FEAR** pocket witnessing New Testament. <sup>92</sup> Fear will fade when you learn what to say. This Testament will teach you how to approach people inoffensively with questions and overcome 36 objections of those who reject Christ. (Citations <sup>c</sup>, <sup>d</sup> will also answer more answers.) **TACTICS**, also at <sup>92</sup>, is highly recommended to supplement the 'Share Jesus' New Testament. It expands using the same basic technique with in-depth reason and irresistible logic, without causing offense, in a multitude of



actual witnessing encounters. Very interesting and very thorough! This website at <https://www.str.org> promises:

- **Confidence for every Christian**
- **Clear thinking for every challenge**
- **Courage and grace for every encounter!**

*Keep in mind that our job is only to deliver God's message. **You have not failed** if prospects do not respond immediately with repentance. They have free choice whether they heed the Holy Spirit or not. Once you've planted God's word He will continue to 'water' it and in Heaven one day, you may be surprised to meet some who eventually came to Christ! (Isaiah 55:11!)*

*Often, your personal testimony is the best answer for objections to the Gospel message. Just share what the Lord has done for you. No one can effectively 'shoot down' what actually happened to you with mere opinions. Also you may wish to review the in-depth answers in this book I found to questions about God. Click [here](#) for answers to skeptic's questions.) This will not only help prepare you to better answer objections of the unsaved but will also strengthen your faith and 'spiritual muscles', guaranteed. However, don't feel you've failed if you can't answer all questions. This does not give the unsaved a valid excuse to hide from God. Bring them back to the fact they're sinners, they ARE going to die, and need to have their sins forgiven, not to put God on trial. Once they get to Heaven, God will answer all questions.*

Lastly, use wisdom about when and where you witness. At work during working hours may not always be a wise option but at lunch or break, you'll sometimes get an opportunity to get in a word with the option of sharing more later in private.

#### **Veterans: 'Fun-witnessing' to fellow veterans.**

Wearing my military cap, I pray, put on a smile, and make eye contact with others when out among people. This attracts veterans and even many non-veterans to come over and thank me for my service. Then it's always easy to redirect that into a witnessing conversation. You can buy a military cap for your service branch from ads in most military magazines. (If Navy, you can even get a cap with the name of your ship as I did for my service on the USS Ranger.) Above I'm wearing my Marine Corps League garrison cap since I also served in the Marines.)



Look for others wearing a military hat or ball cap with insignia. Thank them for their service and strike up a conversation with something like, **"Where did you serve? What did you do?"** etc. Not only will they feel appreciated but you'll almost always make an instant friend who will be very receptive to receiving our leaflet with the author on the cover in a Navy F4. You will arouse interest if you say, **"On the cover is a friend of mine. He was a successful, but atheistic, radar field engineer for this Navy F4 fighter. It tells what happened when he left God out of his life and was heading for suicide."** Even if you're not a veteran, people often enthusiastically receive our leaflet using this approach with a **"Wow!"** or **"Cool!"**

I have found that **Scripture memorization** is of major importance to help us carry out our mission. Memorized Scripture becomes your store of spiritual weapons to defeat Satan's temptations and arguments against God from the unsaved. That's how Jesus defeated Satan Himself during 40 days of temptation. (Matthew 4) From day one, I had an intense hunger for the Word of God. I devoured and even memorized big chunks of Scripture from Ephesians and Colossians, as well as almost all the Scriptures in this appendix. Sometime during the day I would also find time to review at least ten Scriptures I had memorized, lest they be forgotten.

When witnessing to others, always carry your New Testament. (Click [here](#)) Don't assume prospects will accept your word just by quoting it! It's always better to show prospects the appropriate Scriptures since that also lends its authority and power.

**The Word of God is living and powerful!** (Hebrews 4:12)

**Christian soldiers, again: "Be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might!" (Ephesians 6:10) Be emboldened** by knowing your identity and privileges in Christ by 'ringing' **Christ's Bell!** Click [here](#).



Let's finish this section with the inspiring words of a rousing hymn:

**"Rise up, O men (and women) of God! Have done with lesser things. Give heart and mind and soul and strength to serve the King of kings!"**

—Text: William Merrill, adapted; Music: Aaron Williams

**P.S.** Why your teen needs an ***Apologetics Study Bible for Students*** <sup>90</sup> before going off to college: surveys show 2/3 of our young people lose their faith in college, both by falling into sin traps they're not prepared to resist plus not having answers to pre-planned attack strategies and the ridicule of 'logical' atheistic questions.

Having been a **'serge-ant'** in the Marine Corps, I strongly believe our motto is very appropriate for spiritual battles: *Semper Fidelis* which means 'Always Faithful'. Though I received my warrant for promotion to sergeant around 60 years ago, I still remember this part which I was inspired to memorize and carry in my heart:



**"By this to all presents greetings. Be it known that reposing special trust in the fidelity and abilities of Corporal Thomas L. Hodges, we do hereby advance him to the rank of Sergeant, USMC."**



We may lose a battle now and then, but Jesus assures us that He will finish that which He has begun in us and that we will eventually win the war with Satan and with evil! **Harry, the happy hang-in-there hamster**, would make a good mascot for the Christian soldier. He would say, **"Be steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord who has begun a good work in you."**

(1 Corinthians 15:57,58, and Philippians 1:6)

**These thoughts from some great old hymns form a strong foundation for our motivation and our courage to face any future with Christ at our side.**

**I Know Who Holds the Future**, and I Know He Holds my Hand  
**Jesus Paid it All**, All to Him I Owe,  
**Footprints of Jesus**, that make the pathway glow;  
we will follow the steps of Jesus, where e'er they go!

\*\*\*\*\*

## APPENDIX F-1: HAS EVOLUTION BEEN PROVEN?

### Intelligent or Un-Intelligent Creation?

**Reminder:** Left-click on [bold blue underlined text](#) to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, and press ← (not <).

*DID 'Nothing' + 'Nobody' create Everything?  
or did EXTRAORDINARY COMPLEXITY REQUIRE EXTRAORDINARY INTELLIGENCE?*

#### How Vast is Our Universe?

Unknown! Our most powerful telescopes have never found any boundaries.

However, these two amazing facts may help you get a vague idea.

1. Three thousand years would be required to count the stars in just one galaxy!  
There are millions, even billions of known galaxies. Many more are still undiscovered.
2. A hundred thousand years would be needed for a light beam to cross our Milky Way Galaxy. How fast is light? It can circle the earth over seven times in one second!

Let's begin by explaining why so much space is being devoted to examining evolution. When I was in school, evolution was taught as an unproven theory, a 'might-have-been'. Today, evolution, still unproven, is now proclaimed as a fact and those who don't accept it are academically punished. Evolution proclaims our fantastically complex universe created itself through a series of 'accidents' over millions of years. No God required.

This is the very doorway of 'freedom' for gratifying any lust, violence, or any other evil without fear of consequences, unless you're caught, of course. It's also the doorway to an eternity of suffering without the God who's been rejected. Racism and genocide are only two spinoffs of evolution's 'survival of the fittest'. Evolution's 'survival of the fittest' was the foundation of the 'master race', root of Naziism's plan for world conquest, and was also behind massive genocides not too long ago in Rwanda, Cambodia, Serbia, and Bosnia.

#### DID OUR UNIVERSE EVOLVE? Quick Facts

*(For more information, click your left mouse button on [\(More\)](#) below.*

*To return, hold ALT and press ← (not <).)*

[Evolution in nature](#) will be examined in this section, followed by [DID LIFE EVOLVE](#), with 22 questions about evolution of life asked and answered. You may find some duplication there from the section below. However, there may be bookmarks there to which other parts of this book may jump. So during this revision I am hesitant to remove anything from either section. At the end of the next section, I would invite you to continue to Appendix F-2 for more in-depth and fascinating evidence of intelligent creation in the myriad of complexities in the human body

#### 1. How can evolution be a fact when scientists only understand 4% of our universe? [\(More\)](#)

2. **Did our universe 'self-create' according to the QF Cosmological Standard Model?** This model asserts that before our universe existed there was ultra-hot fog/dust, quantum bubbles, and who knows what else. These exploded into the Big Bang and Voila! The universe created itself from space junk! <sup>46</sup> Planck time, the [Eye of God \(right\)](#), and Maxwell's mathematical proof 150 years ago show it's impossible to prove that and that stars don't cool to become planets. <sup>47</sup> (According to Einstein, Maxwell was the greatest scientist since Isaac Newton.)  
[\(More\)](#)



3. **Simplest intelligent creation proof, even for 'non-rocket scientists'** How do you know your home was built? "It exists!" How do you know it wasn't built by toddlers and pre-teens who never heard of blueprints? It shows skilled construction based on intelligent design rather than the chaos we would expect from random 'play' by toddlers and pre-teens.

Just as the existence of your home proves there was 'intelligent creation' by an architect and construction by skilled builders, [so the very existence of our much more complex universe demonstrates fantastic intelligence of a 'universe designer and maker' whom we call God.](#) Just common sense. We're without excuse. (Psalm 19:1, Romans 1:20 )

- 4. **Reasons why very old evolutionary dates cannot be trusted.** Among them are some unprovable assumptions used in calculations. Only one is that the speed of light has never changed. A NASA scientist friend of mine, who dated the first moon rocks, has shown that the speed of light may very well have been very much faster in times past which, if true, would make our universe much younger. <sup>28</sup> ([More](#))
- 5. **THE HIGGS BOSON particle discovery, mockingly called the 'GOD PARTICLE'.** <sup>49</sup> It holds all atoms in our universe together, but where did it come from and why? ([More](#))
- 6. **'Fine tuning' of the earth to support life is not an accident of evolution.** From what did the approximately 150 mathematical constants evolve that describe all phenomena of nature? This, plus the question of how the first life on earth began, is unanswerable by evolutionists except by unprovable speculation, not evidence. <sup>39c, 9H</sup> ([More](#))
- 7. **ONLY FOUR SCIENTIFIC LAWS CONTROL MOST OF OUR UNIVERSE.** ([More](#))
- 8. **EVOLUTION, Three Strikes, 'yer' OUT!** ([More](#)).

\*\*\*\*\*

(Click [here](#) with left mouse button to skip these details.)

### **More Details for 'Did Our Universe Evolve?'**

- 1. **How can evolution be a fact when scientists only understand 4% of our universe?**

Evolutionists often make factual proclamations of its origin based upon nothing more than speculation.

This NASA photo shows 'gravitational lensing', purported to give some evidence for the still unexplained 96% of dark matter and dark energy of our universe. There are myriads of ideas about how our universe came into existence. The Hindus taught that our universe came into existence with the utterance of 'OMMMMM!' (Now I understand why so many New-Agers love repeating that as part of their meditations.)



Our universe is vast. There are innumerable galaxies, many as yet undiscovered. [As I've mentioned, to count all the stars in one typical galaxy, one per second, would take you around 3,000 years!](#) I see two, only two, broad categories explaining the origin of our universe, [intelligent creation](#) and [un-intelligent creation](#) (evolution). It's obvious to me that the astronomical complexity, structure, and the mind-boggling size of our universe indicates an OVERWHELMING [intelligent creation](#) by an amazing, intelligent Creator we call God.

- 2. **Did our universe 'self-create' according to 'QF', the Cosmological Standard Model?**

**No!** QF (quantum fluctuations) states that an ultra-hot cloud, quantum bubbles, and all the laws of nature (physics), existed before our universe erupted as the Big Bang followed by hot stars cooling to become planets. I recently read this statement by a prominent scientist who stated, "If something is proven in the mathematical world, it has to exist in the real world!" FALSE! Common sense tells us that any equation with one or more variables representing only a speculation cannot somehow magically produce reality. (Similarly, the reasoning of mathematical formal logic can easily lead you astray because it's been proven to have at least 63 fallacies.) Here's evolutionists' 'mathematical proof', (yeah, right!) that

QF created our universe spontaneously without God. <sup>79</sup> No real facts here, just 'could have', or 'may have'. That's hypothesis, pure speculation. Perhaps 'fantasy' would be better.

Here's proof that QF can never be a proven fact. Facts require valid data. Numerous sources cite the fact that no valid data can exist before  $10^{-43}$  seconds (Planck time) AFTER the Big Bang when our universe came into existence! <sup>R</sup> Why? Calculations before that interval are meaningless because they would distort Einstein's space-time. Also, physics' four fundamental forces have not yet formed, because there were no atoms or molecules yet. GOTCHA! (Not convinced? Email me for a much more detailed rebuttal.) So let's stop proclaiming the 'model' as a fact.



The Eye of God (also known as the Ring or Helix Nebula) <sup>48</sup> proves that hot stars do NOT condense into planets. They explode and collapse into white dwarfs, neutron stars, or black holes, not planets. It's obvious that the *Cosmological Standard Model* is a model of un-intelligent creation because it rejects intelligent creation. I've not found a single scientist who has actually observed or offered any credible proof that a star cooled down to become a planet, as asserted in the model. *Stars are not like muffins warmed in the oven which after removal, cool down and eventually become rock hard and stale.* Stars are hot because they're powered by nuclear reactions of hydrogen fusion, like our sun, which is just another nearby star. When stars begin to run out of fuel they explode into a nova or supernova, then collapse to become a tiny white dwarf, a neutron star, or a black hole, but never a planet! This end result is deceptively still called a 'planetary' nebula. It's not a planet! This website contradicts the evolutionary model of how our universe was formed without God and His intelligent guidance.

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Stellar\\_evolution](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Stellar_evolution) (Gap is an underline.)

**More on the dazzling Eye of God.** It's wider than 1,000 of our complete solar systems placed side by side! It appears to be ring-shaped but is, in actuality, the near end of a trillion mile long tunnel of hot glowing gas left behind when a star exploded and collapsed, resulting in a very dense, nearly invisible, white dwarf at the center. Though the dwarf isn't very bright, it's still a star, NOT a planet. Myriads of other dwarf stars also disprove the Standard Model. (*Note, this star collapse resulted in matter so dense that only a matchbook-sized piece would weigh 250 tons! No known life could exist there.*)

The idea that the planets of our solar system were born through condensation of a hot cloud of gas and dust was generally accepted by most scientists up until the time of Darwin about a century and a half ago. This helped support evolution because it explained our universe without a God-Creator. However, James Clerk Maxwell, a contemporary of Darwin and the greatest scientist of the 19<sup>th</sup> century, soundly refuted the idea of space dust coming together to form layered planets using mathematics. <sup>47</sup> Maxwell also vigorously opposed evolution, calling it 'anti-scientific', not 'un-scientific', since its foundations violated basic laws of good science.

*(Darwin, though a brilliant observer and documenter, had no formal scientific training. James Clerk Maxwell, Darwin's contemporary (at right), was a professor at the world-renowned Oxford University. Maxwell was praised by Albert Einstein as the greatest scientist of the 19<sup>th</sup> century and 'to have made more contributions to physics than anyone since Isaac Newton'.)*



*Maxwell predicted mathematically the existence of radio, radar, X-rays, and all other electromagnetic waves by combining electric and magnetic field equations. His predictions about the rings of Saturn were verified by Voyager in 1981, nearly 100 years later. Maxwell also invented color photography and*

is holding his amazing color wheel in the photo!

Has any evidence of pre-Big Bang speculations of any kind been found in the detectable echoes (CMB) from the Big Bang? Extensive mapping by the space probes COBE, Planck, and the nine-year WMAP mission have found nothing in the CMB (Cosmic Microwave Background) 'echo' of the Big Bang relating to pre-Big Bang or pre-Planck time data. The BICEP2 Project at the South Pole celebrated finding evidence but it was officially renounced two years later as being premature.

The very existence of science and its wonderful incredible complexity proves to me there had to be an intelligent being who created science itself! Science cannot explain everything as some claim. NINETY SIX PERCENT of our entire universe is still a mystery shrouded in dark energy and dark matter. More importantly, science has never proven where their laws of nature and science came from apart from a Creator-God.

This is powerfully affirmed by the fact that none of the laws of science were created by men. They were only discovered and quantified, like gravity which existed since the Big Bang. Isaac Newton did not discover the gravitational equation until the 1600s. Kepler meticulously recorded astronomical observations for 40 years then discovered they all obey three laws that had controlled planetary orbits for ages. They're still used today in space exploration. Newton found Kepler's laws so fascinating, he discovered calculus to test if these laws were valid. They were! Both Kepler and Newton were strong believers in God and only discovered a way to quantify what had been since creation. (Watch: Believe in God in Five Minutes video by an M.I.T. physicist <sup>78</sup> )

Random evolution must 'leap-frog' over mountains of evidence to the contrary: ignoring enormous mathematical probabilities (against), Darwin's fossil record (missing), origin of a first cause (Darwin wrote he wouldn't go there), and human reason. Leading evolutionist Julian Huxley championed their cause with, "No God gives us our sexual freedom." I may have already shared how leading modern British atheist Richard Dawkins also champions sexual freedom with atheism. He had huge billboards attached to the red British double-decker busses with, "There's probably no God. Now stop worrying and enjoy your lives!"

Dr. Hawking, the leading cosmologist mentioned above, says he is not an atheist but prefers to view God as the 'embodiment of the laws of physics'. See page 85 of his ***The Quest for a Theory of Everything***. Einstein believed the same. To them, their 'god' is really science. Neither are convinced our Creator has anything to do with us but maybe it's a start. Hawking's excuse: "Our universe is so vast, why would a creator pay attention to us?" The Bible's answer: because He created us in His image to be loved for all eternity. (Genesis 1:27, Ephesians 2:6-7)

### 3. No Details

### 4. Why very old evolutionary dates can't be trusted.

- a. **How about radioactive dating?** Years ago I worked in the calibration lab at Convair on the B-58 bomber program. Our lab calibrated electrical meters, oscilloscopes, ground support equipment, etc. that would be used for precise measurements out on the flight line. Because we had very accurate standards to calibrate our





equipment, we could trust the measurements of our equipment on the flight line. *Not so with evolutionary dating.* Radioactive dating has nothing of known, proven historical age millions or billions of years old with which to calibrate their instruments. Therefore those dates using radioactive methods cannot be trusted. <sup>v</sup>

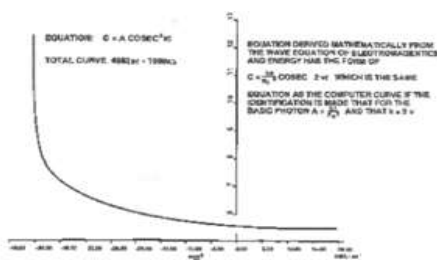
Evolutionists assume the rate of radioactive decay has always been the same going back to the Big Bang. Unverifiable. Radioactivity wasn't even discovered until the late 1890s. How about assigning the age of fossils that of the strata in which they were found? This is 'circular proof' because strata is dated using radiometric methods and vice versa proving neither.

In contrast, Carbon 14 dating can often be fairly accurate back to a few thousand years B.C. because its accuracy can be calibrated against ancient objects of known ages as found in Egyptian and other tombs as well as the VERY long-lived Bristle Cone Pine (*Pinus longaeva*) that can live for 5,000 years. *Carbon 14 dating was used to verify that Bible prophecies in the ancient [Dead Sea Scrolls](#) were written at least a hundred years before the events they prophesied, thereby validating biblical accuracy.* (Writing style for that period as well as microscopic examination of the parchment also corroborated the findings.)

**b. Do the millions and billions of years it takes for starlight to reach us prove evolution's assertion that stars and our universe are really that old?**

Light is one form of energy. Everything in our universe is either mass or energy. They are exactly related to each other by Einstein's famous equation,  $E = mc^2$ , the most powerful evidence I know for intelligent design of our universe by the 'Master Mathematician'! <sup>6, 74</sup> Let's take a look at the velocity of light in evolution equations.

James Dawson, a NASA scientist who headed the Physical Chemistry Lab, helped analyze the first moon rocks. Dr. Dawson has presented evidence that light and all electro-magnetic radiation travelled much, much faster in years past. <sup>28</sup> This casts grave doubt upon the validity of the estimated 13.772 billion-year age of our universe which would be much younger. This would also cast serious doubts upon the estimated distances and dates of creation of astronomical bodies based on measurements in 'light years'. (A light year is the distance light travels in a year at around 186,000 miles per second.)



His research showed that the assumed 'constant' light speed today is nearly constant *only because it is measured at the tail end of the dramatic exponentially decreasing curve plotted from his data* at left. The x axis represents time and the y axis, the speed of light. Mathematically regressing his data, we see a dramatic fall millions of years ago, then the progressive flattening of the trajectory indicating a nearly constant speed of around 186,000 miles per second over the past four centuries.

Gamma rays, emitted by radioactive materials, as well as microwave radiation leftover from the Big Bang, are all forms of the same type of electromagnetic radiation as light. Therefore, it's very likely they too travelled much faster millions of years ago. *Since there are no reliable calibration sources to confirm results, this casts grave doubts upon radioactive dating.* (Click [here](#).) Also, numerous space probe measurements of the microwave radiation of the 'leftover echoes' after the Big Bang have failed to

*produce a reliable age of our universe for the same reason.*

**Tekkie Candy** Dawson's light speed conclusion is based upon several different methods of measurement, including cross checks, going back to the initial measurement in 1640 by Roemer. The equation of the plotted data fits the curve for  $c = A (\text{cosecant})^2 kt$ . It was derived by combining equations for the electro-magnetic wave and its energy. If Dr. Dawson's findings are correct, our earth would be much younger than previously thought and the astronomical distances to stars would be much closer since distance = velocity times time.

Slower velocity = shorter distance.

Regrettably, Dr. Dawson's research report, [The Decay of the Speed of Light, the Answer to the Genesis Creation Question](#), disappeared with the rest of his website after he passed away in 2013. Fortunately, I have an old copy if any of you 'tekies' want one as well as a few copies of his very comprehensive apologetics DVD, **Why Believe**. The DVD also includes his detailed research on the speed of light decay and its effects on our universe, even upon primitive life.

Dawson, a former classmate of mine, was a star football player and president of the Weatherford, Oklahoma High School student body. He was also a classmate of Thomas Stafford, who went on to become an astronaut and an Air Force general. Dawson earned triple degrees in chemistry, math, and physics before going to NASA. His technical legacy, as well as his testimony of faith in God, live on in the NASA archives. <sup>28</sup> Dr. Dawson published 87 technical papers, wrote 10 books on biblical prophecy, founded a Christian radio station, and the Aaron C. Ministries, a Christian apologetics web site. I knew him personally as a warm, fervent humble Christian and a great scientist, as you will see in his obituary: <http://www.edmondsun.com/obituaries/x967391199/James-P-Dawson>.

Dawson told me that NASA rejected his speed of light findings, as well as his creation date for the moon rocks, in spite of a mountain of evidence to the contrary. The NASA chief even threatened to fire Dawson and all his lab scientists because the dates did not conform to evolutionary theory. (You'll find additional unreliability of radiometric methods used to date fossils later on.) Dr. Dawson's situation facing ostracism from NASA was much the same as back in the 16<sup>th</sup> century when the authorities also rejected the evidence of Copernicus, and later of Galileo, that the earth orbits the sun and not vice-versa. Like evolution, this had been taught as fact for many, many years before proven wrong. I would also add Dr. James F. Coppedge was denied his first Ph.D. from UCLA because after six years research his dissertation, **Evolution, Possible or Impossible**, <sup>33</sup> contradicted evolution. (Click [here](#) for his evidence that even one gene could not have evolved.)

**c. How about CMB (Cosmic Microwave Background) measurements)?**

Discovering the earth's age by regressing the leftover microwave radiation back from the Big Bang of creation looked like a great idea. However, it's based on the *unverifiable assumption* that the radiation velocity today, used in the computations, is the same as it was billions of years ago. The COBE, WMAP, and PLANCK space probes were marvels of scientific achievement but they failed to prove the alleged 13+ billion-year evolutionary age of our universe because no calibration material that old has ever been found to verify that as a fact. <sup>27A</sup> More: click [here](#).

**d. Why is the equation used to compute ages of fossils millions and billions of years old not to be trusted?** This citation was presented during a fossil seminar DVD at elapsed time 23:51. <sup>86</sup> The equation uses three unverifiable hypothetical assumptions plus five more which 'define' the hypothetical initial conditions. The

results are asserted as evolutionary 'facts'. Impossible. The results can never be more accurate than its speculative input assumptions. As a computer programmer, my colleagues would say, "GIGO: **Garbage In, Garbage Out.**"

- e. **If man evolved over four million years**, doubling the population every thousand years (very conservative allowing for very high mortality), after only 100,000 years, how many people would there be? 2.5 followed by 30 zeros!<sup>86</sup> (You'll find this at elapsed time of 49:12 minutes of the video at this citation.) Of course most would be dead so we ought to find fossils by the trillions and trillions and trillions, right?

Darwin stated that discovery of innumerable fossil series showing very gradual evolution from one species to another would be absolute proof evolution was true. However, Darwin wrote that he was perplexed that they'd never been found. Today, ~160 years later, fossils by the millions have been found but NOT ONE fossil series showing millions of years of very gradual evolution from any species to any other. Where's Darwin's proof? How about 'Neo-Darwinism' which asserts evolution happened in leaps from gene mutations? Click [here](#) for the fruit fly study, affirming 28 reasons mutations could not have driven evolution.

- f. **How about sedimentation strata evidence?** Ages are sometimes assigned by sedimentation rates of ancient rivers that laid down various strata eons ago. This is often indeterminate because the sediment is of a wide variety of sizes, weights, and different materials. Until the Mount St. Helens eruption only 35 years ago, geologists assumed that a river at the bottom of deep gorges, like the Colorado River and others, had slowly worn away the earth and rock over millions of years. However, when Mount St. Helens erupted, it was shown that the same effect can be created instantly by earthquakes.

- g. **How about the geologic column evidence?** *The Standard Geologic Column was created on paper based on evolution, not from observation.* The model only actually exists in only around an estimated 1.5% of the earth so evolutionary conclusions are at best shaky. Originally, it was divided into only four 'eras'. Later, those were divided into 10, then 11 eras, then further subdivided into periods.<sup>64</sup> It all seems so orderly and correct — on paper. Radioactive dating, often potassium-argon, assigns an age to each layer as the same as the age of fossils found there and vice versa! Neither can be calibrated against any reliable standard so it's like 'circular reasoning' of logic; neither is proven. I've already shown that this type of 'millions-and-billions-of-years' type of dating is based on multiple unprovable assumptions. See 'a.' above. You'll find a great deal of scientific evidence for a relatively young universe on the Internet. <https://crev.info/>, [www.creationmoments.com](http://www.creationmoments.com), and [www.discovery.org/id/](http://www.discovery.org/id/).

- h. **Has the sun always been hot enough to support evolution's emerging life?** A recent article reported that our sun was 40% dimmer an alleged 4.6 billion years ago. Our sun is a nearby star. Stars generate light and heat by atomic hydrogen fusion. They don't cool down like muffins to form planets. Stars get hotter and hotter until they explode and collapse into a tiny, cold, uninhabitable, and enormously heavy dwarf. Astrophysicist Hugh Ross computed that by the time life allegedly began to emerge around four million years ago, the sun would've been 18-23% dimmer than today so no life could've begun evolving. It didn't! Life was created by God, each species reproducing after its own kind.

Pray for our nation. We continue to drift away from God ever farther ever faster.

Spiritually, our government is a train wreck. *Repent America or disaster ahead!*

## 5. The GOD PARTICLE: HIGGS BOSON, Second Greatest Discovery of the Century!

(DNA is number one, in my opinion, as we'll see later)

On March 15, 2013, the media reported that scientists at CERN, the European Organization for Nuclear Research, announced they are confident they've discovered the 'God particle' commonly known as the Higgs boson. This atomic particle supposedly came into existence one or two trillionths of a second AFTER the Big Bang, and existed for only a tiny, tiny, tiny fraction of a second. It is speculated to be the master particle which imparts mass to every other atomic particle that makes up everything physical in our universe. Evolutionists say it may hold the secret of how ALL atoms were formed, without a Creator of course.

Over 6,000 scientists worked on this project, some for 30 to 40 years. This is said to be the 'most astounding discovery of the century' because it fills in the missing center 'bull's eye' of the 'atomic standard model' chart. The Large Hadron Collider used in the discovery was built in an underground circular tunnel many miles long at a cost of around \$10 billion dollars over a 20-year period. Dr. Peter Higgs received the Nobel Prize for his discovery in late 2013. The Higgs boson was produced by slamming two proton beams into each other. (Go figure!)

Based on the usual evolutionary position of rejecting a God-Creator, I understand the title, 'God particle' to be a mockery of God by some scientists who may think they 'created' the Higgs boson themselves. I'm sure some are saying, "We didn't need God! We've 'created' the Higgs boson ourselves!" Nope! They only assembled the beams from protons that already existed. They did not create these protons from nothing. God had previously created the protons they used as well as the laws of physics they obeyed. They're like the scientists who bragged to God that He was no longer needed because they were now able to 'create' a man from dirt as God had done. God's reply, "Ok, let's see you do that again but this time, create your own dirt from nothing as I did!"

On the other hand, godly scientists would have their faith in God strengthened at seeing the discovery of the amazing 'God particle' as more scientific evidence of God's power and transcendent intelligence. That is, unless we later learn that what they thought they found was not the Higgs boson after all. That's a real possibility because they never actually saw the 'God Particle', only its side effects! The particle only lasts something like a billionth of a split second or less. So there is some skepticism as to whether this announcement of success is premature. Read on.

Following the announcement of the Higgs 'God particle' discovery, I read that 'theologians may rightly celebrate'. Why? Many cosmologists now recognize that IF the Higgs boson did exist, then our universe would've been so excessively fine-tuned that it should've exploded into atoms! Translation: the random accidents of 'un-intelligent' evolution just could not have produced the intelligent design we see in our universe, with or without a Higgs boson. More details on the God particle. [49](#)

## 6. Fine tuning of the earth to support life.

*Why is our earth finely tuned (adjusted) to support human life and all of the 1200+ planets discovered thus far are not?* [9H](#) (Whoops, make that 2,740 planets, as of January, 2013 with more being discovered every day.) A major evidence of **intelligent design** by a God-Creator is that so far, no other planet has been found with so many factors so exactly 'tuned' to be able to support human life. The extremely fine tuning of our earth to support human and other life is called the **anthropic principle**, which is powerful scientific evidence for divine creation.

'**Tuning**' includes the correct percentages of oxygen, nitrogen, and carbon dioxide levels in

our atmosphere, earth's correct distance from the sun so we don't freeze or burn up, a tilt angle of 23.5 degrees that determines our seasons, earth's rotational and orbital speeds, and many, many more, some of which have not yet even been discovered. It is said that a change of over 10% in many of these factors would make human life impossible. These two factors are not so critical: If the sun were twice as close or twice as far away, our temperature would increase or decrease by 50 degrees, wiping out all life. If the oxygen in our air were 50% instead of 21%, the first spark or lightning strike would set the atmosphere on fire!

Drs. Geisler and Turek beautifully describe only 15 of these amazing anthropic factors that fine-tune our universe. Also that if our universe had expanded only one millionth as fast or slower than it did, cosmologists themselves tell us that the universe would've either collapsed upon itself or never come together. No universe! More in Chapter 4 of this citation, including the extremely finely balanced gravity of the sun, something few have considered. <sup>9H</sup>

Astrophysicist Dr. Hugh Ross <sup>68</sup> computed the odds that only 122 of nature's 180 mathematical constants that 'fine-tune' our earth for life were just 'accidents of evolution'. (At [www.reasons.org](http://www.reasons.org) you'll find 300 pages of research documentation!) Not only did he compute this for earth but also for any of the  $10^{22}$  theoretical planets in the whole universe whether discovered yet or not! (How many planets is that: 1 followed by 22 zeroes!) The odds that these 122 constants evolved accidentally are a whopping  $10^{138}$  to 1 against. (1 plus 138 zeroes!) WOW! There are only an estimated  $10^{80}$  to  $10^{108}$  atoms in our whole universe according to Einstein's space density calculations!



*Personally I understand these huge astronomical odds better this way. I ask myself if I'd be willing to fly in an airplane with those same odds against landing safely! **Not unless I had a death-wish!** According to Dr. Emil Borel, any event with the odds against it of over  $10^{50}$  to 1 against it (1 followed by 50 zeroes), 'just ain't-a-gonna-happen', not in our universe.*

Dr. Ross also helps us to understand huge probability numbers by comparing them to coin tossing. It's not impossible to flip a perfectly balanced coin into the air and see it land on edge instead of heads or tails. (*This is probably more likely if it lands on a sloping surface since the coin's velocity vector downhill would tend to counteract the gravity vector?*) How likely would it be to land on edge even once? How about a million times, one after the other, a million 'coincidences' in a row? <sup>35, 68</sup> Out of nearly 3,000 new planets discovered so far, the earth is the only known planet which is exquisitely fine-tuned for human life. Does life on only one planet, ours, not infer deliberate intelligent divine creation of mankind?

**Tekkie Candy** There are only four fundamental atomic forces in our universe. When our universe came into existence, if the ratio between only two of them had been off by only 1 part in 100,000,000,000,000,000: **No stars! No planets! No us!** <sup>59</sup>

And how about the earth's orbital speed? That determines how far we are from the sun which is critical to the survival of all life. *Stand still, look down at your feet. Is- the earth moving? You don't feel it but the earth is rotating around 1,000 miles per hour at the equator. At the same time we're moving nearly 67,000 miles per hour as we orbit the sun. In addition to all that, we're also moving about 1,300,000 mph towards the constellation Sagittarius, plus six other directions as well! Earth movements are so unbelievably smooth we don't even feel them. Who organized all this? Who sustains our universe eon after eon? Random accidents? As if all this amazing fine-tuning of our earth were not fantastic enough, Dr. Martin Rees, Astronomer Royal of England, has shown that our ENTIRE UNIVERSE is SO FINELY TUNED it exists within the very narrow limits of only six mathematical parameters! <sup>63</sup>*

**CONCLUSION:** Whether by telescope or by microscope, God has mightily demonstrated His existence and His mighty power in the incredible design and creation of our universe. He demonstrated His great love for us at the cross! (Psalm 19:1, John 3:16)

**7. ONLY FOUR SCIENTIFIC LAWS CONTROL MOST OF OUR UNIVERSE!**

- a. **The Law of Gravity which holds our entire universe together!**
- b. **The First Law of Thermodynamics:** Everything in the universe is either matter or energy. Science can neither create something from nothing nor destroy anything completely. (Only God created from nothing and will eventually destroy earth completely.) Thus, our universe had to have been supernaturally created. One of God’s outstanding demonstrations for me was when I learned that the five million tons of hydrogen that disappears every second from the sun’s nuclear furnace was exactly the amount predicted by Einstein’s  $E = mc^2$ ! It didn’t disappear. It was converted from mass to the heat and light the sun generates in a massive atomic hydrogen fusion reaction!
- c. **The Second Law of Thermodynamics** (entropy): Unless acted upon by an outside force, everything in our universe is running down. Our earth is slowing down its rotation and every living thing on earth is ageing and will die.
- d. **The Law of Bio-Genesis:** Life can only come from previous life. This is why Darwin had to start evolution from some life already evolved in some primordial pool. Is this a ‘cheat’? He had no scientific nor evolutionary explanation for ‘first life’ from chemicals nor for animal instinct. So he just wrote: **“I’m not going there!”** <sup>36</sup>

*What are some recent results of replacing God with Evolution in our schools in the ‘60s?* Reader’s Digest, November 2015, p. 126 quotes *USA Today*. Since 1999, there have been 346 mass shootings with 1,700 dead. Prison population has quadrupled since 1980 and \$20 billion of our taxes are spent each year to incarcerate two million prisoners. Two thirds are returned to prison within three years. A major exception is Chuck Colson’s Prison Fellowship which has the lowest relapse rate of any program. They introduce prisoners to Jesus Christ who becomes their new ‘life coach’! (PBS Newcast 6 PM, 10/15/15)

**And where did all scientific laws come from?** Invented? No, all were only discovered, meaning they were already in place when the world was created! Evolutions’ answers will mostly be speculations based on many unprovable assumptions, beginning with dating. (Click [here](#).) In evolution, ‘anything goes’ to omit a Creator to whom we are ultimately responsible. Yet these speculations are taught in schools and universities as ‘facts’ these days, unlike when I was in college back in the ‘50s. Then, evolution was taught as a ‘may have been’. I believe that logic will show that a Creator-God is the most reasonable ‘first cause’ of everything. However, if you’re trying to hide from God, then the most wild speculation would be reasonable for you.  
(End Universe Evolution details)

\*\*\*\*\*

**DID LIFE EVOLVE?**

How many of you really believe that this cute little face is the result of a string of random accidents of evolution?

Before presenting evidence whether this is true or not, I need to define terms. Since ‘species’ and evolution can both be ambiguous, I will use ‘cross-species’ for evolution (macroevolution). This progresses extremely slowly over very long time periods like millions of years to



gradually become a new type creature, like a fish to an amphibian like a frog. 'Variation' (microevolution) is defined as a change that can take place in only a few generations but is still basically the same type creature. This includes different types of dogs, cats, or horses. They remain dogs, cats, or horses. Unfortunately, evolutionists often inappropriately use examples of variation as examples of evolution as we shall soon see.

I do appreciate the years of intensive research that has gone into evolutionary theory by many brilliant men. But let us remember that the meaning of the word 'theory' is also ambiguous. To the non-scientific majority it can also be interpreted as a proven fact. But to the scientific community it can also mean just an unproven idea as well as a proven one.

EVOLUTION'S NOT A FACT; IT'S A WISH THERE'S NO GOD TO WHOM WE'RE ACCOUNTABLE!



**22 Reasons Why Evolution of Life Cannot Be a Fact.** These reasons expose evolutionary 'leaps' over good science. *For more information, click on '[\(More\)](#)' below. To return, hold ALT and press ← (not <).*

- 1. Everyone believes in the evolution of life, don't they?** After all, it's taught as a fact from grade school through university and beyond, so it must be true, right? No! *This citation takes you to a 23-page document of 927 scientists in 38 countries who reject the evolution of life based purely on scientific evidence.* <sup>82</sup> You may add scores of more scientists with advanced degrees at the *Institute for Creation Research (ICR)*. Let's examine evolution now, then you decide if it's a fact.
- 2. Darwin's own evidence proving evolution true has never been found.** Darwin's stated proof would be to find 'innumerable' fossil-series showing very, very gradual cross-species evolution over millions of years in Chapter III in his book, **Origin of Species 150<sup>th</sup> Anniversary Edition.** <sup>36B</sup> A hundred million fossils are to be found in museums today. <sup>27G</sup> *Not even one series of any single species has been found after 150 years.* Therefore one missing link or even dozens of them do not prove evolution as is frequently claimed. 'The fossils still say no' and that's the title of the book cited here. <sup>38</sup> ([http://evolutionfacts.com/picture\\_gallery.htm](http://evolutionfacts.com/picture_gallery.htm) shows a great picture gallery of fossils. <sup>27B</sup>)
- 3. Darwin's assumption that evolutionary offspring inherit a blend of both parents' traits is disproven by modern genetics.** Dominant and recessive genes as well as pure chance determine which characteristics are passed on to offspring. The miracle of self-healing is only one of these. Otherwise the slightest injury would eventually be fatal. No evolution. Modern Darwinists (Neo-Darwinists) no longer believe in Darwin's 'natural selection' and blending of traits of parents but think random mutations produce cross-species evolution. We shall soundly disprove this later on in number five. **(More)**
- 4. Darwin never demonstrated one single cross-species example of evolution.** <sup>38</sup> Evolutionists of today often deceptively point to finch beak drawings and the ubiquitous British peppered moth as examples of evolution. Both of these are only variation within the same species, not cross-species evolution. Deliberate deception?
- 5. Cross-species evolution had never been observed in nature or reproduced in the lab.** (More in the next item.) A 71-year experiment producing mutations in fruit flies in labs around the world simulated millions of years of evolution and failed miserably. <sup>27K, 39C, 41</sup> Here are at least *28 reasons why mutations cannot produce viable evolution.* <sup>27D</sup> **(More)**
- 6. 'Cambrian explosion': Fossils of all 30 phyla (categories of life) appear suddenly, with no evidence whatever of any previous evolution, in the Cambrian**

**period of the Paleozoic era!** <sup>39A</sup> Only bacteria and one-celled creatures existed for several million years until this sudden 'explosion' of life. ([More](#))

- 7. Did Darwin 'cheat' by skipping how life began, then starting evolution with an already-evolved, reproduction-capable organism?** Well, yes and no. No in the sense that he finally admits it. But Yes in the sense that he waited to admit that until Chapter VII, page 188 of his book, first paragraph, <sup>36A</sup> where he said, in effect, 'I can't explain instinct, how the first life began, and several other major difficulties with my evolutionary ideas so OOPS, I'll just skip all that and leapfrog to a fully formed, reproduction-capable organism to begin evolution.' It's then left to the reader to erroneously assume evolution really began from simple chemicals in that slime pool or ocean. Darwin even asserted that life may have indeed originated in a slime pool or ocean but he said, "I choose not to go there." That means he has no evolutionary evidence or explanation for that either. No one has ever created life from chemicals. That's exclusively God's domain. Dr. Kenyon's attempt to explain 'life from chemicals' is here too. ([More](#)).
- 8. After denying a real God, Darwin invented a 'mythical god' to explain the fantastic complexity of the human eye.** Yes, he 'supposed into existence' a power which guided all worldwide evolution for around 8.7 million different species simultaneously for millions of years! Only a 'mythical god' could do that but only in Darwin's imagination. He had to come up with some explanation for the enormous complexity of the eye in Chapter VI because he wrote it was 'absurd to believe such complexity could result from tiny random changes over millions of years'. <sup>36C</sup> But isn't a 'god' supernatural, not science? ([More](#))
- 9. Instinct and behavior contradict evolution.** Darwin was particularly disturbed by many creatures which are abandoned at birth yet show amazing instinct like the bronze cuckoo which, having never been shown the way, migrates several thousand miles over open ocean and back! ([More](#))
- 10. The fertility of both plants and hybrids contradicts evolution.** They didn't fit into Darwin's speculations of evolution so he just didn't go there. See Chapter VIII of Darwin's book. <sup>36A</sup>
- 11. Viruses, bacteria, and many insects never evolved to other creatures.** Viruses and bacteria have been around for two billion years longer than us! Many insects from millions of years ago are still pretty much the same today. Click ([More](#)), watch for a word from **ANT**ony.
- 12. DNA complexity does NOT always increase in more 'allegedly highly evolved life'!** Recent detailed analysis of the octopus genome shows it to be more complex than human! No evolution here! ([More](#))
- 13. The fantastically complex universe and every tiny atom in it did not come into existence from unbelievably precise sequences of random accidents.** The Mona Lisa, a very famous painting, exhibits both intelligence and fine design. How do we know it had to have been painted by someone and was not a random accident? Because it exists and it exhibits both intelligence and design. In the same way, our universe exhibits both incredible intelligence and fantastic design. Therefore a 'universe designer' must exist because the universe exists. We are inexcusable to not see God in nature. (Romans 1:20, Psalm 19:1) Could there be some other reason evolutionists refuse to acknowledge God? Like maybe not wanting to be accountable to an all-seeing God? Just try telling God you couldn't understand His intelligent design after ignoring this



compelling evidence: click on [Our universe](#) and [Appendix F-2](#). No excuse! Romans 1:20.

- 14. Evolution does not conform to the 'gold standard of science': observable and testable.** All evolutionary examples I've found so far are only variation within the same species, not cross-species evolution, except of course, in speculative art work. Nobel Laureate Dr. Robert R. Laughlin, Professor of Physics at Stanford, details some deceitful evolutionary experiments in his book **A Different Universe**.<sup>65</sup> True science can not only test but also predict future observations. Cross-species evolution is neither observable nor testable. More: "*Intelligent design by our Creator is both, and scientifically evidenced!*", astrophysicist Dr. Hugh Ross.<sup>68</sup> ([More](#))
- 
- 15. Evolutionary dating methods giving ages of millions of years for fossils and the geologic strata they are found in is unreliable.** They're based on several unprovable assumptions.<sup>27A</sup> Ditto for ages and distances to stars because that too is based on unproven assumptions. ([More](#))
- 16. The law of entropy makes evolution scientifically impossible.** Nothing can become more complex, even if given millions of years, without continual outside intervention. Iron rusts, medicines expire, all life ages, then dies. Yet evolutionists continue to assert that bacteria 'prove' evolution by 'evolving' antibiotic resistance. **False!** They lose genetic information instead of evolving. ([More](#))
- 17. The law of syntropy makes evolution scientifically impossible.** It prohibits reproduction numerous times over thousands or millions of years with only a partially developed reproductive system. NO evolutionary reproduction can take place except with a fully developed reproductive system. Since Darwin ignored that and started with a fully developed organism, this may not apply to him but it certainly does to modern Neo-Darwinists who do believe life really started from chemicals in a primordial slime pool, or the ocean. ([More](#))
- 18. The mathematics of probability makes evolution scientifically utterly impossible.** The probability that even a single DNA gene of any of the 8.7 million species of life could have come into existence is infinitesimally small. The odds of this happening is a number which is *many billions of times greater than the time our universe has even existed!* Click [here](#) for how microbiologist Dr. Frank Coppedge computed this. Other ways in which math proves evolution impossible are found in Dr. Morris' terrific article at this citation: <sup>31</sup> ***The Mathematical Impossibility of Evolution.***
- 19. Knowing what we do today, evolution could've never been accepted as scientific 160 years ago. Most of the scientific knowledge of the cell and of genetics was extremely primitive in the 19<sup>th</sup> century when evolution was conceived.** Back then, most people didn't even believe in germs, and that rotting garbage spontaneously created rats. Pasteur's germ theory wasn't published (in faraway France) until the year Darwin published his ideas on evolution. The laws of genetics and inheritance were in their infancy and, like the idea of germs, were not widely accepted. The human cell was a total mystery. Darwin called the cell 'a black box' because almost nothing was known of it. DNA wouldn't even be discovered until around 100 years later. Read Dr. Michael Behe's ***Darwin's Black Box*** for what Darwin didn't know.<sup>32</sup>

Today, the laws of genetics have also been refined and verified which make several of Darwin's assertions impossible. DNA complexity cries 'intelligent' creation, not an innumerable series of fantastically lucky accidents! Dr. Antony Flew, leading atheist of his

day, discarded evolution after discovering the fantastic complexity of DNA that could only have been created by supernatural intelligence. Only divine intelligence could have created such staggering complexity. <sup>8</sup>

**20. Evolution theory continually repudiates 'missing links' and 'backtracks.'** When I was in college, we were descendants from chimps. Now they say we're descended from some group of ape-like ancestors. One 'missing link' after another is being discredited. After two supposed missing links to humans were disproven, Ardi and Lucy, the February 2013 Scientific American magazine stated, "We're now having to rethink all we ever thought we knew about evolution." ([More](#))

**21. Evolutionary hoaxes and frauds.** Ernst Haeckel's series of phony drawings of 1866, asserted that all embryos undergo real-time evolution in the egg or uterus before birth. It's still in a number of school text books though proven false over 100 years ago. You'll find a string of notorious 'missing link' hoaxes and mistakes in the 'details' section below. ([More](#))

**22. No scientific data exists until 'Planck Time' AFTER the Big Bang. This renders evolution's mathematical speculations invalid, including their weird 'quantum fluctuation' explanation of how our universe created itself without God! ([More](#))**

Has evolution been good for our society? How about the increase in crime and mass-shootings since 1963 when God, Bible reading, and prayer were replaced by evolution in our schools? <sup>25</sup>

During the opening session of the 23<sup>rd</sup> National Apologetics Conference held in 2016 in Charlotte, NC, Dr. Norman Geisler presented the following evil 'fallout'. *Between 1963 and 1992. Abortions went up 1,000%, crime increased 500%, teen suicide tripled to 300%, and both divorce and teen pregnancies divorce doubled.* <sup>25</sup> Jeffrey Dahmer, the notorious cannibal serial killer, is a great example of what happens when God's absolute morality is replaced with the relative morals of evolution: "They taught me I'm only an evolved animal, so what's wrong with what I did?" Atheist Richard Dawkins would say, "We can only dance to our pre-programmed DNA we are accidently born with." He's right about that if his 'We' includes only atheistic evolutionists! Read now about what Peter Hitchens has to say about the end result of evolutionary teaching in a number of countries. (Peter is the brother of one of the most outspoken atheists of our day, Christopher Hitchens.)

Peter Hitchens was an atheist because he enjoyed 'freedom from God'. He begins his book, ***The Rage Against God, how atheism led me to faith***, with sharing that he burned his Bible at age 15. <sup>83</sup> However, as an international journalist who spent years in several atheistic countries, he saw its evil fruit. Many of the people were warm to their own families, yet towards everyone else they were a thieving, lying, suspicious, rude, and ugly people, quite apart from the influence of communism. For example, in Moscow, drivers even hide their windshield wipers except when it actually began to rain. Then traffic all comes to a halt as drivers stop to remount their hidden wipers. In Somalia, with no effective government, the people were like wild animals so Peter had to hire two pre-teen bodyguards with AK-47s.

**FINALLY, what is the real message of the evolution 'religion'?** That the true God is unnecessary to explain the existence of life and of our universe. Therefore, we are morally accountable only to society and then only if we're caught. "Evolution gives us our sexual freedom," was the quote of famous British evolutionary biologist and prolific evolutionary author, Sir Julian Huxley. Freedom to indulge in all sorts of sin? Yes. Freedom from future consequences both here on earth and later at God's eternal judgment? NOPE!

NOTE: Sir Julian was the grandson and disciple of Thomas Huxley, 'Darwin's bulldog.'



It appears to me that the evidence presented above scientifically demonstrates that the *evolutionary religion pyramid* is built top-downward beginning with [absolute faith in the scientifically impossible](#), [firm conviction that anything is possible, given a few million years](#), and is [‘supported’ by unproven or missing evidence](#).

Therefore the ‘theory’ of evolution should rightly be called a ‘hypothesis’ which is pure speculation. Geisler and Turek’s book title expresses my view of evolution which is ***I Don’t Have Enough Faith to be an Atheist!*** <sup>9</sup>

Yes, this assumes evolutionists are also often atheists. Most evolutionists whom I’ve met are. However, some unsuccessfully attempt to straddle the fence as ‘[theistic evolutionists](#)’. (Click [here](#) for conflicts with the Bible) Unlike the real God, no one is accountable to Darwin’s ‘god’ and that’s what makes evolution so popular. During my lifetime I have also seen evolution change from a ‘could’ve been’ to ‘it’s a fact no one must dispute’. If you’re still convinced evolution is a fact, listen to these scientists discuss **Evolution’s Mistakes**: <http://www.creationmoments.com/category/radio-transcripts-categories/evolutions-mistakes>.

=====  
Click [here](#) to skip these ‘(MORE)’ details below.

Details of ‘**Did Life Evolve?**’ above

Darwin may have been a church-goer but most likely not a genuine Christian. Why? He abandoned God as Creator and began his evolutionary theory after the tragic death of his ten-year-old daughter Annie. Few people know that Darwin, though a brilliant observer, had no formal scientific training. Also few people know that he himself was so unsure of his evolutionary ideas that he delayed publication for many years. Darwin admitted that his evolutionary theory had a number of major weaknesses in Chapters VI, through IX of his book, ‘**Origin of Species**’. <sup>36</sup> He reluctantly published only after Thomas Huxley, ‘Darwin’s bulldog’, began proclaiming it as a fact years later. Darwin’s doubts persisted as we find this quote in his *Life and Letters* of 1887: “Often a cold shudder has run through me, and I have asked myself whether I may have not devoted myself to a fantasy.”

1. (Everyone believes ... ; no details)
2. (Darwin’s own evidence ... ; no details.)
3. **Darwin’s assumption that evolutionary offspring ...** . The fact that evolutionary offspring always inherited a blend of the very best of both parents’ traits has been disproven by modern genetics. Yet, evolutionary school text books are filled with detailed colored drawings of what they might have looked like. Students accept them as real.

**WHAT DARWIN DIDN’T KNOW**, <sup>107</sup> by Dr. Geoffrey Simmons, documents a host of modern discoveries rendering Darwin’s conclusions in the late 1850s invalid. <sup>107</sup> Another great book is Dr. Stephen Meyer’s, **Darwin’s Doubt**, Dr. Meyer also debates some world-class evolutionists like skeptic Michael Schermer in this stimulating video at: [www.darwinsdoubt.com](http://www.darwinsdoubt.com). Also see these citations. <sup>27G, 38</sup>

4. (Darwin never demonstrated this; no details.)
5. **Cross-species evolution never observed in nature or in the lab. (Fruit flies)**  
The fact that evolution (cross-species) is both observable and testable is grossly untrue. Variations within a species, like breeding horses or dogs, is observable. Some evolutionists try to deceive us by pointing to variations as being the same as evolution. Not true, don’t

be deceived.

Mutations are accidents in the reproduction of DNA which causes an abnormal departure from normal development differences. Modern Neo-Darwinists favor mutations as the driving force of evolution over Darwin's original 'natural selection' but that has since been disproven by the laws of modern genetics.

[The 71-year fruit fly study](#) was begun in 1906, by Dr. T. H. Morgan at Columbia University. He and his successors simulated millions of years of evolution in hundreds of thousands of generations of evolution in the lab. Fruit flies mature and reproduce every 12 days. Bottles, each containing 50 flies, were shipped to labs all over the world in addition to labs in the U.S. After years of waiting, without many mutations, the process was speeded up with radiation and various toxins. All these labs examined the flies every generation for mutations. Dr. T.F. Dobzhansky, Morgan's successor at Columbia, published the results in 1977. **Most mutations were neutral or harmful.** (One fly had a leg growing from his head.) **Not one case of an increase of survivability or even the beginnings of cross-species evolution were observed.** [27K](#), [39C](#), [41](#)

This study also rebuts the modern Darwinist's claim that just the right series of sudden random mutations in DNA drove evolution. [It also demonstrates the truth of 28 reasons why mutations could never have driven evolution.](#) My favorite of these reasons are 10, 11, and 19 which compare the mathematical odds against evolution to the estimated number of atoms in the whole universe! [27D](#) This alone would show that even billions of years would just not have been long enough for life to evolve.

A recent *CreationMoments.com* article told of an evolutionist's demonstration of accidental mutation 'creating' new information in the DNA that led to eventual evolution into more complex new types of creatures, as from a fish to a frog. The evolutionist had each of a large group of children draw a letter of the alphabet from a large box.

After many, many attempts, finally three children drew the letters 'c-a-t' in sequence. Proof of evolution to a new more highly evolved creature by a series of accidental mutations? Let's look at the science and the math.

- a. The c-a-t 'accident' has meaning only to English speakers. It's gibberish to all other nationalities. This example applied to mutation would be meaningful ONLY if the cell DNA mechanism knew what to do with the mutated information. Elsewhere, I have revealed that DNA has a self-correcting feature. [55](#) It does allow small variations from the norm but destroys cells that have mutated beyond the norms.
- b. Evolution by mutation to more complex creatures requires both a male and female. It also assumes that all the accumulated gradual mutations are passed on to the next generation for millions of generations. To increase the chances of this, both parents need to have evolved, independently — the identical mutations around the same time, over the same millions of generations! Then they must evolve mating instinct, then find each other to mate. (Darwin wrote that he 'refused to go there' to explain any instinct, mating or otherwise. [36A](#))

**SCIENTIFIC?** The laws of mathematical probability and the laws of genetics soundly trounce evolution by mutation as a fact. (Here are 28 more reasons why evolution by mutation is not scientific, not true. [27D](#)) Evolution's true nature is a '*blind leap of faith into the dark*', attempting to eliminate the God-Creator to whom we're all ultimately accountable. **Freedom?** No, it's the same as speeding down a narrow dirt road miles from town at 100 mph. — with your hands 'free' from the steering wheel. Yes, that works but not for long!

One sharp bend in the road or a pothole, a flaming wreck is inevitable!

I find it both unscientific and unbelievable that the astronomical number of the gradual accidental, yet perfect, and correctly sequenced, serial mutations of just the proper type and degree, for every part of every internal organ, appendage etc., of every living thing could take place over millions of years AND be perfectly replicated in every one of those billions of generations. Now multiply this unbelievable complexity by every one of the estimated 8.7 million known species. <sup>54</sup> Again, evolution reveals it's a [blind leap-off-a-cliff-in-the-dark type faith](#), that which they accuse creationists of believing! No wonder, Dr. Geisler named his great book, ***I Don't Have Enough Faith to be an ATHEIST!*** <sup>9</sup>

Additional mutation experiments were conducted on E. Coli bacteria. In contrast to fruit flies which reproduce every 12 days, these bacteria reproduce every 15 minutes, so the evolution simulation was accelerated by over 1,100 times. Both these experiments and the fruit fly studies at Colombia proved that a series of random DNA accidents is just as likely to improve a species or create an eventual new life form as a series of unplanned accidents will improve the drivability and appearance of your car or to make it evolve into a truck! OK, this is not a biological example, but 'accidents' are accidents, usually with bad results.

As in fruit flies and bacteria, most mutations in humans don't produce any benefits. We're generally taller and much healthier than a hundred years ago but that is proven due to discoveries in nutrition and medicine, not evolution. Different colored eyes and a host of other normal variations are also not caused by mutations either. Geneticists will tell you this is caused by which genes, already present, become dominant. Most all mutations are neutral in effect but most of the rest are harmful or deadly. Mutations are usually rare because our cells have a self-correcting mechanism, even causing the death of a mutated cell. In fact, this citation states that for every neutral or possibly good mutation, there would be 10,000 harmful or even deadly ones. <sup>55</sup>

However, we have trillions of cells so sometimes our self-correction feature fails. [What is the most observable mutation that occurs in humans? CANCER, the second leading cause of death!](#) Other mutations cause birth defects of all kinds, many soon fatal. Others include Down's syndrome, retardation, deformities, cystic fibrosis, spina bifida, club foot, cleft palate, hare lip, Huntington's chorea, elephant-man syndrome, and many other genetically caused defects and deformities, not exactly what you want from evolution.

**6. 'Cambrian Explosion':** Fossils of [life forms](#) in all 30 of the major categories of life, called phyla, which exist today, appeared suddenly, fully formed in the Cambrian period of the Paleozoic era with no previous evolution! This is aptly called the '[Cambrian Explosion](#)'. Before that, according to the evolutionists' own time scale, bacteria and other micro-organisms were the only life existing on earth for over 80% of our earth's four-billion-year existence. Then, suddenly, by evolutionary dating, only 500 to 570 million years ago, VERY complex creatures, like the trilobite, appeared suddenly in the Cambrian era with no previous evolution whatever. <sup>39A</sup> (Click [here](#) for dating issues.)

The trilobite is a small sea creature whose eye was so complex and fully developed that an evolutionist said, "[The trilobite 'hit upon' the best possible lens design that optical physics has ever been able to formulate!](#)" <sup>27H, 39A</sup> The trilobite did not accidentally 'hit upon' perfection. He was created that way without any 'help' from evolution. The ubiquitous E. coli bacteria also never evolved. They are the same today as they were, according to evolutionists, 3.55 billion years ago. There have been many different strains, some lethal, but they continue to be E. coli, not some other cross-species like snakes or rabbits.

Some scientists say all soft-bodied creatures have long since disintegrated. True, but the outlines of these creatures, including trilobites, are in museums today as fossils which were well preserved in what was once ancient mud. The 100 million fossils in museums around the world today testify to that.

## 7. Did Darwin 'cheat' by skipping how life began?

Charles Darwin wrote four chapters in His '*Origins*' book about what evolution can't explain: How the first life began, animal instinct, and pre-knowledge of migration. He said curtly and abruptly, "I'm not going there!"

With no knowledge of modern biochemistry, it was really easy for evolutionists back in the 1850s, to speculate how life evolved starting with a form already alive, capable of growing, and amazingly, able to reproduce all improvements of every generation to every succeeding generation, which has been soundly disproven by the laws of modern genetics.

Biochemists Dr. Dean Kenyon and a colleague published ***Biochemical Predestination*** <sup>50</sup> in the 1960s. He attempted to show how life could come from a primordial slime pool. They assumed that the multitude of all chemicals needed for life were present in the same place and at the same time. They declared that chemical molecules assembled themselves, accidentally, into massively complex proteins from 21 different amino acid combinations.

Scientific peer reviews, including honest evolutionists, just couldn't accept their ideas as true science. It wasn't long before they repudiated their book which was after all, mere speculation, not science. (Also see [Appendix F-2](#))



*Ignoring the beginning of life is the equivalent of keyboarding your computer in the dark with your fingers positioned in an incorrect starting position! Yes, your relative key strikes may all be perfect but you started on the wrong keys so the result is gibberish! Modern Darwinists 'proclaim as fact' that life began spontaneously (no cause) from chemicals or from outer space. I would ask them, "And where did the chemicals come from?" If they answer, I just keep asking, "Where did come from?" until they are forced back to a 'first cause' of the very first life. <sup>39c</sup> Big Bang? "OK, where did the 'stuff' that went 'bang' come from? And what made it go 'bang'?"*

*Scientists have never proven anything existed before the 'Big Bang', when time began. Since no God is required by evolution, evolutionists are left only with speculation of the first life problem. Some even believe in 'seeds from outer space, also unprovable. ("They're working on it!" was the answer given to me by one skeptic, for the lack of proof for evolution. Given how many scientists and universities have worked on this for ~160 years, wouldn't you think that by now they should have some concrete evidence?)*

The fact is that life is so complex, the probability against life evolving accidentally has already been computed as mathematically virtually impossible by several scientists cited in this book. One of them, molecular biology researcher Dr. James Coppedge, computed that the probability against even a single gene evolving is beyond astronomical. <sup>33</sup> It's a number nearly double the estimated total number of atoms in the whole universe! (Click [here.](#))

1

Just in case you're thinking that choosing the wishful speculations of evolution as a hiding place from a real God's judgement works for you, multiple mathematical proofs proclaim a resounding scientific no! More on the probability of evolution in [Appendix F-2](#).

The latest speculative evolutionary answer to the origin of our universe is: "[Quantum theory which has always existed.](#)" Whoops! 'Always existed?' Sounds like the supernatural instead of science! This contradicts the *law of cause and effect* which is the very foundation of every branch of science! Evolutionists favor quantum theory because it does so many weird things scientists cannot explain, they just assume it can also do the impossible. Oh, make that **did** the impossible. In this case it created our universe from nothing, organizing all in our unbelievably complex universe accidentally. Isn't that what one would call an oxymoron? [Click here for a rebuttal to QF, spontaneous quantum creation without God.](#)

**NOTE: More Speculations about How Life Got Started**

One recent explanation of how life began on earth, without God of course, seems to be the *Cosmic Ancestry* of Klyce. This combines several ideas including 'panspermia', the idea that life came to earth on flaming comets from outer space. (Yeah right!) No such life has ever been proven. A more spiritual explanation is that 'mother earth' is really Gaia', a real living goddess. For more on this, you may request the article *Cosmic Ancestry.doc* from the author ([EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com](mailto:EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com)) for more on this or Google these ideas. But I've never found a shred of scientific evidence for any of them. Speculation yes. Evolution no.

Eventually evolutionists run out of answers but one answered me recently that really made me think, "[They just haven't figured that out yet.](#)" True, but what evolutionists have already figured out, as well as valid evidence they choose to ignore, clearly shows evolution is a dead end in the wrong direction in the wrong ballpark driven by blind faith in bad science. Like Maxwell, the greatest scientist of Darwin's time, Nobel laureate physics professor Dr. Laughlin calls it 'anti-science'. <sup>65</sup>

- 8. Darwin's 'mythical power' (god).** To explain the enormous complexity of the eye in Chapter VI: "[To suppose that the eye with all its inimitable contrivances for adjusting the focus to different distances, for admitting different amounts of light, and for the correction of spherical and chromatic aberration, could have been formed by natural selection \(accidents\), seems, I freely confess, absurd in the highest possible degree.](#)" <sup>36C</sup> Then he says, "**... and may we not believe that a living optical instrument (the eye) might thus be formed (e.g. by accidental evolution) as superior to one of glass, as the works of the Creator are to man**"?

*(You'll notice 'Creator' is capitalized. This is only one of numerous times Darwin wavered between evolution by pure random chance and a Creator-God. Obviously, he was not totally sure of his evolutionary ideas but is clearly presenting it as an alternative to God. Darwin's 'god' was the alleged mysterious 'power' which he 'supposed into existence' and directed every step of gradual evolution for millions of species simultaneously for millions of years.)*

This strange 'power' would have to witness, then 'oversee' (control) every single tiny evolutionary change in every one of the 8.7 million species <sup>54</sup> in around 250,000 families of living things simultaneously over millions and millions of years. A 'power'? Nope, only a 'god' could do that, a mythical 'god' of course. [That's supernatural, not science!](#) Darwin had no idea of the enormous complexity of the eye we know about today. Read pages 174 - 1-6. In Appendix F-2, you'll read that the retina and its nerves in one eye have over 260 MILLION working parts! Also see this citation. <sup>37A</sup>

Some scientifically minded readers may ask, "[Why couldn't this 'power' \(force\) exist?](#) I would reply for at least three reasons. **First**, scientists only recognize four fundamental powers (forces) in nature plus mechanical forces. **Second**, the very, very gradual transition of any species to another species has never been found for even a single species after over ~160 years of diligent search, so according to Darwin's own criteria, this proves

evolution could never have happened. **Third**, let's assume Darwin's mysterious 'power' could forecast, as Darwin said, which candidates of evolution will live and which will eventually die off after millions of generations. Then how could it physically make these selections? **Fourth**, it's never been duplicated in labs.

Darwin's **natural selection** has two forces at work. The '**natural**' part is a series of very gradual random modifications of each life form. Modern Darwinists explain this by random mutations. However, either way, Darwin had a very good reason for his '**natura non facit saltum**' dictum he repeated over and over: that evolution must proceed very, very slowly over millions of years. **FLASH!** It suddenly dawned on me just now why this is required. If evolution made too large a jump, as previously illustrated by the 'fish-tile' being only partially evolved, it could neither survive in the water nor on the land. And **how about the first woodpecker?** If his brain evolved before the protection required, his brain would be mush before he finished pecking at his first tree. **NO EVOLUTION!** If he failed to develop a very strong beak and an enormously long tongue he wouldn't be able to eat any of the tasty grubs deep in the tree and he would starve. **NO EVOLUTION!** (And who told him he's supposed to eat grubs instead of tomatoes or maybe lizards?)

**The woodpecker tongue** is so long, when retracted it reaches around behind his neck! If the tongue developed first, with the beak not yet strong enough, he couldn't peck into trees to get his food. We have here 'irreducible complexity' with each part dependent upon all of the other parts. Darwin's evolution forbids simultaneous evolution of more than one body component at a time, lest the organism end up like the 'fish-reptile' above being unable to survive. *The woodpecker's brain protection, his long and very strong beak, and extremely long tongue had to have all been present at the same time in the very first woodpecker or no survivor to evolve!* Intelligent design was required so that all the parts of all organisms from plant to human must be coordinated to develop at the proper relative speed simultaneously. **NO WAY could all that just be accidental!**

British geneticist Cyril Darlington's proved that good mutations are extremely rare. For every mutation that gives you some type of advantage, there are 10,000 bad ones! See page 58 of this citation. <sup>54</sup> The **selection** part of natural selection 'selects' which mutation will be passed on to the next generation by Darwin's '**mythical god**'. Therefore, this 'power' knows which tiny step of evolution will give a survival advantage over all other life forms MILLIONS OF YEARS FROM NOW. It also 'knows' which will evolve to new species which species will be allowed to just die out, and which of the multitudes of species of ants, bees, flies, and countless other species will never evolve at all.

Only Darwin's '**god**' could know that for the trillions of evolutionary steps for 8.7 million <sup>54</sup> life forms simultaneously. Modern evolutionists also accept 'natural selection' as we read on the same page just cited: "... natural selection was identified as the only mechanism that could enable their propagation through the population". "Biology just doesn't make sense without evolution," is another 'untruth' that will not stand up to evidence. Sir Cyril Darlington, above, devotes an entire chapter in his book to refuting Darwin's erroneous 'blending inheritance' with the modern laws of genetics. But then Darwin hypothesizes several rare scenarios in which modern genetics could actually propagate an advantageous mutation, including 'genetic drift'. I was unconvinced that these rare scenarios would happen often enough to make any difference. Therefore, we're back to Darwin's supernatural driver of evolution, his 'mythical god'! I repeat, only an imaginary 'god' could do that, but only in Darwin's imagination.

(Oh, by the way, Darwin's '**Origins...**' was originally only about non-human life forms. About a dozen years later, Darwin extended evolution to humans in his **Descent of Man** in which humans



descended from an ape-like creature that lived in trees. Darwin didn't explain how he 'knew' that.)

Now I would answer Darwin's, "... may we not believe ... ?" with a resounding **No!** The laws of modern genetics, not fully developed in Darwin's time, state that all traits are not always passed on immediately from both or even one parent from one generation to the next. Some genes are dominant, others recessive, so it's a toss-up which characteristic is passed on to the next generation. Darwin said repeatedly that evolution could only take place in tiny steps for each generation: "**Natura non facit saltum!**" That means no species is going to see any tangible advantage for survival for many, many, many generations. That means for that long it will not yet have any advantage and will likely die out. Not pretty. Variations within a species is often abrupt but cross-species evolution requires, as Darwin said, 'innumerable' generations. Therefore a cross-species life form with so few changes between generations has about the same chance of dying out as any other over the next few millions of years! *No 'survival of the fittest' here!*

Another observation that stretches credulity beyond my breaking point is that the SAME SERIES of ACCIDENTAL MUTATIONS MUST OCCUR **SIMULTANEOUSLY** in MILLIONS of the same type life form, let's say fish, and in the SAME **APPROXIMATE SEQUENCE**, and **within each creature**, at the **same relative** rate over MILLIONS OF YEARS!

Enough numbers of a given creature must **also evolve in the same location** in order to find mates for reproduction, to escape predation, and to survive the attrition of aging and disease. Need I also mention again that the 'self-healing' ability must also be inherited by every generation or the slightest injury would eventually be fatal? Now multiply this by the estimated 8.7 million types of creatures. Therefore, we're back to Darwin's supernatural driver of evolution, his 'mythical god', overseeing and directing the microscopic mutations in millions of different types of creatures **SIMULTANEOUSLY** over millions and millions of years. Sorry, I don't have that much blind faith in Darwin's mythical 'god'. Neither do Doctors Geisler and Turek who explain why in their book, ***I Don't Have Enough Faith to be an Atheist.*** <sup>9</sup>

Now I would ask, "Why don't all the different creatures, including us, continue to evolve?" Evolution brushes aside this question with the 'fact' that the evolution to a new type of creature requires millions and millions of years. By the early 1900s most evolutionists realized that natural selection alone could never achieve cross-species evolution any more than artificial breeding could 'evolve' a "dog with antlers!" (That was a direct quote.) Neo-Darwinism was born, uh, evolved, and then was shortened to 'Darwinism'.

'Darwinism' touted random mutations as the primary driving force of evolution with natural selection to pass on the new traits, even though this directly contradicts modern genetics. <sup>27D</sup> Though it seems reasonable, we've already seen earlier that a 71-year mutation study on hundreds of thousands of fruit flies, simulating millions of years of evolution, has soundly disproven both the mutation and the natural selection ideas. Click: [here](#).


**9. Instinct and behavior.** Darwin chose to ignore two of the things only God could do: create life <sup>36C</sup> and implant amazing instincts and behaviors into living creatures. <sup>36A</sup> **Neither Darwin nor evolutionists of today have any plausible explanation for those.** In fact it was such a major problem for evolution that Darwin devotes an entire chapter to it as one of the **major** weaknesses of his evolutionary ideas. Instincts begins on page 188 of his book. <sup>36A</sup> It's filled with well-documented details of fantastic instinctive behavior of cuckoos, ants, bees, and other amazing creatures. Darwin offers no explanations but just keeps on blindly proclaiming, "**Natural Selection did it!**" Incredible! **Whoops**, I forgot that

'Natural Selection' was in reality a 'mythical power' Darwin had 'supposed into existence' to select and direct the billions of tiny steps of evolution for all creatures worldwide simultaneously!

Since evolution excludes the true God, bypasses scientific evidence, and that probability is overwhelmingly against it, it's magically easy to explain. Just say **the magic words: 'over millions of years anything one can imagine can happen'**. Then over recent decades that has become 'definitely did happen'. Though mathematical probability shoots down that idea in flames, let's assume that if evolution of life did happen, here are a few 'unwelcome' questions.

- a. **Without 'Intelligent Creation', how do creatures know what, or 'who', is food?**
- b. **How did random, accidental evolution 'know' what species of food** to mature for the 8.7 million species which were to evolve: bacteria, insects, birds, animals, and humans? **How did it 'know' when to mature the correct food** for each of these 8.7 million species over millions of years so that the correct food was **in place just as each species was evolved enough to eat it?**

Without 'knowing' all this, no species could've survived. **Clue: 'to know' requires intelligence** and that strongly infers a supernatural Creator with a massively intelligent plan over millions of years. It just as strongly refutes accidental evolution even beyond mathematical probability.

- c. **How do plants 'know'** which nutrients to use among many they draw from the ground? How do they 'know' they're supposed to use sunlight to convert those nutrients into more food for us? **How do these tiny orange seeds 'know'** how to grow into a tree, then produce oranges, organized into sections, *assemble very chemically complex vitamins, glucose for energy, and more*, to nourish us?  How does it know it must also create more seeds for future orange trees?

Does not the enormous mathematical probability against so many closely related 'near miracles' of such stupendous complexity cry out 'intelligent creation'? This Ph.D. says yes! <sup>31</sup> Does not the law of entropy forbid the same orange 'parts' from even surviving the weathering of thousands or even millions of years of evolution?

- d. **"Fantastic! Now that I've evolved wings, what do I do with them?"** After millions of years **how do millions of types of birds and insects 'know'** what to do with them?
- e. **How does a mosquito 'know'** that its proboscis, which evolved over millions of years, was for sucking blood? And do they know that without a 'blood meal', they can't lay fertile eggs to reproduce, stopping their evolution cold. And how did any of the animals the mosquito needs for life had evolved (accidentally of course) just as the very first mosquito hatched or evolved and needed food?
- f. **How does a tick 'know'** it's got to have a blood meal to reproduce? It can survive for up to a year without any food at all but how does it know to climb up to the very top of a blade of grass and wait for the next animal, or human, to come by? Then how to grab on to him with six legs and suck blood?

**g. How do millions of creatures abandoned at birth already 'know' what (or who) is food, how to find it, digest it, mate, and then lay eggs for the next generation? We call this instinct. Most all fish, turtles, insects, some birds, and other creatures are *abandoned at birth*. *Where did this amazing instinct come from? How about their life? Only from their Creator!***

**h. How do migrating birds and animals 'know' where and when to go, when to return, and how to get there?**

How does the amazing bronze cuckoo 'know' how to navigate thousands of miles over a trackless ocean? (See Chapter 3 of this book.) Abandoned at birth, the *bronze cuckoo migrates alone over thousands of miles of empty ocean to a tiny Pacific island, never having been shown the way. Evolutionists would agree with science that birds and other creatures navigate using the sun, stars, magnetic fields, etc. But who taught them how to navigate using them and who programmed the longitude and latitude of the correct destinations both outbound and for their return? Over their great migration distance, missing their tiny island target even by one degree or so would mean eventual drowning for ALL the bronze cuckoos.*

**i. How do cicadas 'know' to stay underground for intervals of a numerical prime number of 13 or 17 years then emerge by the thousands all at once?**

Answer: because other predatory insects emerging in swarms usually emerge in intervals of non-prime numbers! (Non-tekkies may google 'prime numbers'. They're also vitally important for computer and other security codes.)

This book by William Dembski may be helpful since it details how to scientifically tell the difference between 'accidents' and intelligent design. [51](#)

**10.** (Fertility of both plants and animals ... ;. no details.

**11. Viruses, bacteria, and many insects never evolved to other creatures.**

They've been on the earth several billion years before us. It takes a human nine months (270 days) to reproduce, but bacteria can reproduce every 20 minutes, 72 times per day. This gives bacteria a massive evolutionary advantage of 19,440 to 1 since bacteria can reproduce that many times while a human reproduces only once during the same 270-day period. Also, I might mention that E. Coli bacteria are pretty much the same today as they were millions of years ago, according to evolutionists. They also do not 'evolve' antibiotic resistance by evolving new DNA as is claimed. They lose DNA rather than evolve additional 'smarter' DNA! (for details, click here: [Dr. John C. Sanford](#). You'll find more information at these citations. [40](#), [61](#))

**And how about insects?** They 'evolved' LONG before humans. Fruit flies reproduce every 12 days; humans can reproduce, on average, once per year. This gives fruit flies around 30 times more evolutionary advantage than humans. So why didn't hundreds of thousands, possibly millions, of insect species evolve into higher life forms like humans? Instead, the insects of the world outweigh humans! Could the Bible be right, saying that every living thing reproduces 'after its own kind', not evolving into more complex kinds?

**'ANTony' says: "NO EVOLUTION HERE:"** Multitudes of complete ancient insects, including ants and bees, have been found perfectly preserved in hardened tree resin (amber). They've been dated by evolutionists themselves as allegedly 70 million years old. **Surprise!** They're basically the same as modern species!



With nothing to calibrate their dating methods, their extrapolation to dates that old is obviously unreliable because it's based on unprovable assumptions. For more dating details, click [here](#). At the same site, you'll also learn why distances of millions of years to stars may also be based upon unprovable assumptions.

**Surprise again:** Worker ants are sterile females with body parts their parents did not have which equip them to perform tasks *neither parent can do!* Amazing intelligent design evidence or accidental evolution?

Again, **ANTony** says, **"NO EVOLUTION HERE EITHER, but I do see abundant evidence of intelligent design by a Creator in both!"**

The 'standard geologic column' presents, as fact, the geologic eras and periods showing the simplest life in the Cambrian period and the more complex life, including man in the more recent Cenozoic era. These citations show it's untrue. [64. U. V](#) Most charts also omit the 'fact' that supposedly only bacteria and one-celled creatures existed for several million years before the sudden 'Cambrian explosion'. <sup>39A</sup> Read **Darwin's Dilemma**, watch the DVD [52](#) or this trailer for some really surprising facts: [www.youtube.com/watch?v=7-1nXb5uH8Q](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7-1nXb5uH8Q).

The great number of un-evolved fossils found from the Cambrian period continue to testify against evolution and for a Creator of all life. [27H](#) The fossil record Darwin hoped would be the absolute proof of evolution is still missing, strong proof that evolution never happened! Once more, intelligent creation is asserted by an intelligent God-Creator as opposed to the huge 'leap-off-a-cliff-in the dark' faith in accidental (therefore un-intelligent) evolution.

I could also mention the Coelacanth discovered swimming in the ocean some years ago. It was exactly like its supposedly extinct ancestor's fossil. No evolution here either. This citation lists five 'living fossils' supposedly extinct for up to 500 million years, according to evolutionists, yet they're alive and still unchanged today. [27I](#) No evolution here either!

## 12. DNA complexity does NOT always increase in more 'allegedly highly evolved life'.

For instance, reptiles, who supposedly evolved from fish, should show similar but more complex DNA than their fish 'predecessors'. This is flat out contradicted by their DNA being radically different. [9I](#) *Surprisingly, the octopus genome turned out to be almost as large as a human's and to contain a **greater number of protein-coding genes — some 33,000**, compared with fewer than 25,000 in humans. "The Octopus Genome: Not 'Alien' but Still a Big Problem for Darwinism. Defies Evolutionary Expectations"* will be found at this link:

[https://evolutionnews.org/2015/08/the\\_octopus\\_gen/](https://evolutionnews.org/2015/08/the_octopus_gen/)

This DNA 'non-similarity' is powerful evidence in favor of a Creator who created all life forms to reproduce after their own kind, not to evolve from other kinds.



Frog + kiss → prince (human) = fairy tale.

Frog + 300 million years → prince (human) = evolution. [38](#)

(Click [here](#) for more mind-boggling facts about DNA.)

## 13. The incredible complexity of our universe! Here are only a few examples:

Earth hurtles through space at incredible speed in nine directions at once! **Your body** is perhaps the most amazing example of divine creation. (Click [here](#) for amazing facts!)

These all point dramatically to an intelligent Creator. So clearly, that when we stand before God we will have no valid excuse to have denied His existence. (**Romans 1:20-32, Psalm 19:1-3**) That is, unless you include unbridled lust, hatred, cheating, lying, etc.

as 'reasonable' excuses. God does not! (Revelation 21:8)

#### 14. Evolution does not conform to the 'gold standard' of valid science;

**Intelligent Design does!** This 'gold standard' is the foundation of all true science: phenomena must be *both observable and testable*, e.g. repeatable or predictable. <sup>14</sup> Darwin never observed evolution and no one has been able to actually observe evolution after ~160 years in nature or in the lab. That's OK as a speculation or a hypothesis. Just don't call evolution a proven scientific fact!

Darwin's finch beaks plus the 19<sup>th</sup> Century peppered moths in England are offered as the best examples of 'testable evolution'. None of those are natural evolution in action. They're all just *variations within the same species, not cross-species evolution*. They're still finches and peppered moths. Same reason why some of us have blue eyes, some have brown. Same reason why *breeding dogs and horses is not evolution*. Are evolutionists *deceiving us by playing on the ambiguity of the word 'evolution'*? Yup! by declaring variation within a species, observable in only a few generations, is the same as evolution which by definition requires hundreds, even thousands or millions of generations. Read on.

Two of the greatest scientists of Darwin's time soundly rejected his evolution as being unscientific. These include Louis Pasteur, who proved that life can only come from life, and James Clerk Maxwell <sup>47</sup>, esteemed by Einstein as the greatest scientist since Newton.

Okay, let's assume fish did shrivel their gills while evolving their lungs towards becoming a reptile to then climb up on dry land. Evolutionists call this 'adaption to environment' and claim that DNA evolves additional information to modify whatever is required to adapt to a new environment, in this case from water to land. (See [Appendix F-2](#) where this very thing is addressed under a major heading.) Okay, back to our fish. *First, the lungs would develop while submerged in water so who 'teaches them' to breathe with water-filled lungs when on land?* As the useless lungs develop further and the gills shrink, I don't believe this 'fish-tile' could survive in either water or on land.

On land, his under-developed lungs would leave him too breathless to catch prey or to escape predators. In water his under-developed gills would present the same problem. In addition, during his 'evolution', the fins would be developing into rudimentary legs. Same problem here about catching prey or escaping predators. In water he would not be able to swim fast enough to catch prey. On land his rudimentary legs would not be efficient enough to escape predators. Since evolution occurs by a series of blind accidents, an amazing amount of intelligent design would be required for this 'fish-tile' to overcome all these problems. Whoops! No intelligence in evolution.

(I read of one 'scientist' who, without evidence, declared that reptiles evolved into birds because they just **got tired of falling out of trees!** Okay, then according to evolutionary theory, you'd think that by now at least some of my elderly friends, who fall down a lot, should've also sprouted wings, or at least little wing stubs. Nope, angel wings after you die don't count.) 😊

Astrophysicist Dr. Hugh Ross presents compelling scientific observations proving intelligent design at Purdue University in his DVD, ***Cosmic Evidences for Christ***. *He demonstrates that, unlike evolution, intelligent design is both observable and testable scientifically.* Also that an intelligent creator is a personal being, not just a force! <sup>68</sup>



#### 15. Evolutionary dating. Dates of millions and billions of years old and fossils millions of years are based on unprovable assumptions and therefore cannot be proclaimed as facts!

Nothing is available to calibrate objects that old. (Click [here](#) for eight reasons.)

**16. The law of entropy.** Given enough time, everything runs down, cools off, rusts, decays, or dies. This is the second law of thermodynamics (entropy) described previously. At a recent apologetics conference I attended, one of the fascinating speakers was Dr. John C. Sanford.

Dr. Sanford, is a renowned geneticist who also holds 25 patents including one for the 'gene gun', a major genetic research instrument. His book, **Genetic Entropy**, details research proving that organisms adapt to their environment, like becoming antibiotic resistant, by LOSING genetic information instead of gaining new genetic information as evolution asserts. It was found that bacteria and viruses **de-volve by sacrificing some other functions not needed at that time**. While they may be more fit by adapting to a finely tuned environment of the antibiotics, yet at the same time they lose other abilities, often including the ability to flourish in a normal environment. Sanford also presented a number of other research results to back up his 'reverse evolution'.

One analogy presented was that you can gain fantastic gas mileage for your car by reducing weight. We may do that by discarding unnecessary parts like seats, body, mirrors, until you only have a steering wheel, motor, transmission, wheels, then straddle a bare chassis! Yes, great gas mileage but not very nice for passengers or taking the wife and kids to go visit grandma on the opposite coast. Especially while driving in a blizzard or a thunderstorm with hail and high winds! After the presentation, I learned a lot more by just listening to a group of students ask hard questions. Oh, back to the stripped down car, before long it would rust, wear out, and end up in the junk yard. The same entropy happens to all living organisms who eventually age and die as they gradually lose genetic information to repair and rebuild cells. For more great information, watch Dr. Sanford on YouTube: <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eY98io7JH-c>.

**17. The law of syntropy.** Even bacteria cannot reproduce unless ALL of their reproductive system components are in place at the same time! That's called **syntropy**. This is true from the simplest reproduction by just splitting in two by the most primitive prokaryotic cells to more complex multi-celled animals. <sup>27C</sup> Darwin began explaining evolution with life already existing and reproductively capable. However, modern Darwinists believe life started with just chemicals. Therefore, they therefore must believe that life can reproduce without a fully evolved reproductive system. Just a 'little bit pregnant' yet reproducing millions of times while evolving a full reproductive system? Impossible! Bacteria may seem simple because we only see the end result of fully developed ones, yet they are very complex.

Let's say, for example, the very first bacteria evolved fully except for one part, the miraculous 'revolving door' properties of its cell wall that pumps nutrients in and waste out. In reality, it could never have even started to evolve without being able to absorb nutrients and expel poisonous wastes, much less 'evolve' a reproductive system to reproduce and carry on 'evolution'. And how about the other 8.7 million life forms? <sup>54</sup>

We cannot fault Darwin too much because he was unaware of the yet undiscovered massively complex DNA in every single life form required for reproduction and of modern genetics. We can fault modern Darwinists who know this yet declare evolutionary speculations as fact in spite of many contradictions of genetics and of science.

**Syntropy** has been around for many decades. Though it's really just common sense, this book <sup>27C</sup> was published by double-Nobel-Prize-winner, Szent-Gyorgyi, in 1977. [Syntropy proves that evolution could not have happened piece-meal over millions of years](#)

beginning in the primordial slime pool or ocean. No living thing can ever give birth multiple times over millions of years without a fully developed reproductive system! That's why Darwin cheated by ignoring the beginnings of life *and started evolution with life forms already developed to the point of begin able to reproduce*. That's like typing in the dark but, as I've done on occasion, positioning your forefingers hands on the wrong starting keys. *All the key strokes may be relatively correct but the result is gibberish!*

[Here's more you may not have considered](#). For animals, and surprisingly for some plants, males and females, as well as their sex organs, would've had to evolve nearby in separate but closely related sequences, and at similar rates from innumerable, incredibly lucky 'accidents' if evolution were true.

! Also they would've had to have evolved near enough to each other to mate. Whoops, the instinct to mate would also need to evolve in both male and female as they reached maturity at the proper time as well. If either grew too old before that happened, no reproduction! Even more hard evidence is that ALL organs must be sufficiently functional at the same time or the organism will soon die. Also ALL organs would've had to 'evolve' nearly simultaneously but at critically related rates. What good is a fully developed heart without lungs developed enough to give it oxygen? How about a blood supply with multiple types of cells but a heart insufficiently developed to pump the blood throughout the body to every cell? More problems with evolution than you thought? Yup!

**Syntropy is number 14 of 28 reasons why accidental mutations cannot produce evolution by a series of accidents** at this citation.<sup>27D</sup> In this same book just cited, Sir Julian Huxley, a modern leading evolutionary biologist and author, estimated that the number of mutations required to produce a horse, even a small one like the alleged Mesohippus, a tiny primitive horse, would require  $10^{3,000}$  mutations (1 followed by 3,000 zeroes). And not only that but all the mutations would have to be of the exact type needed and in the exact sequence required over millions and millions of years and with every tiny improvement passed on to EVERY succeeding generation. Impossible according to the laws of genetics known today.

[Let's consider human reproduction for a moment](#). After the miracle of fertilization, a human embryo creates around 15,000 new cells every single minute to produce an average baby of around seven pounds in only nine months!<sup>4</sup> All were constructed according to their blueprints in our DNA. (We won't even mention other essentials like various types of enzymes, chemicals, electrical activity, etc.) See [Appendix F-2](#) for a [few more miracles of the human body and a great YouTube video on the cell](#).<sup>60</sup>

**Scientist Sir Fred Hoyle** calculated the time required to evolve this complexity from a series of gradual, accidental evolutionary mutations. Hoyle computed that it would take 293.5 times the number of years than our earth has even existed! Clearly impossible! He said that [this evolution is just as likely as an explosion in a warehouse 'accidentally' producing a copy of Windows 10](#).<sup>34B</sup> Hoyle computed the probability of only one optical property of all living cells called chirality. The odds of that evolving randomly was **one followed by 40,000 zeros against it!** *Would you bet your life savings on a horse race or a football game with those odds? Would you fly in an aircraft with those odds against your returning safely?* See page 26 of this citation.<sup>u</sup> If you favor evolution over a divine Creator, you've already bet your whole life and future in a no-win situation. Watch this fascinating DVD presentation of the enormous complexity of reproduction.<sup>29</sup> You'll also find a multitude of creation miracles in this book about how our bodies function: **Body by Design**.<sup>30</sup> [Appendix F-2](#) reveals only a few, beginning with the [human egg](#).

However, I understand where Darwin was coming from back in the 1830s when he first began his evolutionary theorizing. The early laws of genetics were neither fully understood nor widely accepted. DNA and its genes had not even been discovered. [Had Darwin been aware of these, I doubt if there would ever have been an evolution idea.](#) I'm convinced that God put qualities into living things which we cannot detect through spectroscopy, chemistry, X-ray diffraction, or other techniques. This would include life itself, instinct, emotions, the miracle of navigation by migrating birds, fish, and other creatures, as well as many other qualities.

**18.** (Mathematics of probability ... ; no additional details beyond those already given above.)

**19.** (Scientific knowledge of the 18<sup>th</sup> century ... ; no details)

**20. Evolutionary theory repeatedly says, 'Whoops, not a missing link after all.'**

Evolution has changed quite a bit and is itself continually 'evolving'. The discovery of 'Ardi', 'Lucy', and the Archaeoraptor fossil from China 'proving' dinosaurs evolved from birds, were all hailed as great 'missing links' but were later discredited. If you'll pardon my grammar, ["Missing links aren't!" You must first show a complete evolutionary series. Then you can speak of missing links! Whoops again!](#) Evolutionists are reversing their thinking about our vestigial organs as useless leftovers of evolution since most all have now been proven to have useful functions. These include our appendix, tail bone, tonsils, and our life-essential pancreas! [39B](#) (My old medical book from the early 1920s even states the pancreas had no known function. Therefore, it would also qualify as false evolutionary leftover!)

A personal friend of mine recently had pain in her lower back. A local chiropractor began to treat what he called her 'prehensile tail'. Since my friend was a Christian, she probably would've told him, ["Your ancestors may have evolved tails, but God created me, knew me while I was in my mother's womb, and had already mapped out His plan for my life before I was even born. I'm NOT an 'accident' of evolution! I was 'wonderfully made' by God!"](#) (Psalm 139:13-17 [29, 30](#))

(Cordless phone cartoon at right: ["That's right dear, our ancestors had tails!"](#))



**21. Evolutionary Hoaxes and Frauds.** We've already covered Ernst Haeckel's Biogenetic Law which was soundly disproven in 1894. Jonathan Wells, in his **Icons of Evolution**, reported that seven recent school textbooks still proclaim Haeckel's false embryonic evolution as a fact! The following citation is a good refutation of Haeckel's 'Biogenetic Law' as well as refuting RNA as the pre-cursor of DNA that started life. [39A](#) ([RNA builds proteins specified by DNA instruction codes.](#))

Evolutionists continue to point to a 'missing link' found here and there as evolutionary proof of evolution. Then it's not long until it's proven that it was not a link to anything. The [Piltdown Man](#) fooled the best scientists for over 40 years but was proven to be a hoax. In 1925, John Scopes was prosecuted in court for teaching evolution instead of the Bible in a public school. His defense attorney presented a drawing of [Nebraska Man](#) a 'proof' evolution was true. '[Pig Becomes Man](#)', were the headlines when it was later discovered that both Nebraska Man and his wife were not missing links at all but had been 'created' in clay from a single extinct pig's tooth.

In 1999, a farmer in China proclaimed more proof for evolution by finding a bird-dinosaur, the [Archaeoraptor](#). The National Geographic published it, yet it was proven a hoax. You'll find a whole chapter of hoaxes and more discredited 'missing links' near the beginning of Ray Comfort's **Evidence Bible**. Yes, it's true that even brilliant archeologists aren't perfect and science has often had to correct discoveries. That's OK.



But it's not OK to assert fallible and sometimes mistaken science, as disproving the need for a God who created all things and to whom we are accountable.

## 22. No scientific data exists until 'Planck Time' AFTER the Big Bang. This renders evolution's scientific speculations (like 'QF' creation) invalid!! (More)

**NOTE:** the mathematicians asserting QF created our universe, not God, claimed it was only 'possible', not a fact. Not possible! Without data, mathematics without real data is only speculation. Read for yourself here [79](#).

Also here's what the 'Eye of God' galaxy has to say about QF and more. ([More](#))

(End details for [Did Life Evolve](#). Continue to [Appendix F-2](#) for more)

\*\*\*\*\*



### APPENDIX F-2 INCREDIBLE COMPLEXITY OF LIFE PROVES DESIGN and THEREFORE DIVINE CREATION!

Click on [bold blue underlined text](#) to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, press ← (not <)

Is the world map on this cow accidental or photo-shopped? Even if evolutionists agree that the cow's map was designed by a human, [how can they say that the cow itself was also not designed](#) but comes from a series of random, incredibly, lucky accidents?

After all, a living, breathing cow is infinitely more complex than the arrangement of spots on its hide. Here are some everyday 'miracles' of our human body.

\*\*\*\*\*

### Could the First Life Have Evolved Randomly by Itself?

Darwin chose not to address 'first life' but began his evolution with the very first life form not only fully developed but also capable of reproduction. I've talked to several college graduates who were taught evolution but *not one had ever read Darwin's book*. Neither were they aware he skipped the all-important origin of the very 'first life'. In the early '60s, professor Dr. Dean Kenyon and a colleague attempted to show how the first life could have indeed evolved from chemicals randomly in Darwin's 'pool' and published ***Biochemical Predestination***. [50](#)

They claimed that the very complex 21 different types of amino acid chains somehow formed themselves (they didn't say how). Then every one of them organized themselves into 'left-handed polarization' required by all life. Then each type of amino acid just kind of 'attracted' themselves to the dozens, sometimes hundreds, of correct partners, in proper sequences, then folded themselves in extremely complex ways (they didn't say how). **Drum roll ..... POOF!** DNA and then life!

As more was learned of the complexities of DNA, both professors realized it was much, much more complicated than they had even dreamed, so they repudiated their ideas and scrapped their book. This is only one excerpt from the DVD, ***Unlocking the Mystery of Life*** which is a lively discussion of a group of scientists with advanced degrees, led by biochemist Dr. Michael Behe, who launched the 'intelligent design' movement some years ago. [50](#)

### How do you decide if something was an accident or the product of intelligent design?

Common sense is one way. You wouldn't look at a wall full of complex, organized, detailed, Egyptian Hieroglyphics and attribute their origin to millions of years of sand storms and erosion, would you? How about the faces of the presidents on Mount Rushmore? Evolutionists would tend to say, "Yes, anything could have happened, given enough time." Other cases are not so simple. In those cases mathematics can be a great 'decider'. I would refer you to Dr. William

Dembski, a Baylor University mathematics professor, and his book, ***The Design Inference*** <sup>51</sup> This was the book that put former evolutionist Dr. Michael Behe on track to launch the 'intelligent design' movement some decades ago, which even caught the attention of *Time* magazine.



Dr. Michael Behe, wearing the green tie in the photo with the author, spoke at a major apologetics conference I attended. Darwin had no knowledge whatever of the incredible complexity of genes and DNA so he just called the cell a simple 'black box'. Behe details *what Darwin did not know* in his 'biochemical challenge to evolution': ***Darwin's Black Box***. Time Magazine called it, "the seminal ground-breaking work that launched the 'intelligent design' movement." <sup>32</sup> Dr. Behe gave a wonderful presentation from his latest book, ***The Edge of Evolution*** and autographed my copy of his ***Darwin's Black Box***.

Then he graciously posed for this picture. Dr. Behe told me that evolution has such a strangle hold on our education system that he didn't hear one word contradicting evolution as a fact until after he completed his Ph.D.! SCARY! See <http://www.discovery.org/p/31>. Read his great new book, ***The Edge of Evolution***: [www.ideacenter.org/contentmgr/showdetails.php/id/1449](http://www.ideacenter.org/contentmgr/showdetails.php/id/1449).

### **Darwin's Challenge and Our Answer**

**Darwin's faith in his evolution idea was shaken when he considered the complexity of the eye: "It would be 'absurd in the highest possible degree to believe it was accidental."** Then, a few pages later he says, **"If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed which *could not have possibly* been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, MY THEORY WOULD ABSOLUTELY BREAK DOWN."** <sup>36C</sup>

**YOU GOT IT, MR. DARWIN and HERE'S OUR ANSWER:**

**BY DIVINE CREATION EVIDENCED BY INTELLIGENT DESIGN  
and  
the 'IRREDUCIBLE COMPLEXITY' of LIFE!**

### **EVOLUTION 'THOUGHT BOMB': Does this blow evolution out of the water?**

If 'accidental' evolution is true, then if the reproductive apparatus of the male, of any or all mammal species, 'accidentally' changes in some significant way, reason dictates that the female reproductive system, of any or all mammal species, *must also undergo 'accidental' complementary changes (or vice-versa) AND in the same area AND about the same time AND the males and females must 'accidentally' find each other to mate!* Otherwise, evolution dies. **Speculation? Yes, but so is evolution!** However, all the above have this in common: *Reason, backed by mathematical probability, of these speculations being true about random evolution and randomly linked compensating changes is nil!* (**Oxymoron** **postscript:** *How many 'accidental births' until an enormously complex reproductive system 'accidentally' evolves to be able to first reproduce? Duhh?*)

If you have not read Appendix F-1, click [here](#) for 22 scientific reasons proving evolution of life was impossible, including a 71-year fruit fly study in number four, simulating millions of years of evolution which failed miserably. Now let's move on to solid scientific proof for deliberate intelligent creation evident in the human body.



**Amazing 'Quick' Facts: 'Shock and Awe' Evidence of Intelligent Design** <sup>29, 30</sup>  
(For additional information on each 'quick fact', Just click your left mouse button on **(More)**).

Have you ever challenged God with, **"Show me a miracle and I'll believe in You!"**  
**Here are only a dozen of thousands of interconnected miracles in your own body!**  
**Do you really think they support random evolution?**

- 1. A Human egg is tiny, only about the width of a human hair. An average of 15,000 new cells are created each minute to become a ten billion-cell, seven-pound (average) baby in only nine months! <sup>4, 80</sup> Are these not amazing miracles? This egg was fertilized only 16-18 hours ago.**



The two circles in the center are mother and father pronuclei and will merge their DNA in only a few hours. (My wife says it looks like a 'cookie with eyes'!) It could've taken up to two days for the microscopic sperm to fight their way up to the egg. Out of billions of sperm, the egg will only permit one to enter for fertilization. Amazing!

I'm astounded by the super intelligence of our Creator who could also orchestrate some cells to become your brain, others your heart, and so on! Every nucleated cell has a complete DNA blueprint for your whole body, not only how to develop into a baby but exactly how everything in our body will function for the rest of our life! <sup>29</sup> More about amazing 'blank' stem cells in the details. ([More](#))

- 2. Your heart** beats around 72 times/minute, 4,320 times/hour, 103,680 times/day, and over 37 million times per year! Every day your heart pumps around 4,000 gallons of blood, enough to nearly fill this 5,500 gallon gasoline tanker truck. <sup>76</sup>



- 3. Your kidneys** filter the 4,000 gallons of blood pumped by the heart each day. They clear waste and toxins from your blood with millions of filters in nearly 145 miles of tubules. They also maintain the precise percentages of calcium, potassium, and many other elements in your blood, some between very narrow limits, or you would die. <sup>76</sup> ([More](#))
- 4. Your blood** requires around 30 enzymes to clot. When you bleed, even beginning with tiny amount, a specific enzyme is required at each step to appear at exactly the correct time, remain for a specified period, then disappear, all in the proper sequence or you die! Each drop contains over 5 MILLION red cells which carry oxygen or you die. <sup>76</sup> ([More](#))
- 5. Your blood vessels** total around 100,000 miles long, enough to reach around the earth at the equator about four times! <sup>76</sup> ([More](#))
- 6. Your liver** performs over 500 amazing chemical functions essential to life! It produces numerous digestive enzymes and removes toxins from the blood, including the alcohol in liquor which would otherwise kill you in quite small amounts. <sup>76</sup>
- 7. Your 2,000+ enzymes make possible every biochemical operation in your body!** Every biochemical operation in your body requires a particular enzyme or a series of them in just the *right amount*, at the *right time*, and in the *proper sequence* such as in the blood clotting cascade of several dozen steps. Enzymes make biochemical reactions take place in as little as a hundredth of a second. Without them, this expert speaking on YouTube states some would take trillions of years or not occur at all! <sup>60</sup> What's an enzyme? ([More](#))
- 8. Your lungs** have a total internal surface area the size of a tennis court! We breathe around 24 times/minute, 1,140 times/hour, 34,560 times/day, and over twelve million times per year! Breathe in: oxygen is absorbed. Breathe out: carbon dioxide waste is expelled.
- 9. Your retina** in each eye must convert light to digital signals, just like the ones and zeros used by your computer. It converts light to strings of 1.5 million pulses per 1,000<sup>th</sup> of a second. <sup>36C</sup> Each eye contains two million 'parts' in 40 sub-systems including automatic focus, aperture control, and achromatic compensation. <sup>76</sup> ([More](#))

**10. Your brain operates** 100 billion neurons, each of which is connected to around 1,000 to 10,000 others with an estimated QUADRILLION synaptic connections. End to end they would reach around the world four times! Ten microns wide, if stacked up they would reach 600 miles into the sky! (Simple math) <sup>76</sup> ([More](#))

**11. Your amazing ATP** generates the energy for every process in your body. Your cells create biochemical energy by automatically assembling and disassembling molecules so fast it will process around 400 pounds of material each day! Your body cells are like a miniature city with a mayor, public transport, police force, public works to do repairs plus new construction, and a power plant: the amazing mitochondria! ([More](#))

**12. Your fantastic DNA** in around 34 trillion of your estimated 100 trillion body cells contain the complete master plan of 'you'. This is encoded in the sequence and combinations of only four amino acids! If extracted and placed end-to-end, your DNA would reach to the sun 56 times! Their geometry and mathematical 'divine ratio' (1.618) are mind-boggling! This ratio is also found in flowers, leaf stems, even in tornados and hurricanes. ([More](#))

(Note: The total number of body cells obviously depends upon your weight so different sources may use different numbers. How big a number is only 27 trillion cells of a particularly thin person? Counting 10 numbers per second (!), it would take you **100 MILLION YEARS** to count them! Unbelievable? No, just simple arithmetic!)

**NOTE: And what do all these amazing facts about your body have in common?**  
**Dr. Henry Morris proves we could not have evolved accidentally in his book,**  
***The Mathematical Impossibility of Evolution*** <sup>31</sup>

If you wish to go to Appendix F-1 for 'Did Life Evolve?' click [here](#).

Click [here](#) to skip details below.

=====

### More Amazing Quick Facts of Intelligent Design

**(1.) We all began life as a tiny egg** Three days later this tiny egg, emerging from an ovary, will become eight cells as it rapidly multiplies. Not long after, these will differentiate to become your brain, your heart, and all other organs and body systems including those producing enzymes and hormones. <sup>80</sup>



Some cells, called '[stem cells](#)' will have no specific function but will be 'blanks', you might say, which can grow into any body part! Stem cells from bone marrow have been used for years to grow a new immune system to cure leukemia and other diseases. Experiments have been underway for years to grow whole new body parts in lab dishes which looks quite promising.

\*\*\*\*\*

**(2.) Your heart** (No additional information)

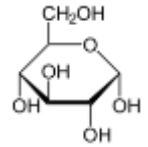
\*\*\*\*\*

**(3.) Your kidneys** also maintain a proper level of electrolytes in your blood. Potassium levels are especially critical since abnormal levels will cause arrhythmia or stop your heart. Potassium must be within only 0.85 points of mid-range and calcium must be within only 0.8 points of mid-range! A recent urinalysis showed that at age 83, I'm still within 0.1 point for both of these! How does your body regulate these two critical electrolytes so narrowly decade after decade? By random accidents? Don't think so.

Exact water balance is another function. Too much water and cells are improperly nourished. Too little can trigger strokes or heart attacks. Along with water, the kidneys also play a role in controlling our blood sugar (glucose), excreting it from our body when excessive. Glucose, at right, is required for energy in every cell and insulin, produced by the pancreas, is required by all our body cells in order to utilize the glucose. Too little insulin and glucose in the blood rises to levels that will begin destroying nerves and making us more liable to heart attacks and strokes. Too much insulin will cause blood sugar to plummet, sending us into a coma and possible death.



The structure of insulin is enormously complex! Each molecule consist of 51 amino acids, of 20 different types, arranged in precise sequences in two chains with three double sulfur bridges between them. Each chain has a diazene marker at the beginning and a carboxylic acid marker at the end! Random? Accidental? How likely? WAY beyond the mathematical probability, which is easily computed. I see Divine intelligent creation [31](#) again!!



\*\*\*\*\*

**(4.) More on blood clotting.** As previously mentioned, approximately 30 enzymes are required in a dozen or so steps when you bleed, even a little, or you eventually die. These 30 enzymes are created at exactly the right moment, in just the proper sequence, in the exact amount, and for an exact duration of time. Each enzyme triggers the next in a critically timed sequence! This sequence is biologically 'irreducibly complex'. ALL 30 enzymes had to have been present at the same time in the very first human, and that means also in his alleged ape-like ancestor, to survive the very first generation of evolution.

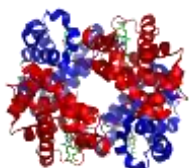
No way could these 30 enzymes have evolved in tiny steps over millions of years, nor the dozen steps of the sequence in which they are to function. Remove one step or even run one out of order and the blood won't clot. *You die!* Mathematical probability would show that in no way could blood have evolved 'one accident at a time' over millions of years and in the precise 'irreducibly complex' sequence required. [30](#) If you're still not convinced, Dr. Michael Behe will lead you through more details. [32](#)

Here's more wonderful evidence of divine creation! Circulating in the thousands of MILES of human blood vessels are 15 different types of blood cells and 19 critical levels of chemical elements, I noted on my recent blood test REPORT. Scientists computed the absolute optimal shape for maximum surface area of a cell to carry oxygen.

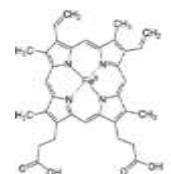
It was exactly the same shape as our red blood cells, a bi-concave donut-shape! Accidental? No, design! (Red cells are round but instead of a hole, sunken in on both sides where a donut hole would've been. [30B](#) ) And that's why most of us love donuts: our red blood cells see them as brothers I guess! 😊

\*\*\*\*\*

**(5.) Your blood vessels** also include microscopic capillaries which are so tiny that they only allow miniscule red blood cells to pass in single file! Each red blood cell has 25,000,000 molecules of hemoglobin to carry the oxygen. More on the ultra-complexity of hemoglobin. At



left, is a molecule of hemoglobin. It's constructed of hundreds of amino acids strung together in a precise order, then elaborately folded and coiled back upon themselves. At right is the basic → structure of the **green 'curlie'** in the diagram at left. The **curlie** contain the iron (Fe) components that transport molecules of oxygen. The extremely complex structure of hemoglobin is 'designed' by the genes



in our DNA. All accidental evolution? This engineer says, "Looks like deliberate intelligent design by our Creator to me!" Our red blood cells only live for three months so they must be continually recreated or we die. Another miracle. Here's more.

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hemoglobin> and <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Glucose>

\*\*\*\*\*  
**(6.) Your liver** (No additional information)  
\*\*\*\*\*

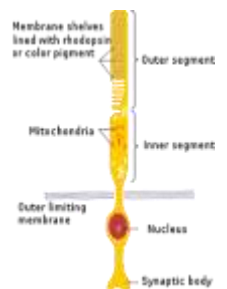
**(7.) Your enzymes (WOW)** are mysterious and amazing chemicals that make other chemical reactions possible or greatly speeds them up but are not changed in the process. *(Kind of like my wife Irene whose presence seems to brighten up a whole room by first attracting people to talk to her and then, feeling encouraged themselves, they begin to encourage others.)*

While we're on the subject of bio-chemicals, here's more. Every single one of the trillions of cells in our body is composed of over **200,000 amino acids** arranged into various types of geometries to make different types of protein chains. *Some are folded back precisely upon themselves to make additional connections! Many protein chains are composed of hundreds of amino acids!* All are composed of only 20 different types, but only left-polarized types are found in all living things (chirality). Doesn't this also point to intelligent design? All enzymes, amino acids, and proteins were constructed according to their blueprints in our DNA! Here's a fascinating YouTube video on the unbelievable complexity of a cell which is portrayed as a miniature city. [60](#)

\*\*\*\*\*  
**(8.) Your lungs** (No additional information)  
\*\*\*\*\*

**(9.) Your Retina** in each eye contains about **127 million** microscopic rod and cone cells that receive light from images, all within a tiny area of only about a quarter inch square! The light triggers a very complicated but rapid series of biochemical reactions that result in nearly instantaneous conversion to digital electrical impulses that are sent by 140 million nerves to your brain. These impulses consist of strings of ones and zeros just like the digital signals used by your computer. The brain then 'sees' the image. A recent TV ad said that we can see a single lit candle on a dark night from a distance of ten miles! I believe it. During my Marine Corps training, I was really amazed how far you could see a lighted cigarette in the dark.

Millions of rod cells that function in dim light are capped with about 1,000 layers of discs on each cell which we see in the diagram at right. These allow our eye handle a HUGE range of light intensities of a billion to one, from near total darkness to bright sunlight. Though extremely sensitive, they do not see colors or focus sharply. In contrast, millions of cone cells, which need more light than rods, give us sharp color vision. There are three types which are sensitive to red, blue, or green. When their outputs are combined we can see any possible color, something many animals cannot do. However, bees and some animals can see ultraviolet or even polarized light.



**The biochemistry of retinal processing of light is 'irreducibly complex'.** Lightning-fast biochemical reactions produce electrical signals for the brain using sodium and potassium ions playing 'revolving door' through pores in the cell. Again, 'irreducible complexity'!

Ralph Muncaster has condensed this down to 21 steps. [u](#) When light strikes our eye, all 21 steps take place in 127 million rods and cones in the retina of each eye in the incredibly short time of only a few picoseconds. How long is that? The time it takes light to travel the distance of

the width of a human hair at a speed of 186,000 miles per second! Then 140 million nerves collect and integrate this data, and send it to the back of the brain where we experience vision. Experiencing anything from tiny digital electrical signals (only zeros and ones) in our brain is an even bigger miracle! I also learned recently that the retina of our eye has incredibly fast micro-computers. The retina processes something like 1.5 million pulsed digital messages every 1,000<sup>th</sup> of a second! This is far beyond the fastest computer existing today. [36C](#)

*All this was unknown to Darwin but his 'faith' in his own evolutionary theory was shaken when he examined what little was known about the eye, ~160 years ago. In fact, His faith in evolution was so shaken he wrote it was 'absurd to believe it could've evolved by accident'. [36C](#) So he 'supposed into existence' a mythical power, a 'god', that watched over every step of millions of years of evolution of 8.7 million species for millions of years selecting which traits to pass on for an eventual evolution into something else. In **The Origin of Species**, Darwin periodically wavered between a divine Creator and the accidents of evolution. The main reasons why he delayed publication for years was that he was unsure of his new theory, mainly because of the complexity of the eye plus no explanation for instinct guiding creatures abandoned at birth. In fact, three chapters in Darwin's 'Origins' explain in great detail why he cannot explain those as well as how the very first life began. He leaves huge gaps in evolution theory by just saying: "I'm not going there!" [36A](#) I think it was because, deep down, he knew only God could explain those things but he had abandoned God long ago, it is said, when his daughter died.*

Here's a simple, but terrific, illustrated slide show of the amazing processes of the eye. Included are how it converts analog light intensity to digital pulses required by the brain.

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rod\\_cell](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rod_cell). More Darwin didn't know at these citations. [107](#), [108](#), [109](#)

\*\*\*\*\*

**(10.) Your brain** stores an amount of information equivalent to 20 million books. [96](#) A scientist affirmed, **"If the human brain is a greater computer than any designed by human intelligence, then how can we avoid the conclusion that it had a super-intelligent designer?"** [34A](#), [34B](#)

Dr. Max Tegmark, a professor at MIT, states in his, ***Our Mathematical Universe*** [101](#), page 206, that we have around 100 billion neurons in our brain. *If they were stretched out end-to-end, they would encircle the earth four times!* Our brain neurons cannot use the electrical signals representing the continuous information (analog) from the real world we perceive. They must be converted to digital signals of ones and zeroes. They're either one or zero, no in-betweens, much like your computer at its most fundamental level. How is this done biologically? By tiny sodium and potassium ions playing 'revolving door' through specialized microscopic channels in the neural cell wall. Up to 1,000 electrical pulses per second can be generated that can travel along nerves at up to 200 miles per hour.

In the case of the signals from the retina of your eye, their frequency would convey brightness information. For instance more frequent pulses would represent brighter light. It takes a lot more 'faith' than I have to believe all this just evolved randomly by accident! Copy this link into your browser. (May fail if just clicked.) [http://courses.washington.edu/psy333/lecture\\_pdfs/Week2\\_Day2.pdf](http://courses.washington.edu/psy333/lecture_pdfs/Week2_Day2.pdf)

-Position mouse cursor at lower center of the pdf download. A menu bar appears.

-Click the down arrow repeatedly to move through a slide show lecture. The super-fantastic

-slide lecture about the neurons of the eye and cell functioning begins at slide 26.

\*\*\*\*\*

**(11.) Your amazing ATP** generates biochemical power for every operation in your whole body. Almost everyone knows we get energy from eating our food which is converted to glucose by our digestive system. That's only the first step! **The cells of our body are so complex, they're like a**

miniature city, but unlike any other city you've heard about or even dreamed about!

'Mayor DNA' directs every operation: what to do, when to start, how strong, and when to stop. 'Transport trucks' bring food, oxygen, and hormones in and carry waste out. A 'police force', our immune system, stops invaders. The 'power generator' is in the mitochondria where a long series of repetitive biochemical operations occur at lightning speed converting our glucose to ATP. ATP then generates the 'electricity' that powers DNA, and every other operation in every nucleated cell. Each day your body recycles around 400 pounds of ATP at a speed of around 200 times per second! Very often all of these operations depend upon many other factors. <sup>60</sup> (You'll find a much more detailed analogy at this citation with 17 cell components as parts of an imaginary city. <sup>104</sup>) Plants operate much the same way in their chloroplasts but use sunlight for photosynthesis! If you want to know more, Google [ATP](#) and the [Krebs Cycle](#) for a truly 'fantastic journey' of how each of the trillions of cells in your body get energy to function.

\*\*\*\*\*

**(12.) Your fantastic DNA**, genetic information storage, is mind-boggling. The information coded in the DNA sequence for even a microscopic amoeba exceeds the amount of information



in **1,000 SETS of the Encyclopedia Britannica!** <sup>9F</sup> **Information coded in human DNA would stretch from the equator to the North Pole if printed in 12-point type!** <sup>104</sup> God's coding, analogous to our computer codes, are enormously more compact and are written in long

sequences of only four nuclear protein molecules. Intelligent creation is proven once again because the computed odds against accidental evolution are staggering! (click [here](#)) Recent research by Dr. John C. Sanford and others have discovered there is at least DOUBLE that amount of information in the DNA! <sup>61</sup> The additional information is revealed when you read the DNA sequence backwards just like reading the [Reverse Thinking poem](#) on page two of this book! That means the DNA for even a tiny amoeba has the equivalent information of around **2,000 complete sets of the Encyclopedia Britannica's 30 volumes each!** That would total **60,000 volumes!** **Human DNA code would then reach from the equator to the North Pole twice!** **There's even more information packed into the DNA in FOUR DIMENSIONS at this citation!** <sup>60</sup>

*Could this complexity have just evolved randomly? My answer is that it would be like the probability that you could write a 10,000 page letter by choosing each word at random from a dictionary while blindfolded, such that read forward you have a very long novel and read backwards it goes back and fills in details of each event in proper sequence.*

A big problem with evolutionary origins of DNA is it's chirality. DNA is composed of amino acids. All of them can be divided into two categories, depending upon whether they deflect polarized light to the left or to the right. Scientists find that amino acids created in the lab are roughly 50% of each. [Amazingly, all amino acids in DNA analyzed from all living things deflect polarized light only to the left!](#) As a side note, a recent *Creation Moments* broadcast added that that all the amino acids in [sugar deflect the polarized light only to the right!](#)

The exact mathematical probability of DNA complexity can be computed. However, I would estimate it would be about the same as you flying coast-to-coast by just flapping your arms. I'll even throw in a couple of the old cardboard fans we used before air-conditioning. Some evolutionists might reply, "Yes, but natural processes, 'which have always existed', could've done it randomly." I would refute this with the [fantastic](#) scientific discovery by Hubble in 1929 which convinced Einstein this is just not true. Hubble proved we live in an expanding, not static, universe which obviously had to have a beginning. Conclusion? Our ultra-complex DNA genetic code could never have been realized by the hit-or-miss of random evolution. This discovery is



even more overwhelming evidence that the DNA in every living thing is similar, from viruses to elephants to plants, and had to have been created by an intelligent Creator! You'll find this DVD amazing! [103](#), [104](#)

### **MORE on DNA, 'God's Fingerprint'**

Dr. Francis Collins was an agnostic but began an honest search for God after a patient asked him about the afterlife. He had no answers. A pastor directed him to C. S. Lewis' **Mere Christianity** and God became real to him. Collins' book, *The Language of God*, [69](#) documents his search for God, including the historic analysis and sequencing of the human genome (DNA) by a team he led for many years. The project was completed in 2003 and was, in my opinion, the greatest achievement of the century. Collins wrote that the colossal DNA complexity affirms his belief in God's intelligent creation and that he sees the DNA in the nucleated cells of every living thing as 'God's fingerprint'. He has proclaimed this publically in many public forums. These include television appearances, articles in Time magazine, etc. However, Collins seems to be a 'theistic evolutionist'. Click [here](#) for the definition.

### **Is over 98% of the DNA in the human genome really just 'evolutionary junk'?**

Dr. Collins' 13-year [Human Genome Project](#) only analyzed around 2% of our 1.3 million genes and then hastily declared the rest to be 'leftover evolutionary junk'. (It was actually only 1.5%, the 20,000 genes that code only for protein.) However, in 2012, Scientific American and other scientific journals reported that up to 90% of that junk DNA was not junk!

Noted geneticist Dr. Jeffrey Tompkins, of the Institute for Creation Research, reported on new research on this DNA 'junk' at a major conference I attended in 2013. He reported that around 90% or more of the DNA junk had been analyzed. Outstanding among the results was a recent discovery in England by the COT-1 project. It was discovered that a huge repetitious section of DNA, formerly declared 'leftover evolutionary junk', was actually a gigantic biological 'switchboard'! It provides the **basic framework for all genetic processes in our body by switching genes on and off at precise times and durations!** This whole new dimension of our DNA is now the new science of 'epigenetics' Epigenetics is currently being used to determine which cancer treatment would be most effective.

Since I love classical music, I look at this former 'junk' as a biological orchestra conductor simultaneously directing hundreds of orchestras! This DNA 'junk' is one more proof of our Creator's masterful plan of intelligent creation! More later about DNA and literal 'genetic music' in [Appendix G](#).

(I read of a converted gang-banger who announced his newfound worth in Christ with, "God don't make no junk!" True in our DNA, true in our worth and dignity as human beings. It is God's love for us that has conferred enormous value upon each of us!)

### **Can DNA 'Evolve' to Adapt an Organism to a Different Environment?**

Sir Francis Crick, one of the Nobel prize winners who discovered DNA structure, stated in his new *Central Dogma* that it is impossible for environment to cause DNA to evolve additional DNA information for adapting an organism to its environment, and then pass on those new traits. [37B](#) This has been confirmed by the fairly recent discovery that 'junk DNA' switches genes, or groups of genes, on and off. This switching is what adapts a life form to a new or harsh environment. No new DNA information evolves.

### **DNA is ALIVE! It 'KNOWS' When it's Damaged and Effects its Own Repair**

In December, 2016, the media announced the award of two Nobel prizes. One was for the scientist who finally proved that DNA has a self-repair feature. When DNA is damaged, it calls a 'repair crew'. If damaged or mutated beyond normal limits, the cell 'commits suicide'. <sup>55</sup> This self-repair feature also prevents us from getting cancer unless repair features are damaged.

How does every cell with DNA in your body 'know' how to prevent 'bio-errors'? This is also an 'evolution preventer'!

### **Your Microscopic DNA, End-to-End, Would Reach Far Beyond our Sun!**

Our sun is about 93,000,000 miles away. To help you understand just how far away that is, let's reduce the earth to the size of a [half-inch blue marble](#). Proportionately, our moon would then be only around one foot away but the sun would be four feet in diameter, 420 feet away, four football fields distant! <sup>71</sup>

DNA is so small and so tightly coiled, it's microscopic. Yet if all the DNA in our body was placed end-to-end, our DNA would reach around 56 times further than our sun!

And how do we know that? According to [www.bionumbers.org](http://www.bionumbers.org) we have around 4.18 trillion nucleated cells. (This excludes red blood cells and platelets.) How big is 4.18 trillion? That many seconds, by the clock, totals around 132 million years! Dr. Robert Carter's DVD, *The High Tech Cell* as well as other sources, assert that we have two meters, or just over six feet, of microscopic DNA in each of our nucleated cells.

Therefore our final figure is just simple arithmetic. **Dr. Carter's DVD goes WAY beyond genetic 'shock and awe' by presenting DNA as the most complex computer system in the universe that also operates in four different dimensions at the same time!** Here's an online preview and other information. <sup>60</sup> At this same link you'll also find a great video on YouTube, *Programming of Life*.



[Our DNA is not only tightly coiled but is folded at critical points](#) so groups of genes far apart can touch certain other groups of genes, to work in concert and perform amazing biological functions necessary for life! Proteins are also critically folded so that they fit into other proteins like a lock and key! Though the protein may be perfect chemically, if it's folded even a tiny bit incorrectly, it's useless! In fact, a new field of research to attack harmful viruses uses a technique which searches for proteins on the surface of a virus then constructs a protein of the exact shape to fit which allows the protein to attach and disable the virus! <sup>99</sup>

Let's return to our illustration of reducing earth to a tiny half-inch [blue marble](#) where the sun was proportionately 420 feet away. This sun would also be four feet in diameter, and would weigh a ton! On that scale, the nearest star would be as far as India! Most other stars would be so far away they would no longer even be on earth on this tiny scale! <sup>71</sup> Awesome?

God has proclaimed His mighty power and majesty in the heavens so we are without excuse if we don't believe He exists! His existence is proven by his awesome handiwork! (Psalm 19:1)

### **Mathematical Geometric Complexity of Our DNA Proclaims 'Not an Accident'!**

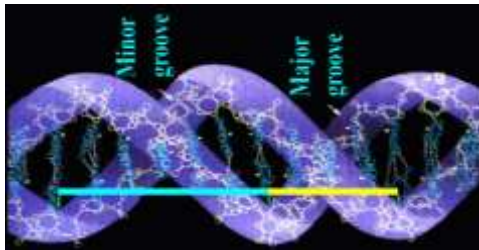
Darwin was over a century and a half behind on a scientific basis for his evolution. Back in the 1850s, so little was known about cells they were called a 'black box' so he was unaware of the enormous complexity inside that overwhelmingly proves intelligent design instead of accidental evolution. (see *Darwin's Black Box* <sup>32</sup> Click [here](#) for Dr. Coppedge's mathematical proof that evolution could not have possibly happened.) Lanny Johnson also saw the amazing 'fingerprint of God' in the complexity of DNA. He wrote a simple 32-page booklet, *The Hand of God*, which beautifully and powerfully sets forth pictorial illustrations of the wonderful mathematical 'hand of God' seen in the fantastic 'Divine Proportion' ratio of DNA. <sup>26</sup> (Divine Proportion is simply the quotient of two numbers which equals 1.618. For instance the width of a picture divided by its height.) Though the 'Divine Proportion' appears in the structure of flowers and many plants, [the most spectacular appearance of the 'Divine Proportion' is in the geometry of DNA, the 'blueprint of life' found in every cell nucleus of every living thing, truly 'God's fingerprint'!](#)

First of all, DNA structure resembles a ladder twisted around its long axis like a corkscrew. Only

four types of amino acids, joined in pairs, make up the 'steps' of the ladder with one pair per step. About 3.1 million genes are present in the DNA of every one of our trillions of nucleated cells. The coding for these genes is expressed in long sequences of combinations of base pair nucleotides (around 3.2 billion of them) forming the steps on the DNA ladder. *We've already shared that DNA coding is incredibly complex, operating in four dimensions and that there is one set of coded instructions read forward and another set if read backwards. Fantastic! <sup>60</sup>*

There are astronomical numbers of combinations and sequences of these steps that define the genetic code which determines everything about every single life form: size, shape, organs, and all the tens of thousands of biochemical operations as well as precisely when and how long each operation is to function. The massively complex and inter-related instructions to accomplish all this are digitally encoded in the sequences of the four amino acids that make up DNA. This makes up a 'genome'. If the human genome were typed, with a single letter representing each of the four types of amino acids, **how long would it take for you to read a human genome?** NINE and a HALF YEARS! And this is only a small part of God's amazing intelligence shown in ALL life! <http://genetichealth.jax.org/personalized-medicine/our-contributions/genes.html>

When DNA is viewed from the side as a 'slice', the two side-supports of the ladder resemble the profiles of two ocean waves nearly superimposed, one in front of the other, but not exactly. ('Out of phase' for you Tekkies.)



The blue bar, in the figure, measures the horizontal distance between the lowest part of the far-side support of the 'ladder' to the lowest part of the near side support after it twists a bit. The yellow bar measures from that point to the lowest part of the far side support. Here it comes! If you divide the first number by the second you get 1.618 ... , **the 'Divine Ratio, or Divine Proportion', found in the DNA of all nucleated cells of every living organism: bacteria, viruses, plants,**

**animals, or humans!** It's also known as the **Golden Ratio or Golden Number.** <sup>74</sup> I don't see the 'random of evolution' here. I see great intelligence and deliberate design by a divine Creator! (Note: the dots following 1.618... indicate the decimals go on forever, perhaps one more indication of its divine origin?)

**More mathematical and geometrical design in DNA!** Viewed from one end, DNA appears as a stack of pentagons with every other one slightly overlapping its predecessor but rotated around 36 degrees! You'll find more spectacular information on DNA in **Appendix G**, including how one geneticist even found amazing musical patterns hidden in various parts of our DNA, even more evidence for **intelligent creation**.

**Even more mind-boggling mathematical design** in the DNA of all living things is that the ratio of the types of amino acids making up the steps of the DNA ladder form a Fibonacci series! These numbers consist of ratios of the amino acids type T to the C, A, and G type amino acids. Each successive number in the Fibonacci series is the sum of the preceding two: 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 8 ... As the numbers get larger, the ratio of any number to its predecessor rapidly approaches the Divine Proportion (Golden Ratio) of 1.618 .... **WOW!**

God's fantastic design is also illustrated in Johnson's book by many other examples of the amazing 'Divine Proportion' in predicting the stock market and in the geometry and symmetry found in nature. Examples include 32 types of flowers, the direction and number of spirals on pinecones, pineapples and sunflower heads, the angular arrangement of leaves on a stem, and even the human cochlea inside our ears. Other non-biological spiral patterns, which cannot be explained by evolution, follow the same mathematical law as the biological examples above! These include the ratio of a planet's revolution to its time of rotation, water swirling

down your bathtub drain, tornados, hurricanes, stars being sucked into a black hole, and swirling galaxies of stars. *All these exhibit the mathematics of the 'Divine Proportion' ratio of 1.618 ... , also known as Phi or the Golden Ratio!* Accidental? Don't think so. For more on the 'Divine Proportion' there are also two great articles on the Internet with Johnson's citation. <sup>26</sup>

**God's fingerprint' is everywhere!**

(End **bypass** of details.)

=====

**College atheists were asked these questions during live interviews. <sup>96</sup>**

What would you think of the intelligence of someone who's convinced a book just wrote itself accidentally? A rotted tree accidentally evolved into paper, black ink dripped from the clouds, accidentally forming tiny dots that accidentally became words, commas, and meaningful sentences. Then colored dots accidentally fell from another cloud to color the pictures?

Now, what would you think of the intelligence of someone who could believe the DNA, the 'book of life' with an astronomical number of coded instructions to grow any living thing on earth, from bacteria to humans, was just an unplanned series of accidents like the book?

*Did this give u something to think about?*

Dr. Antony Flew was one of the most vehement and widely published British atheists of his time. However, the vast astronomical complexity of DNA convinced Dr. Flew that there had to be an intelligent designer: a real God. He then documented his change of mind in this book. <sup>42</sup> The scientists of Darwin's day weren't yet convinced that germs even existed and knew absolutely nothing of DNA. I have enough confidence in Darwin's intelligence that had he learned of the complexity of DNA, I'm sure he would've never come up with his evolution theory based on unguided accidents.

### **Monkey business at the keyboard!**

I've had more than one evolutionist defend evolution with, "Over millions of years, anything can happen. Why, a room full of monkeys could 'accidentally' type a play by Shakespeare, given enough time." I ask, "Which monkey decides which play? Which monkey decides if another monkey has just typed the correct letter to put into the finished manuscript and where? Which monkey finds and trains the new monkeys that replace the old ones over millions of years?" Obviously none. Much more than 'monkey intelligence' is required here!

At the following link, [www.creationmoments.com/radio/transcripts/infinite-monkey-theorem](http://www.creationmoments.com/radio/transcripts/infinite-monkey-theorem), you may read of a *live test of the 'infinite monkey' theorem* at the University of Portsmouth! Six crested macaques were put into a room with a computer. In between urinating on the keyboard and throwing rocks at it, the monkeys typed the letter 's' several times before tiring of the experiment. (Please remind me which Shakespeare play begins with 'sss ... '?) The chances of typing only the first 15 letters of Hamlet is only one chance out of thousands of trillions!

*Here's why I assert that the 'infinite monkey' theorem' is just a fantasy. This fantasy requires a 'monkey wrangler' with human intelligence to decide which of all the letters typed by all of the monkeys are valid and which ones are not! Then the wrangler must decide into which order they are to be placed, add punctuation, and divide the acts of the play correctly. No monkey could possibly do that. End of discussion!*

**Neither this example nor the evolution it attempts to illustrate is credible, since much greater intelligence is required to create the 'monkey wrangler' from nothing!**

Otherwise neither the monkeys nor their 'monkey wrangler' could even exist in the first place! 'Given enough time, anything can happen' is NOT A SCIENTIFIC FACT. It's a 'blind leap-off-a-cliff-in-the-dark type faith' which evolutionists accuse 'dumb' Christians of exercising! True Christian faith is '**evidence** of things not seen'. (Hebrews 11:1)



that number would be magnitudes larger!)

Question: If Crick and Sagan do find life from outer space, will they not then be constrained to search for where that life came from and so on, ad infinitum? What a waste! Evidence of God is all around us in nature so you needn't be a scientist to understand that. We are without excuse. (Romans 1:20) Is this a repeat? Yes, but major truths are worth repeating!

=====  
Check out this citation for a 23-page list of 927 scientists from 38 countries, including the Middle East, who don't accept the evolution of life from natural selection or random mutation. Most of these scientists hold a Ph.D. and/or a university professorship. Religious or non-religious, they reject evolution based only upon purely scientific evidence. <sup>82</sup>

=====  
**Surprise ahead!** Let's look at random events. You would think that the more trials you make, the more likely it would be for the event to eventually happen. This is the random-event foundation of evolution. However, the very opposite is true for an event that has a low probability of success to begin with. The more trials you make, the lower the probability of success. This is called the '**gambler's fallacy**' that insists, "Though I'm on a losing streak, if I just keep going I have to win sooner or later." <sup>27F</sup> Therefore, most habitual gamblers eventually go bankrupt following this road to ruin. Where do you think the gambling casinos get all that money for the bright lights, fancy shows, and free liquor to corrupt your judgment? **Duuhh!**

One possible exception to the 'gambler's fallacy' might be the lotteries where it's already established someone will win. Therefore, the odds of someone winning is therefore 100%. However, the odds of any one selected person, like you, to win the Power Ball Lottery in North Carolina is computed to be 175 million to one against, according to a recent telecast. (175 million is the estimated number of participants.) Buying more tickets will increase your chances to win, but it depends upon the percentage of tickets you buy out of the total number of participants. Obviously, for the average person, you couldn't afford enough tickets to make much difference. On the other hand, if you could buy millions of dollars worth of tickets, why would you want to risk it on the lottery?

And where do you think the millions come from that someone wins? Plain old common sense ought to tell you that **for ONE LOTTERY WINNER**, in North Carolina, there are **174,999,999 LOSERS!** Does that make it clearer you're most probably just wasting your money?

\*\*\*\*\*

## **APPENDIX G: SIMILARITY of our DNA to CHIMPS, MICE, and BANANAS; XNA, SYNTHETIC DNA.**

**Reminder:** Left-click mouse on bold blue underlined text to 'jump'.  
Return: hold ALT, then press ← (not <)

In the 1950s, when I was in college, evolution continued to affirm, as it had for over 100 years, that humans descended from chimps, the most human-like animal. Not long after that, evolutionists back-pedaled saying humans and ape-like creatures descended from a common ancestor. Now for the third time during my lifetime, more back-pedaling. (Picture: OK, so it's not a chimp. But I had to share it because it resembles so much one of my favorite old-time stars of radio, movies, and early TV. Guess who?)



Reversing modern evolutionary thinking, the Scientific American of February, 2013, now states, "Two recent discoveries are shattering what scientists thought they knew about the rise of humans." The new assumed human descent chart covers two pages, with the admission, 'figuring out which species fossils belong to and sorting out ancestral lines will be harder than

**we once thought**'. It's interesting to note that some of their evidence was based only on fragments of missing links like 'Ardi', 'Lucy', and others. <sup>86</sup> These have long been discredited by many scientists as merely ancient apes.

*No remains of even one series of fossils showing very, very gradual evolution of any of the 'innumerable' missing links from ape to man, demanded as proof by Darwin, has ever been found.* Ditto for ANY series showing such gradual evolution of any of the other 8.7 million different life forms. After ~160 years of searching, over 100,000,000 fossils are displayed in museums all over the world. None show Darwin's very gradual evolution evidence. Alleged jumps and skips yes, but no gradual evolution. *Darwin was right when he wrote that it was one of the major weaknesses of his evolutionary theory.* Also remember Darwin's 'leap-frog'. He didn't begin with evolution of the first life but after it was already well established. <sup>36</sup>

Human and ape DNA are said to be very similar. That does not prove evolution. I would expect that! **All animals have the same basic eukaryotic cell structure!** Humans also have primarily the same type of limbs, internal organs, and biological processes as chimps as well as many other animals. Our similarity to chimps and apes proves to me that one master intelligent architect designed them both: God.

Only a few differences in DNA sequences can make a huge difference as I will show in the following two sentences in blue whose letters are 90% similar but exchanging only one pair of them makes the meaning of the sentence totally opposite!

(Oh, by the way, 'Mr. AnyMouse' is the author's transliteration of 'anonymous'.)

Mr. DNA AnyMouse is a **god** = 'good'.

Now switch the first and last letters.

Mr. DNA AnyMouse is a **dog** = 'not good'!

Switching letters is Dr. Geisler's idea, but I thought

'Mr. DNA AnyMouse' (anonymous) might give you a chuckle. 😊

### **LATE BREAKING NEWS: Human/Monkey DNA Similarity – THEY CHEATED!**

A surprising study by geneticist Dr. Jeffrey Tompkins, of the Institute for Creation Research, reports that the evolutionists' DNA comparison of chimp and human DNA was *strongly biased towards evolution*. Human DNA is ordered by size. The chimp DNA was re-sequenced backwards for a better fit in this study! He showed they also picked out only certain genes here and there for comparison, totally ignoring others, thereby unfairly stacking the evidence in their favor. They CHEATED!

Last year Tompkins presented very detailed research results using his 'genetic probe'. He repeated the test above and found that though there are some general similarities between some chimp and human DNA. They're definitely not 98.5% the same! Read *Chimp DNA Mutation Study-Selective, Yet Surprising*. Jeffrey P. Tompkins, Ph.D.:

<http://www.icr.org/article/8196/>.

Tompkins also proved conclusively that evolutionary assertions that chimp DNA genes were NOT fused by evolution into human chromosome numbers two and thirteen. (Those two formed the heart of the evolutionist case.) He then personally rebutted the 'chimp fusing' speculation of Ken Miller, it's primary advocate, who got laughed off the stage!

**Tekkie Candy:** Watch this video. **(NOTE: if this fails, copy it into your Internet browser.)**

<http://www.uncommondescent.com/genetics/icc-2013-geneticist-jeff-tompkins-vs-evolutionary-biologist-who-got-laughed-off-stage/>.

Dr. Tompkins has published 14 papers on chimp-human DNA as well as 54 other research papers in top scientific journals. Here's more: [http://www.icr.org/jeffrey\\_tompkins/](http://www.icr.org/jeffrey_tompkins/).

(That's an underline after 'jeffrey' not a space.)

Though evolutionists continue to tout human and chimp DNA are 96% to 98.5% the same, this was soundly disproven and published in *Discover* magazine. January, 2005, page 30, 13 years ago! Though all human DNA is 99% similar, yet comparing only two chimp genes, they found 68,000 differences with human genes. Then, analyzing 213 genes that make protein, they found chimp protein 83% different than human proteins. Also, a recent journal published the fact that only five percent of human DNA contains around **50,000,000 other differences from chimp DNA!**

*By the way, an even bigger problem for evolutionists is that **our DNA is also 60% similar to the DNA of a banana and even of other plants** according to Dr. Jones, professor of genetics at University College in London. Do evolutionists think our 60% DNA similarity to bananas means we have 'fruit' among our ancestors, like 'Awesome Orange' and 'Nanny Bananny'? (It certainly would explain why I love bananas.) Our DNA is also 60% similar to chickens and fruit flies. BIG problems for evolutionists who don't expect such complex DNA is lesser 'evolved' creatures.*

<https://www.getscience.com/biology-explained/how-genetically-related-are-we-bananas>

*There are four other videos at this site including, "Immortalized cells that sparked an international incident and their role in medicine." Another source states mice DNA is 90% similar to ours. That's why they make excellent test subjects for epidemiology studies, new medical procedures, and testing new drugs.*

Some scientists erroneously say that 'life is nothing but assembled chemicals'. In the physical sense, that may be true, but within the chemicals is a secret code in the DNA which makes those 'chemicals' come alive. It's a message no scientist has yet been able to decode or duplicate. DNA complexity is a message from an intelligent Creator whose skill, in my opinion, transcends by infinite orders of magnitude, the intelligence of all the scientists in the world put together.

### **'Music' in our DNA?**

I received this very interesting article from [www.CreationMoments.com](http://www.CreationMoments.com) about 'genetic music'. **"The entire creation is woven together on an invisible fabric of mathematics. Since mathematics is also the basis of music, the creation is often more filled with music than we think. In fact, Christians ought to think twice before dismissing those Bible passages as figurative about the whole creation praising its Creator."** I visualize this 'weaving' as extremely complex patterns of exquisitely beautiful embroidery. [We see only the reverse earthly side of this mathematical 'embroidery' but one day God will show us His side which will stagger our imagination!](#)

A California geneticist assigned musical notes to each of the four types of amino acids that pair up to form the rungs of the twisted ladder-like structure of DNA. The results of the playback? Not the randomness expected from evolution! Different sections resembled very much the classical music styles of Bach, Debussy, and Chopin as expected from an intelligent 'composer' and the junk DNA 'symphony conductor' I mentioned above. Listen for yourself! <sup>44</sup>

### **Is God a Mathematician?** Sure looks like it to me!

I'm finding more and more scientists who see the work of God not only in the order of our universe but also in its mathematical precision. <sup>74</sup> Dr. Mario Livio is senior astrophysicist at the Hubble Telescope Science Institute. His book, in the heading above, reveals some fascinating mathematical relationships. For instance the laws of human genetics follow the same laws that were originally discovered in the peas grown in a monk's garden in the 19<sup>th</sup> century! Coincidence? No, the same supernatural intelligent designer, God!



**Tekkie Candy:** On page 129 and 130 of Dr. Livio's book, you'll find tables of data used by



insurance companies from 34,000 people to determine the probability of how long the average person will live. For example, if you're 60, the probability that you'll live to 80 is 17%, meaning odds of around 1 out of 4 you'll make it and 3 out of 4 you won't make it. If you're 75, the probability you'll live to be 80 is 46.5% meaning it's nearly 50-50 or 1 to 1 you'll live to 80 and 1:1 you won't. That's why insurance companies cancel your policy at 75.

### **XNA, Synthetic DNA**

**XNA** was made in a lab in 2012 using chemical substitutes for the uniquely left-polarized amino acids required for life. Yes, it was an amazing scientific feat, but on the other hand, it was only a chemical simulation and no, they did not create any life whatsoever. It was no more advanced than writing out known DNA sequences on a computer or on paper. (Do you recall reading on a previous page that if the DNA sequence of a 'simple' amoeba, were written out, it would be the size of 2,000 sets of the Encyclopedia Britannica?) 'Life' cannot be analyzed by science. Only God is the life-giver. The story is told of a scientist who had, like God, made a man from dirt. He then arrogantly stated that therefore we no longer need God. God said, "Try again. But this time use your own dirt and create it from nothing at all like I did!"

### **MORE LATE-BREAKING NEWS: How J. Craig Venter 'Created Synthetic Life'**

J. Craig Venter was formerly a member of Dr. Francis Collin's Human Genome Project team. Venter was the one, who after nearly 10 years, actually made the breakthrough to sequence the first 1.5% of the human genome. Afterwards he formed his own company. Just recently I learned of his latest feat, the 'creation' of new synthesized artificial life from DNA'. His book is entitled ***Life at the Speed of Light: From the Double Helix to the Dawn of Digital Life***. If you read the peer review, you'll see *he did not 'create' any life*. He merely modified an existing bacteria into another type of bacteria by inserting a chromosome he got somewhere else.

While Venter's accomplishment was brilliant, it's just one more in a succession of the media's 'life in a test tube' exaggerations which we've seen before. I also read in a recent Scientific American of another scientist who did the same thing by splicing in previously existing plasmids into an existing cell. So don't be fooled. Only God can truly 'create' life and from absolutely nothing at all! ([http://evolutionfacts.com/picture\\_gallery.htm](http://evolutionfacts.com/picture_gallery.htm) shows a lot of very interesting things including the failed Miller-Urey apparatus that allegedly 'created life' from lightning and chemicals. <sup>27B</sup>)

### **A New Amazing Computer Made From Human DNA**

**DNA is over 1,782 times smarter than any man-made computer and can correct its own copy errors!** How? Its DNA has the built-in intelligence of our Creator! A man-made computer required 1.6 million steps to solve a math problem. DNA, weighing only micrograms, did it in only 91 steps: <https://creationmoments.com/sermons/intelligence-is-built-into-the-creation/>. <https://creationmoments.com/sermons/the-worlds-smallest-computer/>

\*\*\*\*\*

## **APPENDIX H: "I'm a skeptic/atheist because ... " A Few Basic Types (Note: Agnostics believe there's insufficient evidence to either believe God exists or that He does not. –William L. Rowe, philosopher)**

**Reminder:** Left-click mouse on **bold blue underlined text** to 'jump'.  
Return: hold ALT, then press ← (not <).

- 1. "I DON'T NEED GOD AND DON'T CARE. I DECIDE WHAT'S RIGHT AND WRONG. Also, I've never seen, heard, touched, or felt God." Click: [REPLY](#)**

2. "HYPOCRITES!" [REPLY](#)
3. "SCIENCE and EVOLUTION RENDERS GOD UNNECESSARY." [REPLY](#)
4. "I'M BHUDDIST, NEW AGE, INTO MEDITATION, ETC., NO GOD NECESSARY".  
[REPLY](#)
5. "GOD IS EVIL OR POWERLESS, ELSE HE WOULD STOP SUFFERING AND ALL EVIL."  
[REPLY](#)
6. "ANGRY: GOD LET MY LOVED ONE DIE, I'M DEEPLY HURT, GOD LET ME DOWN.  
I hate God, even just hearing His name!" [REPLY](#)
7. "SANTA MADE ME AN ATHEIST!" [REPLY](#)



Reader: Curious how the author of this book was saved from suicide after 11 years as an atheist? Click [here](#) for the 'fast track' version.

=====

### SOME REPLIES TO THE QUESTIONS ABOVE.

#### 1. **DON'T NEED GOD and DON'T CARE, NEVER SAW/HEARD GOD.**

Most of you in this group are happy with the 'status quo', are in fair health, and have plans for the future. 'Free' to decide what's right and wrong, you indulge in the pleasures of sin, you think, with impunity. You believe you're in control of your lives and future. Rebelling against God, you're doing exactly what the rebellious angel Lucifer did who ended up as Satan. (Note: He doesn't wear red and have horns. See Isaiah 14. (Not convinced the Bible is God's word? Click [here](#).)



**'Free?' Illusion!** This group becomes Satan's slaves after taking his spiritual fishing 'sin bait', including lust and lying (also exaggerations), using God or Jesus' holy name to make our conversation stronger (OMG), lusting, ignoring God and replacing Him with life goals, and even fornication, or adultery, etc. (Romans 6:16) They may enjoy Satan's bait for awhile, but not for long. Satan laughs with glee when God allows them to suffer the consequences of sin, both here and in eternity, because Satan's mission is to sabotage God's original plan for mankind: to be loved by God and to love Him.

#### **-CAN'T SEE GOD?**

**How about your house? How do you know it didn't accidentally evolve over millions of years then just pop up out of the ground?** *Because it shows complex intelligent design by a (probably) unseen architect, not a colossal series of 'accidents' that might result in a big mess from a crew of toddlers with power tools!*



*In the same way, our infinitely more complex universe is also solid evidence of an unseen intelligent designer whom we call God. This evidence is so strong, none of us have a valid excuse to deny His existence. Unbelief is not just a 'harmless*

*option'. (Romans 1:20, Revelation 21:8)*

*Unlike the architect of our house, who may be deceased, God continues to direct and sustain our universe and our eternal futures through Jesus Christ. (Hebrews 1:1-3). Millions of martyrs, through the centuries right up to today, continue to silently testify of a living Christ as well as millions who now live for Christ, all based upon solid evidence: Jesus did return from the dead on the third day that validated all His teaching was straight from God!. (Click [here](#) if you want to examine the evidence.)*

*("God did create but He's dead!", was Frederich Nietzsche's, 19<sup>th</sup> century philosophy. When I was in college, some Christian college students wore T-shirts with: '**God is Dead! Nietzsche**' on the front. But on the back: '**Nietzsche is dead!** God'.)*

### **-CAN'T HEAR GOD?**

**We've already mentioned the Bible is God's written word but even without that, you've heard God's voice many times well before you were even a pre-teen: Your conscience!**



Since then we have all disobeyed our parents, lied, cheated, stolen from and hated siblings, co-workers, or even spouses at times, lusted, lied and used God's holy name to make our conversation stronger, and coveted that which belongs to others.. **More bad news:** According to Jesus, we're all guilty of breaking all 10 of His commandments, either in deed or in thought! SCARY! (Romans 3:23, Matthew 5:28) *(Yes, you can stifle your conscience but police lie detectors can prove you still have one! Your body registers deceit on a graph without your permission! Romans 2:15-16)*

### **-CAN'T TOUCH GOD?**

**Right now, God is reaching out to touch YOU through His message in this book. He loves you and wants to draw you to Himself through His written word in the Bible.**

*(Not convinced the Bible is God's word? Click [here](#).)*



### **-CAN'T FEEL GOD?**

***Ever actually see, hear, touch, or feel your pancreas? Adrenal glands? Thyroid? Aorta? No? Then, by your logic, you cannot prove you have any of these so you are therefore dead, yet you speak. Therefore, I must ask, "Are you a zombie?"***

**One does not 'feel' certain cancers for years until it's too late for a cure. Sin, disobeying God, is 'spiritual cancer' you also may not 'feel' for years.**

***Very few of us feel we are evil enough to deserve hell. But NONE of us is quite good enough for Heaven either! God will not judge us by how good we think we are or how we compare to others.***

God will judge us for Heaven by comparing us to the righteousness of Jesus Christ Himself! (Acts 17:30) However, God knows our disobedience yet loves us enough to make the way to Heaven for us. **Jesus is the 'bridge' over the fathomless chasm of sin that separates us from God.** (Click [here](#).) Jesus came down from Heaven to pay the

penalty of our sin by suffering on the cross, then rising from the dead on the third day. Afterwards he appeared for 40 days to prove He was the only one sent from God to make the way to Heaven. (John 14:6) Click [here](#) for the evidence of His resurrection, which is the solid rock foundation of our faith *making it possible to KNOW we have eternal life with God in heaven one day.* (1 John 5:13)

Click [here](#) for 'Why We Should Even Care About God' followed by how we can know Him and be assured of a place in Heaven. As you begin to feel God's love for you, your life will be filled with joy as you anticipate a glorious eternal future with Him!

**When one comes to God through Christ, two most wonderful things happen! God now looks upon us, not as a disobedient sinner, but clothed with Christ's own righteousness, the 'robe of righteousness' promised in Isaiah 61:10! Also, knowing the future, God guides events in our life, so whatever happens to us is the best possible thing for our eventual long-term eternal future and that of others! (Romans 8:28)**



## 2. **HYPOCRITES: 'FINGER POINTERS' and RELIGIONS THAT KILL.**

**The behaviour of a few disobedient Christians is not the 'gold standard' for judging God**

Do you think all Christians are hypocrites? Some arrogant atheists, who strongly reject God, accuse ALL Christians of hypocrisy because they don't think anyone could really believe in God either! Were you hurt as a child by parents or others claiming to be Christians?. If so, we sympathize but is it not unfair to accuse all Christians of being hypocrites based upon so small a sample?. My dad became an atheist in his teens when a deacon (hypocrite) ran off with the church's money. Dad went on to ruin the lives of four more families after ours, only one example of how hasty judgement produces atheism which eventually causes a chain of suffering.



While rejecting God based on a few hypocrites may seem understandable at first, is it just an excuse for your rejecting God? Is it like a death-row inmate whining, *'You should let me go, I only killed two people. Look at him, he killed four!'*

Everyone will be judged by what HE does,  
not what others do or don't do. (Romans 14:12)

**Jesus Christ is God's standard, not weak and imperfect men.**

**Violence.** The very roots of some false religions today are rooted in centuries of killing those who resisted. That's not the God of love and grace demonstrated in the New Testament and in the lives of millions of martyrs who refused to deny Jesus.

**Love is the sign of Christian discipleship. (John 13:35) In the end, all hypocrites and those who 'kill for God' will be brought to eternal justice by the true God. (Hebrews 9:27)** However, recognize that while you may not think you're evil enough to deserve hell, none of us can ever be good enough to deserve Heaven! So click [here](#) for 'Why We Should Even Care About God' followed by how we can know Him and be assured

of our place in Heaven one day.

### 3. **SCIENTIFIC TYPES: GOD is UNNECESSARY.**

You might like to look at the testimonies of eight famous former 'scientific-type' atheists, including Dr. Francis Collins, world-famous scientist who led the team which analyzed the human genome, one of the greatest break-throughs of all time. Read his testimony at your local library in *Guideposts* magazine, December, 2006. Before examining the evidence he said, **"If you believe in science, God is unnecessary."** After examining the evidence, he then wrote: **"Science affirms God!"** Click [here](#). However, recognize that while you may not feel you're evil enough to deserve hell, none of us can ever be good enough to deserve Heaven! So click [here](#) for 'Why We Should Even Care About God' followed by how we can know Him and be assured of our place in Heaven one day. (You also might like to review the first type of unbeliever above, (click [here](#)) who also does not feel the need for God.)

### 4. **I'M BUDDHIST, NEW AGE, MEDITATION, etc., NO GOD NECESSARY**

For those raised in an Eastern country, Buddhism, or some form of reincarnation, is the norm. Here in the West, most Buddhism, and related reincarnation religions, are only a symptom of having rejected God and they're really atheists at heart. Very often, unbelievers create their own version of Buddhism or Meditation or New Age with few or no rules. I would ask them, **"Did you used to believe in God or at least go to church?"** If so, **"Why did you stop?"** That would likely put them into one of the other unbeliever categories.

Buddhism, New Age, and Meditation, are very popular with atheists for they have no God, few 'rules', or make your own, no hell, and reincarnation into another body after death. Your next life depends upon how good you've been (according to you!) in this life. Karma is basically 'you reap what you sow'. The Buddhists' Eight-Fold Path guides you but you can pretty much decide what's good or evil. <sup>89</sup>

I would ask these types for their scientific evidence of reincarnation, if any. (*'Millions of people believe it and it's thousands of years old' is hearsay, not evidence.*) Despite Satanic deceit, false testimonies, and plain hoaxes, *God says there is no reincarnation. (Hebrews 9:27: Die ONCE, after that judgement).* Click [here](#) for how a recent *Time* magazine interview revealed how the world leader of Buddhism was '*scientifically*' chosen and for the massive evidence for Jesus' resurrection compared to that of reincarnation!

Reincarnationist, **"Are you a person of integrity who follows the truth, whatever the cost? Or are you hiding from the living God behind a man-made religion-philosophy?"** Recognize that while you may not be evil enough to deserve hell, none of us can ever be good enough to deserve Heaven! Find the truth here: Click [here](#) for 'Why We Should Even Care About God' followed by how we can know Him and be assured of our place in Heaven one day.

### 5. **GOD IS EVIL OR HE WOULD STOP ALL SUFFERING and EVIL.**

*This is the very strongest argument in all the Christian versus atheist debates I've watched or in atheistic literature.* This was also the mainstay of my atheism in college as well as fellow students. (Click [here](#) for 'Silly Syllogism'.) Those who assert this are

unaware that God did not create us to be his 'robots' that mechanically say "I love you" every hour like a cuckoo clock.

God created us to love and to love Him. Without a free will to obey or disobey we would only be robots or mindless slaves. Therefore we can choose to be as good or as evil as we wish. Yes, there will be retribution for disobedience later, but God's mercy and grace gives us both time and many opportunities to be drawn to Him. It may be the still, small, voice of our conscience, seeing the evidence, or a real God working in the life of another person. If we keep hardening our hearts, He has been known to use sickness, sudden collapse of our personal world, and worse, to wake us up and shake us loose from the deceitful short-term pleasures of this world to the eternal one we will all enter one day. It's your choice if your eternal destination is 'smoking' or 'non-smoking'.

No one welcomes suffering. However, God has good reasons for allowing it. First of all without some suffering, due to our selfish human nature, we would likely become complacent, even indifferent to God since we don't really feel we need Him. Deuteronomy 6:10-12 says basically, '[Beware when all goes well \(for too long\), lest we forget our God!](#)' You've switched to speaking as training someone to witness.

Other reasons for suffering could be that which builds our faith and trust in God to better equip us to minister to others who are suffering. (2 Corinthians 1:4) Since the existence of suffering and evil are atheist's 'big guns' in debates, you'll find these two appendices full of detailed examples, like Joni Tada's paralysis, and others who are living the blessings of God's terrific promise of Romans 8:28! Click [APPENDIX B](#) for examples of how suffering was part of God's plan for good. Click [APPENDIX C](#) for examples of how evil-doers do not frustrate God's plans for mankind. [However, recognize that while you may not think you're evil enough to deserve hell, none of us can ever be good enough to deserve Heaven!](#) So click [here](#) for 'Why We Should Even Care About God' followed by how we can know Him and be assured of our place in Heaven one day.

**6. [ANGRY. GOD LET MY LOVED ONE DIE, I'M DEEPLY HURT, GOD LET ME DOWN. Peter Hitchens, a raging Bible-burning atheist, expressed his anger in his book \*Rage Against God\*. You will find answers and help in his book describing his journey from a hateful, vicious atheist to embracing Christ on page 102.](#)** <sup>83</sup>

**a. [God Let My Loved One Die](#)**

God never created us to live forever in this world of disappointment and suffering. He created us to live in eventual eternal happiness with Him in Heaven one day. The real God loves us deeply. He promises to be our refuge in time of sorrow and near those with broken hearts. (Psalm 34:18) We are all '[appointed once to die and after that the judgement.](#)' (Hebrews 9:27,28)

[Lost a loved one whose spiritual condition was not clear?](#) God usually sends many invitations to the lost over an entire lifetime. No one on earth knows what really transpires during the last 4 or 5 minutes as the brain continues to live after 'death' when heart and lungs have shut down. So have hope for them, but you cannot claim ignorance of not knowing about Christ after reading this ebook when it's

your turn to die.

Surprise! You may think you're not evil enough to deserve hell, yet none of us is good enough to deserve Heaven either! That means at some point, of His choosing, we will all eventually die so the important thing is to make sure you get there one day instead of the alternative that 'needs air conditioning'. Click [here](#) to know for sure you'll spend eternity in Heaven one day! (1 John 5:13)

**b. Deeply Hurt by Someone?**

Have you ever said, "I'll never forgive that person as long as I live?" Jesus said, "But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses." (Matthew 6:14) He repeated that several more times later on. He hates holding grudges, especially by His own who have had their sins forgiven!.

Forgiveness is not saying the hurt was OK. It means you no longer hate that person and are no longer seeking payback. It means you've turned that person over to God for 're-education' (not punishment), praying for their eventual repentance, and a change of life for your tormenter so you could see him in Heaven one day. That's not possible in our natural state which is 'Go to hell and burn, you @\$^!' It's only possible when we finally see ourselves as sinners too, though maybe not as evil as your tormentor, then receive Christ's forgiveness and His love to show to others. (You may click [here](#) for more on forgiveness.)

**c. God Let Me Down, Ignoring My Prayers**

In contrast to the heartless, uncaring, 'god' you obviously believe in, for over 56 years, I and my wife, have experienced God to be loving, caring, and sovereign in answering yes or no to our prayers. We can look back on myriad events, both good and bad, as being for our long-range good or the good of others, according to His promise of Romans 8:28 to those who love God. *(By the way, 'loving God' is not just an emotion. It's demonstrated by your obedience! Jesus said: 'If you love me, keep my comandments and my Father and I will love you and abide with you!' (John 14:15 and 23)*

The Romans 8:28 promise is for those who love God so does not apply to you who are disobedient. *If you are angry at 'god', that's evidence that you are unaware of both the truth and the evidence for that truth. If I believed in a 'god' who was as uncaring and heartless as you believe, I would also hate that 'god' along with you!*

If your biggest complaint is 'Where Was God?', click [here](#).

Like many others, you may have selected one of God's promises for your situation but ignored the context (to whom it was given) and also the *three conditions required to claim that promise in your situation*. (Click [here](#) and return.)

The pupose of this whole book is to give evidence of the real God who loves us, sometimes enough to say no to a request that would, long range, be harmful, like your 9-year-old begging for an AK-47 to fix problems at school. I would suggest you click [here](#) to go back to #1 to get a look at the real God.

7. **"SANTA MADE ME AN ATHEIST!"** When my friend, Jim Marquardt, learned there no Santa Claus, he reasoned that since his parents had lied about that, then they also probably lied about God as well. However, God sent people, events, and evidence over many years which, through God's Holy Spirit, convinced him otherwise. The scientific analysis of the **Dead Sea Scrolls** was a major step (Click [here](#)). After a career as an engineer with McDonnell-Douglas Aircraft, he became a missionary and is still serving today. **Parents: Don't lie to your children!**



\*\*\*\*\*

## HELP WITH JUMPS AND URLS

**By changing the Windows 10 PDF reader from 'Edge' to the PDF parent company, 'Adobe', you will be able to return from a jump to the precise line, instead of only to a page as in the online version, using: ALT + LEFT ARROW.**

- **Type 'Control Panel'** in the Windows 10 'Cortana' inquiry box at bottom left of screen.
- **Choose 'Programs', then 'Default Programs'. - Select 'Associate a file type or protocol with a program'.**
- **Scroll down** below the icons and - **Select 'Choose default apps by file type'.**
- **Scroll down** to '.pdf' at left then click 'Microsoft Edge' at right. Window opens: 'Choose an app'.
- **Click 'Adobe Reader'**. Box to check out the new Microsoft Edge appears but - **SELECT 'Switch anyway'**. It returns to the 'Choose default apps by file type' screen but now the icon to the right of '.pdf' now shows 'Adobe Reader' which will open PDFs, as it should, instead of 'Edge'.

## JUMP/URL OCCASIONAL GLITCH WORK-AROUNDS

Using the PDF Adobe version 11.7.0, I recently tested every jump and URL. Most all worked the first time with a single click of the *hand cursor* — provided it extended a finger when correctly placed over the jump or URL. However, a few times I had to repeat the return command (Hold ALT, press ←) two to five times! If you use a later Adobe version, the page number selection appears immediately on the menu bar. I recommend changing to the '*hand tool*' (*cursor*). (Right click for *Hand tool*.) Since this PDF is a converted WORD document, a few glitches are probably inevitable.

**IF JUMP or a URL FAILS** because the *hand tool* (*cursor*) does not extend a finger, approach jump slowly from below until it does. Click again. If no finger extends or the *hand tool* shows a mirror image, move to other text, press ESC, click, then try the jump again.

Sometimes, just clicking on the page to re-establish focus will fix a 'failure to return from jump' problem. Also closing and re-opening the document helps. If that fails, do a right mouse click and choose the *Select tool cursor*.

*However, the return will now take you back only to the original page. To return to the exact jump site the next time, do a right-mouse click and return to the 'Hand tool' option. After a jump, this returns you exactly to the jump, provided you didn't move the mouse after clicking the jump which may be seldom. Just another minor glitch.*

*I've been doing jumps and returns in this document using Windows 10 since 2011 and it has always worked with the possible help above. However, if you're unable to solve a 'failure to return from jump', just note the page you're jumping from so you can return to that page with the ALT+e followed by 'f' (find) dialog box.*

**Possible Fix for Any Other Odd Behavior:** Close PDF, turn off computer, turn back on, reopen PDF.



**FIX for Other URL Failures or Refusal to Open (other than '404 not found')**. Enter the URL directly into a fresh copy of your Internet browser if nothing else works. *Do NOT enter it into one already opened from the PDF file which will fail again!*

- A 'Profile error' message only refers to your personal preferences so you may just close it.
- If a site comes up but not the actual book or article, the URL is probably extremely long so you must search for it by entering it into a search box, often indicated by a magnifying glass. If that fails, try searching by the author's name. You can probably find any book on <https://Amazon.com>

**Other Computer Operating Systems than Windows 10. Consult your Help file. For example, in Linux, failure to return from jumps in PDF files is easily remedied by a right click which has an option for that.**

\*\*\*\*\*

### Appreciation

I would like to express our gratitude and deep appreciation to our proof reader who has helped so much in multiple revisions of this book over the past seven years in her spare time. In true humility, she has chosen to remain anonymous. She has helped clarify numerous thoughts and corrected innumerable grammatical errors. She has very often raised some point that sent me in a new direction, which resulted in significant improvements.

Like me, she is a former atheist, an achiever, and a missionary. Before finding Christ, also like me, she had also seriously considered suicide several times. She earned a degree in chemistry and has conducted research on the Master's level. To her credit, and the glory of God, she left her chemistry career to serve the King of Kings as a missionary over 50 years ago.

She and her husband had served in Viet Nam for five years before they were evacuated only three weeks before the fall of Saigon. They also served in the Philippines, Papua New Guinea, Malaysia, Thailand, and the U.S.A. Her husband served 24 years in the computer department at the JAARS Center in North Carolina. Now a widow for over 13 years, she continues to serve as a missionary with JAARS as a website and technical editor. Thank you so very much, my esteemed missionary colleague!

\*\*\*\*\*

In conclusion, I believe overwhelming evidence has been presented for a master designer and Creator whom we call God and for His son Jesus Christ. **CHALLENGE:** I would invite anyone to make their case to prove there is no God. **"The grass withers, the flower fades; but the word of our God shall stand forever."** (Isaiah 40:8)

*Meet you in Heaven?  
Tom & Irene Hodges*

Comments, corrections, and suggestions welcomed at [EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com](mailto:EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com).

\*\*\*\*\*

## **HOW TO PLANT A DELIGHTFUL SPIRITUAL GARDEN!**

### **No Garden is Complete without Turnips:**

Turnip for Meetings  
Turnip for Service  
Turnip to Help One Another

### **Plant Three Rows of Squash:**

Squash Gossip  
Squash Indifference  
Squash Selfishness

### **Plant Four Rows of Lettuce:**

Lettuce be Faithful  
Lettuce be Kind  
Lettuce be Patient  
Lettuce Really Love One Another.

### **Every Garden Needs Thyme:**

Make Thyme for Each Other  
Make Thyme for Family  
Make Thyme for Friends

### **Now You May Plant Three Rows of Peas:**

Peace of Mind  
Peace of Heart  
Peace of Soul

**You reap what you sow!**

**Water Freely With Patience and Cultivate With Love!**

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

**CHRISTIANS: TAKE COURAGE:**

**OUR POSITION AND POSSESSIONS in CHRIST!**

**CHRIST'S BELL**

**I  
KNOW WHO I AM**

- I am God's child. (John 1:12)
- I am God's dear friend. (John 15:15)
- I am united with the Lord. (I Cor.6:17)
- I am bought with a price. (I Cor. 6:19-20)
- I am a saint (set apart for God). (Eph. 1:1)
- I am a personal witness for Christ. (Acts 1:8)
- I am the salt & light of the earth, (Matt. 5:13-14)
- I am a member of the body of Christ. (I Cor. 12:27)
- I am free forever from condemnation. (Rom 8:1-2)
- I am a citizen of Heaven. I am significant. (Phil. 3:20)
- I am free from any charge against me. (Rom. 8:31-34)
- I am a minister of reconciliation for God. (2 Cor. 5:20)**
- I have access to God through the Holy Spirit. (Eph. 2:18)**
- I am seated with Christ in the heavenly realms. (Eph. 2:6)**
- I cannot be separated from the love of God. (Rom. 8:35-39)**
- I am established, anointed, and sealed by God. (2 Co r. 1:21-22)**
- I am assured all things are planned for eventual good. (Rom. 8:28)**
- I may approach God with freedom and full confidence. (Eph. 3:12)**
- I expect Him to do exceedingly, abundantly, above expectations. Eph. 3:20)**
- I have been chosen and appointed to bear fruit for His glory. (John 15:16)
- I can do all things through Him who infuses inner strength into me. (Phil 4:13)
- I am a dependent branch of the true vine, a vibrant channel of His life! (John 15)

Therefore, I Corinthians 15:58:

I  
I am  
steadfast,  
unmovable,  
always abounding  
in the work  
of the  
Lord!

**To Know His Heart, To Do His work, To Be His People.**  
(Church motto, FBC, Tulare, CA)

## EVIDENCE RESOURCES

**Note:** Online answers to your additional questions plus other helps are available in the Additional Resources section below.

**Reminder:** Left-click on [bold blue underlined text](#) to 'jump'. Return: hold ALT, and press ← (not <).

**Note:** some of the resources below are perhaps a few years old but that does not mean they are 'out of date' any more than saying that gravity is 'out of date' because it's old.

**The truths and evidences of our eternal God, as well as His love and grace, are unchanging, reliable, and therefore thoroughly trustworthy.**

This book contains only a few sources of scientific evidence God is real in books, blogs, and articles. On a recent Google search on 'evidence God is real' I found 141 MILLION!

**Color-codes by category:**

**Evidence for creation:**

**Evidence for the Bible: is it God's word?**

**Evidence for Jesus' resurrection: was it true?**

Combination of the above or a different subject, no fill color.

Most of the books below are available, new or used, at <https://www.amazon.com/>.

Since there are so many resources below, I would recommend the following outstanding websites.

<https://creationmoments.com/> Very large collection of the evidences of God in nature. I really enjoy my daily free email subscription to very interesting facts of intelligent creation.

<https://impactapologetics.com> (Dr. Geisler's site includes **Twelve Points that Show Christianity is True** plus more apologetics books like **What You Were Made For**.)

<https://crev.info/> -Evolution Headlines. Today had Roach Bait, Amazing Body Facts, and more. Just for fun, try David Coppedge's great '**Baloney Detector**': a 'logic' short course: <https://crev.info/baloney-detector/>.



<https://www.josh.org/> Noted apologist Josh McDowell offers to answer your questions online. <sup>13</sup> You'll find other 'question-answering' sites at this citation in the Additional Resources. <sup>c</sup>

If the books below are unavailable in libraries, or you have a limited budget, I would highly recommend the following valuable 'keepers'. **I Don't Have Enough Faith to be an Atheist** by Geisler and Turek. <sup>9</sup> It asserts divine *intelligent creation* from philosophy, morality, great scientific evidence for the implausibility of evolution, plus answers in depth to some very hard questions about God.

**The Evolution Handbook**, <sup>22</sup> (free download) by Vance Ferrell, has 3,000 facts which soundly disprove evolution, including the failed 71-year experiment simulating millions of years of evolution with fruit flies! Ray Comfort's 150th Anniversary Edition of Darwin's **Origin of Species**, is super with an introduction of condensed scientific facts that disprove evolution. <sup>36</sup> Knopf's **The Truth About Creation & Evolution** <sup>4</sup>, for only around \$5.00, and **Can We Believe in God?**, a tiny 30-page booklet, <sup>N</sup> are also quite good.

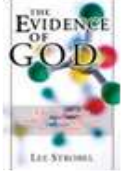
I would also recommend these small inexpensive plasticized pamphlets below that you can tuck into your Bible: *Creation and Evolution*. and *Answers to Evolution* <sup>43</sup> which demolish the 16 pillars of evolution. Please be aware that some of the authors below may have a doctorate degree but have chosen not to make it known in their publications.

### 1. EXCELLENT 'EVIDENCE' LEAFLETS

**These are some of my favorite leaflets.**

- a. Lindsey, Terry: *The Amazing Story Behind Amazing Grace*. How John Newton, a drunken 18<sup>th</sup>-century slave trader, was transformed; then he helped lead the fight to abolish the British

slave trade. Newton also wrote the great hymn. (A similar leaflet, *Amazing Grace*, contains Newton's epitaph and additional information.) A movie, *Amazing Grace*, documents Newton's fantastic conversion and his subsequent contribution to our society.



- b. **Lee Strobel:** *The Evidence of God*. Strobel was a journalist, formerly an atheist for 15 years. This is a super leaflet. Among many others, **The Case for ...** books authored by Strobel is **The Case for Easter** listed below.
- c. **Hank Hanegraaff:** *The Resurrection, Is It True?*, <https://www.equip.org/>. Hanegraaff is the 'Bible Answer Man' on radio and president of CRI, Creation Research Institute. **'F-E-A-T'** proofs of Jesus' resurrection are terrific: <https://www.equip.org/article/the-f-e-a-t-that-demonstrates-the-fact-of-resurrection/> Hanegraaff's main site above, has broadcast archives of Bible questions and answers, books, and software. (More Hanegraaff books below.)
- d. **Zuck, Roy, Ph.D.:** *Is the Bible True?* Brief evidence from prophecy, archaeology, human impact, and science. This leaflet is no longer available but here's a great replacement: <https://www.crossway.org/tracts/why-trust-the-bible-tract/>.
- e. **Comfort, Ray:** *The Atheist Test*, Living Waters Publications. Humorous but very informative tiny shirt-pocket-sized booklet extracted from Ray Comfort's book, **God Doesn't Believe in Atheists**, © 2009. Kindle and printed editions available from <https://www.amazon.com/>. Just for fun, try Ray's *101 of the World's Funniest One Liners* leaflet which includes, 'If at first you don't succeed, don't try skydiving!' Both are available from <https://www.livingwaters.com/>.  
Three more especially good leaflets I also use frequently, are *You Are Someone Special*, *Somebody Cares*, and the terrific 'Then What' cartoon leaflet: from <https://www.crossway.org/tracts/>. Naturally, this author's most frequently used leaflet (12<sup>th</sup> printing) is 'Atheist Engineer ...'. <sup>93</sup>

2. Colson, Chuck: **Born Again**, © 1975, Spire Books, Fleming H. Revell Company, Old Tappan, New Jersey. Sentenced to imprisonment during the Nixon Watergate scandal. After his Christian conversion he founded Prison Fellowship that has been quite effective in rehabilitating scores of criminals: <https://www.prisonfellowship.org>. His second book **Life Sentence** shares more. (Note: Tom Phillips, former Chairman of the Board of Raytheon, who employed me during my Navy field engineering days, was instrumental in pointing Colson to Christ through former atheist C. S. Lewis' book, **Mere Christianity**, as well as Francis Schaeffer's **How Then Should We Live**, detailing how Christians have impacted every aspect of life through the centuries.)
3. Robinson, Lila, Ph.D.: **Eight Years in the Amazon Headwaters**, ©1975, <https://www.authorhouse.com/en>. Ph.D.'s in linguistics, anthropology, and folklore. How Christ was brought to a head-hunting chief and two other primitive people groups in Peru. A 16-foot anaconda attack on Bible translator Lorrie Anderson set in motion events that eventually resulted in the salvation of the Chief and much of the tribe who then shared Christ in neighboring villages. The anaconda attack was an amazing fulfillment of God's promise in Romans 8:28. Click [here](#) for another heroic missionary kidnapped by Colombian guerrillas.
4. **Knopf, Robert:** **The Truth About Creation & Evolution: More than 75 Ways Science Supports Creation and Disproves Evolution**, © 2006. My copy is from [www.creationmoments.com](http://www.creationmoments.com) and was only \$4.99. The heart of the book is his *Six Key Factors Disprove Evolution*, pp. 23-25. A human embryo creates 15,000 cells per minute for nine months, p. 54.
5. **Unperceived earth/sun motions:** How Fast Are We Moving in the Universe? *Science Illustrated* magazine, April-May, 2008. The earth we stand on is hurtling through space in nine directions at incredible speeds. Available in some library archives.
6. **Aczel, Ami, Ph.D.:** **GOD'S EQUATION**, © 1999, Hardback, MJF Books, New York, NY, pp. 207, 211. Math Professor. **E = mc<sup>2</sup>** demands intelligent design of our universe. Among his 16+ other books, you'll find **WHY SCIENCE DOES NOT DISPROVE GOD** with more evidence of intelligent creation.
7. **Morrison, Tony:** **ANIMAL MIGRATION**, © 1973, Hamlyn Publishing, London. Insects, birds, fish, and animals show intelligent design in amazing navigation feats. (Bronze cuckoo: p. 51) Available at [www.amazon.com](http://www.amazon.com). Additional info here: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shining\\_bronze\\_cuckoo](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shining_bronze_cuckoo)

(Also see page 205 of **The Evolution Handbook** <sup>27</sup> for the amazing journey of the Blackpoll Warbler's four-day 2,400-mile, non-stop journey from Alaska to South America. First he flies to New England then climbs to 20,000 feet for a right turn to ride freezing winds on to South America!)



More: the **Atlas of Bird Migration**, © 2011, by Elphick, contains details for over 500 bird species! For the awesome, even bizarre mating rituals of birds and a lot more about bird instincts, I would recommend the classic, award-winning PBS documentary, **The Life of Birds** by Richard Attenborough.

**8. TESTIMONIES of eight scientists or professors who were former atheists or agnostics but who now believe in God:** *Dr. Francis Collins*, who led the Human Genome Project for around 13 years: **The Language of God** <sup>69</sup>, *Dr. Hugh Ross*, astrophysicist: **The Fingerprint of God** <sup>68</sup> and **Creation Science** [www.reasonstobelieve.org](http://www.reasonstobelieve.org); *Dr. Antony Flew*, former world-renowned British atheist; fifteen-year atheist, *Lee Strobel*, lawyer and journalist, with the Chicago Tribune: **The Case for Easter** <sup>20</sup> and many other 'The Case For ...' books as well as **The Evidence for God** leaflet available from <https://www.crossway.org/>. Let us not forget noted former atheist and Oxford Professor *C. S. Lewis* who wrote **Surprised by Joy** relating his conversion; *Josh McDowell*, noted apologist: **New Evidence Demands a Verdict** <sup>13</sup>; *Professor Ralph O. Muncaster*: **Dismantling Evolution** <sup>1</sup>, **What is the Proof for the Resurrection?** <sup>18</sup> and **A Sceptic's Search for God** at [www.bibleone.net/print\\_SF1.html](http://www.bibleone.net/print_SF1.html). At [www.riverpower.org/resurrection.htm](http://www.riverpower.org/resurrection.htm), Sir William Ramsay's 30-year search to prove the book of Luke was a fake, proved just the opposite. Add Albert Einstein who expressed his belief in God with his famous, "God doesn't roll dice!" which I have on a bookmark. Einstein became a believer when Hubble proved our universe was expanding which proved it had to have had a sudden beginning from nothing, meaning divine creation.

Not all the scientists in *Dr. Morris' book Men of Science, Men of God*, <sup>53</sup>, were former atheists, but they're all famous scientists who believed in God, from da Vinci to Maxwell to Fleming, discoverer of penicillin, and many more. I wouldn't call these great men too stupid to accept evolution, would you? Also, read how Mark Lanier, one of America's top trial lawyers, literally put Christianity on trial in **Christianity on Trial!** <sup>2</sup>

**9. Geisler, Norman, and Turek, Frank**, both Ph.D.s: **I Don't Have Enough Faith to be an Atheist**, © 2004 Crossway Books, Wheaton, IL, 60187. Professor Geisler has founded or co-founded two theological seminaries, taught for 54 years, and authored or co-authored 85 books and hundreds of articles. (The book cited above won the Gold Medallion from the Evangelical Christian Publishers Association.) A major condensation of this book, Twelve Points that Show Christianity is True, is at <https://impactapologetics.com/>. (The following citations may include some of these points.)

- a. **Can anyone know truth?** Chapter 1.  
**Demolishing the foundations of a godless university philosophy class**, p.59.
- b. **Dead Sea Scrolls**, powerful evidence, pp. 329-338.  
Also "The Dead Sea Scrolls", A TIME INC. BOOKS magazine, © 2016, NY, NY special issue.
- c. **Reconstructing the New Testament from ancient manuscripts**, pp. 224-231.
- d. **Jesus**: legend, lunatic, or Lord? p. 347 and why trust the Bible? Chapters 9-12.
- e. **If God, Why Evil?** Conversation with skeptic, pp. 389-408.
- f. **DNA Complexity: Amoeba** DNA written out = WOW, pp. 116, 138.
- g. **Brain** has equivalent of 20 million books of information, p. 138.
- h. **Our very finely-tuned universe**, Chapter 4.
- i. **DNA non-similarity in supposedly more evolved creatures**, pp. 150-151.
- j. **DNA component sequence critical**. Example of letter sequences in two sentences, p. 150.
- k. **Absolute Moral Law**: eight reasons we know it exists. pp.172-193

**10. Stoner, Peter**: **Scientific Proof of the Accuracy of Biblical Prophecy**, © 1968, updated 2002, Moody Bible Institute, Chicago. College Department Head, Math and Astrophysics. Professor

Stoner's 600 students computed the odds of whether just 48 of 300 of the prophecies of Jesus' first coming, could've been coincidences in Chapter 3. The odds against this were 10 followed by 77 zeroes times the total estimated number of atoms in the whole universe!

<http://sciencespeaks.dstoner.net/index.html#c0>

11. **Lutzer, Erwin: Seven Reasons Why You Can Trust the Bible**, © 2008, Moody Press, Chicago. Noted author and pastor of historic Moody Church. This is a great little booklet on the reliability of the Bible. Pastor Lutzer is heard on radio worldwide. <sup>B3</sup> For broadcasts, videos, and downloads see <https://www.oneplace.com/ministries/running-to-win/?qclid=CNPZjZTW3bICFQsGnQodPRkAbw>. Also see [www.truth-that-matters.com/bible.htm](http://www.truth-that-matters.com/bible.htm). that asks and answers 17 questions about life and our future. (You'll also find this brief but terrific booklet by professor, Dr. Robert Plummer, enlightening: **The Story of Scripture: How We Got Our Bible and Why We Can Trust It**, © 2013, Kregel Publications. Hannegraaff's pocket-sized **Resurrection F-E-A-T** 'flip chart' at <https://www.equip.org/> is packed with real hard-hitting evidence. )
12. **Finley, Gavin, Ph.D: The 70-Weeks Prophecy** is a:ten-part slide show of the amazing Daniel 9 prophecy. This prophecy correctly predicted the exact year and within two days of when Jesus would first present Himself to Israel as their Messiah (Christ)! Part #4 is the overview and parts #7 through #10 have considerably more details. Dates of historical events that form the framework of the prophecy are not only validated by secular history but also by accurate NASA lunar data: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=V44Thx5Eg8E&list=PL6483B6E161161915&index=2>
13. **McDowell, Josh: New Evidence Demands a Verdict**, © 1999, Hardback, Thomas Nelson Publishers, Nashville, TN 37214. A large and comprehensive documentation of a lifetime of evidence and answers. (This large hardback includes over 1,300 citations.) McDowell is an internationally known author and speaker representing Campus Crusade for Christ. A former rabid skeptic, this book was written originally to disprove and even ridicule Christianity. After looking at the evidence, he reversed course. This book was voted one of the top 40 Christian books of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. At [www.josh.org](http://www.josh.org) McDowell also offers to answer your questions.
  - a. **The original New Testament** can be reconstructed with 'virtually complete accuracy' from over 24,970 ancient manuscripts and fragments, pp. 33-35.
  - b. Josh's testimony chapter, 'He Changed My Life', p. xxiii, is more fully shared in his book, **Undaunted**, © 2012, Campus Crusade for Christ, Inc. It's also available on DVD as a movie. This testimony is one of the most amazing testimonies by a skeptic I've read. His **More Than a Carpenter** has been translated into 85 languages and there are over 20 million copies in print. His '[Jesus was Lord, liar, or lunatic](#)' is well known everywhere.
14. **Winston, John C.: Fox's Book of Martyrs: A History of the Lives, Sufferings, and Deaths of the Early Christian and Protestant Martyrs**, © 1967, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI 49530. Originally published in 1926, this classic, edited in 1967 by William Forbush, is still available in paperback or for a Kindle reader at [www.amazon.com](http://www.amazon.com). (Covers persecution from the time of the apostles, through the imperial Roman persecutions, the 600-year Catholic Inquisition, attempted extermination of the Waldensians, and up through the beginnings of the modern missionary movement. Graphic descriptions of torture are not for the squeamish but they reveal Satan at work in ways we don't like to think about, matched against the courage of Christians that inspires us.) Also see **Secret Files of the Inquisition** ([https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r\\_CbjGM3\\_Fo](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r_CbjGM3_Fo)) and <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Waldensians>.
15. **Wurmbrand, Richard: Voice of the Martyrs ministry**, <https://www.persecution.com/>. **Pastor Wurmbrand** suffered 14 years imprisonment and torture under the communists in Romania during the '50s and '60s. **Tortured for Christ** is an account of his experiences which you can receive **free of charge** at <https://www.torturedforchrist.com/> where you may also watch a movie! He also wrote a rebuttal to the Soviet **Atheist's Handbook** entitled **The Answer to The Atheist's Handbook**, much of it conceived during his imprisonment. Wurmbrand's wife was also imprisoned and then cruelly told that her husband was dead. Read her story in **The Pastor's Wife**, published by Living Sacrifice Book Company.

16. **Maier, Paul: EUSEBIUS—The Church History**, © 1999, Hardback, Kregel Publications, POB 2607, Grand Rapids, MI. Original 10-volume early church history until 324 B.C. condensed into one book.
17. **Josephus, Flavius: Jewish Antiquities** and other works. This has the earliest account of Jesus outside the New Testament. For centuries the histories of Josephus (37-100 A.D.) were more widely read in Europe than even the Bible. [www.josephus.org/](http://www.josephus.org/)
18. **Muncaster, Ralph: What is the Proof for the Resurrection?** © 2000, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, OR 97402. Adjunct Professor at Vanguard University. Small booklet of only 48 pages but it includes 13 evidences of Christ's resurrection, pp. 8-9, and the seven million Christian martyrs buried in the Catacombs under the streets of Rome, Italy, p. 20. Muncaster, a former 'hard-core' atheist engineer for 15 years, founded the ministry, *Strong Basis to Believe*. Here's his great bio: [http://www.bibleone.net/print\\_SF1.html](http://www.bibleone.net/print_SF1.html) Another great Muncaster book: [u](#)
19. **Morrison, Frank: Who Moved the Stone?** © 1958, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI 49530. Journalist. The first chapter is *The Book that Refused to be Written*. Morris set out to debunk Christ's resurrection which is the foundation of the Christian faith. You can also read his booklet online at: [www.gospeltruth.net/whomovedthestone.htm](http://www.gospeltruth.net/whomovedthestone.htm).
20. **Strobel, Lee: The Case for Easter**, © 2009, Hardback or e-book, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI 49530. Award-winning investigative journalist and graduate of Yale Law School, Strobel was a skeptic for 15 years but followed the evidence that led him to Christ. \$1.99 eBook available at: [https://www.christianbook.com/easter-journalist-investigates-evidence-resurrection-ebook/lee-strobel/9780310865858/pd/3876EB?item\\_code=WW&netp\\_id=840520&event=ESRCG&view=details](https://www.christianbook.com/easter-journalist-investigates-evidence-resurrection-ebook/lee-strobel/9780310865858/pd/3876EB?item_code=WW&netp_id=840520&event=ESRCG&view=details). His newer book, *The Case for Grace*, details his 21-month search for truth. (Also see Strobel's great leaflet at 1B above, *The Evidence of God*.)
21. **Zacharias, Ravi: A Georgia Tech Collegiate Open Forum**, © 1996, <https://www.rzim.org/>. 3-CD set: *The Search for Absolutes in a Pluralistic Society*, *Christ's Answers for Man's Questions*, *Question and Answer Session With Students*. (A terrific mini-course in apologetics from one of the world's leading apologists. He also does radio broadcasts world-wide called 'Let My People Think'. Theme: "Difficult Questions, Thoughtful Answers!" See his website above for schedules.)
22. **Zacharias, Ravi: Jesus Among Other Gods**, © 2000, W Publishing Group (a division of Thomas Nelson, Inc.), PO Box 141000, Nashville, TN 37214. One of the world's leading apologists; radio broadcasts worldwide on BBN. <sup>B4</sup> Debates on college campuses. See his great debate at Georgia Tech on CD, above, truly a masterpiece answering most every skeptic question there is.
- Is God the Source of My Suffering? Chapter 5.
  - If God, Why Evil? pp. 112-140.
23. **Ramsay, Sir William: Facts about the Resurrection of Jesus Christ**, © 1999-2002, [www.riverpower.org/resurrection.htm](http://www.riverpower.org/resurrection.htm) Sir William Ramsay, probably the greatest archeologist of all time, reports the results of his 30-year research to debunk the New Testament through archaeology. You'll find interesting questions on both sides of the issue of Jesus' resurrection from the dead. (You may be surprised!)
24. Tada, Joni Eareckson: **A Spectacle of Glory**, © 2016, and **Pearls of Great Price**, © 2006, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI 49530. Quadriplegic radio evangelist, noted speaker, and worldwide ministry to the disabled including donation of wheel chairs and inspirational summer camps. Great devotion book from a courageous and Christian gal who's been through more suffering than probably any 10 of us! <https://www.joniandfriends.org/>
25. **Fuchida, Mitsuo: From Pearl Harbor to Calvary**, © 2011, eChristian, Inc., 2235 Enterprise St., Suite 140, Escondido, CA 92029. The adventures and Christian transformation of the Japanese pilot who led the raid on Pearl Harbor, December 1941. Christian love shown towards Japanese POWs by Americans and a leaflet about forgiveness by an American bombardier, captured and tortured by the Japanese, were Fuchida's first two steps towards Christ. "Where does this great love come from?" was the compelling question that eventually drew Fuchida to Christ. A very inexpensive audio download is available at <https://christianaudio.com/from-pearl-harbor-to-calvary-mitsuo-fuchida-audiobook-download>





Two other excellent sources are **Finding Forgiveness at Pearl Harbor**, a tract published by Jim Falkenberg, DeShazar's grandson, ([www.BLI.org](http://www.BLI.org) no longer active), and **Wounded Tiger**, a large detailed hardback by T. Martin Bennett <https://www.facebook.com/woundedtigerstory/> To order: <https://www.amazon.com/Wounded-Tiger-T-Martin-Bennett/dp/0991229002>

26. **Johnson, Lanny: The Hand of God**, © 2009, Alpha Omega Institute, PO Box 4343, Grand Junction, CO 81502. *Amazing mathematical relationships in nature*, and especially in DNA, that powerfully proclaim an intelligent Creator: <https://www.discovercreation.org/>. You may also learn a lot from these: **ID Magazine (Ideas & Discoveries)**, "The Secret of Symmetry," August 2016, p. 15  
Amazing photo of DNA from above showing the pentagon geometry mentioned in the text.  
<http://www.keplersdiscovery.com/DivineProportion.html>  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Golden\\_ratio](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Golden_ratio) (See Nature section.)
27. **Ferrell, Vance: The Evolution Handbook**, © 2001, Evolution Facts, Inc., Altamont, TN 37301. **Probably the very best single evolution evidence source book!** Contains over **3,000 scientific facts** that confront the inaccuracies of evolution. You may read the book **free of charge online** at: [www.evolutionfacts.com/Handbook%20TOC.htm](http://www.evolutionfacts.com/Handbook%20TOC.htm). **FREE DOWNLOAD:** <http://evolutionfacts.com/Downloads.htm>.
- NOTE:** PDF Acrobat will REJECT these URLs! So, leave the PDF, open a fresh copy of your Internet browser, and type in the URL. They will then work fine as they did for me.
- Inaccuracies in dating methods** pp. 167-206. Archaeology proves a young earth, a universal flood, fake fossils, and the fallacy of archaeological dating. Chapter 21, pp. 834-839. Click [here](#) for eight reasons why evolutionary dates are unreliable.
  - The incredibly complex cell**, chart on page 978, also a magnified view is available at [http://evolutionfacts.com/picture\\_gallery.htm](http://evolutionfacts.com/picture_gallery.htm). Also in the picture gallery you'll find the apparatus of the failed Miller-Urey experiment (NO life created in a test tube). Also fossils are shown of some soft-bodied creatures from centuries ago. This refutes the evolutionary 'fact' which claims those fossils are missing because they all disintegrated and left no fossils behind. More amazing facts of the complexity of our body include 2,000 chemical processes of the liver, a million tiny filters in our kidneys, a 25-step process just to move a synthesized protein a microscopic distance, pp. 959-984. Page 984 reports amazing facts about the complexity of bird physiology that will astound you, I promise.
  - Syntropy:** irreducibly complex biological systems could not possibly have accidentally evolved a host of complex physical and biochemical systems, all in the exact sequence over millions of years. They all had to be fully functional from the very first (blood clotting, etc.), p. 334.
  - 28 reasons why mutations do not explain evolution** pp. 325-372.
  - Mathematical impossibility of evolution** pp. 331-338.
  - Adding millions of years** doesn't help evolution, p. 332.
  - 100,000,000 fossils catalogued** for 250,000 species. No transitional forms yet found. Scientists therefore state the fossil record today is **more than sufficient to disprove evolution**, pp. 423-426.
  - No previous evolution seen** in ancient Cambrian Era creatures, supposedly millions of years old. Every one of the 30 major life species (phyla), including advanced flowering plants, has been found in the Cambrian Era strata. In lower and older strata, no significantly developed life has been found, pp. 440-451. Many of the Cambrian species are the very same today and did not evolve at all. Soft-bodied creatures did disintegrate as evolutionists claim but their fossils are preserved in exquisite detail, pp. 473-485. See 'geologic column' below.
  - Five 'living fossils'** supposed to be extinct up to 500 million years ago including the Coelacanth (fish), pp. 478-480.
  - Environment cannot change DNA** to enhance evolution: 'The Central Dogma' of atheist Sir Francis Crick, co-discoverer of DNA structure, p. 279.

k. **Fruit fly mutation experiments** unsuccessful for 71 years, pp. 36, 326, 345.

28. **Dawson, J.P., Ph.D.:** NASA scientist who analyzed the first moon rocks. Here is his report: [https://historycollection.jsc.nasa.gov/JSCHistoryPortal/history/oral\\_histories/DawsonJP/DawsonJP\\_11-9-00.htm](https://historycollection.jsc.nasa.gov/JSCHistoryPortal/history/oral_histories/DawsonJP/DawsonJP_11-9-00.htm) Page 10 details his microscopic findings which disproved the long-held evolutionary theory of how our moon was formed. (Search for Genesis rock). Page 11 shares evidence that the speed of light and other electromagnetic radiation were much faster in the past. His investigation, using data back to 1640 revealed that this speed was very, very, high in the distant past but has been following a decreasing exponential curve to where it has changed very little in the last few hundred years. The end result is that since it's used in so many computations, it casts serious doubt on the age of our universe, of our earth, and astronomical distances in light years which also infers their age in how many years were required to reach earth. Dawson has compiled a very detailed and scientific apologetics DVD called, **Why Believe?** The DVD has a lot of evidence for the reliability of the Bible and biblical prophecy. He also includes his studies on light speed decay (CDK) and atomic dating. Dawson, a high school friend of mine, went on to earn **triple degrees in chemistry, math, and physics.**



He passed away in 2013 but his technical legacy lives on as well as his faith in God at the NASA archive above. Technical details of his findings and his DVD are no longer on the Internet but I have some copies. If you want a copy, ask me for **DAWSON Speed of Light Young Earth.doc** or his DVD. Dr. Dawson published 87 technical papers, wrote 10 books on biblical prophecy, founded a Christian radio station and the Aaron C Ministries apologetics ministry. I knew him personally as a warm, fervent Christian and a great scientist. When I was eight, his father-in-law, Mr. Chody, a Ford mechanic, taught my Sunday school class. Here's Dawson's obituary:

<http://www.edmondsun.com/obituaries/x967391199/James-P-Dawson>.

(A recent article on a 'young moon' will be found at this link, and a companion book, **Our Created Moon.** <https://creationmoments.com/sermons/a-not-so-rock-solid-moon/>.)

29. **Menton, David, Ph.D.:** DVD: **Fearfully and Wonderfully Made**, © 2001, Answers in Genesis, PO Box 510, Hebron, KY 41048. Former professor of anatomy at the Washington University School of Medicine and researcher at the Mayo Clinic. This DVD presents the amazing complexity of the womb, fertilization, embryonic development, and birth. Watch it online or buy it at this site: <https://answersingenesis.org/media/video/creation/fearfully-and-wonderfully-made/>. You'll also enjoy **How the Body Works** by Dr. Peter Abrahams, published by Amber Books in the UK. On page 452 you'll find amazing facts about embryonic cell division including how a single tiny human egg becomes a 10-billion-cell baby in nine months.
30. **Gillen, Allen, Ph.D.:** **Body by Design**, © 2001, Seventh printing 2011, Master Books, PO Box 726, Green Forest, AR 82638. Professor of Biology. How 17 body systems show intelligent design, including reproduction, in Chapter 4.
- Blood clotting:** pp. 73-75. Also see <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coagulation>, [https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=daOmrQyD\\_oU&NR=1&feature=endscreen](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=daOmrQyD_oU&NR=1&feature=endscreen), and these lectures from the Cleveland Heart and Vascular Institute: **Hemostasis 2 and the Coagulation Cascade:** [https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=s4FoSf6Yi\\_s&NR=1&feature=fvwp](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=s4FoSf6Yi_s&NR=1&feature=fvwp).
  - Red blood cells** five million in one drop of blood circulating through 60,000 miles of vessels, shape computed to be optimal, amazing molecular structure of hemoglobin, and much more on the molecular level, pp. 68-76.
31. **Morris, Henry, Ph.D.:** **The Mathematical Impossibility of Evolution, ICR article** Dr. Morris was a scientist in the fields of geology and hydrology before his passing in 2006. He is the founder of ICR, the Institute for Creation Research and the ICR graduate school: <https://www.icr.org/article/mathematical-impossibility-evolution> Dr. Morris has written over 50 books on science and creation. You'll find his mini-bio at [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Henry\\_M.\\_Morris](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Henry_M._Morris)

32. **Behe, Michael, Ph.D. : Darwin's Black Box, the Biochemical Challenge to Evolution**, © 1996, 2006. Biochemistry professor. This book was written to rebut **The Blind Watchmaker** in which infamous skeptic Richard Dawkins presents evolution as evidence there is no God. Time Magazine called this book a 'seminal work' because it was the 'groundbreaker' that sparked the 'intelligent design' movement that dares to ask, "[Was Darwin wrong?](#)" Pages 18-22 cover details on the biochemistry of vision that takes place in the retina. On page 77 you'll find 20 pages detailing the 'irreducible complexity of blood clotting' which proves conclusively that this could not have evolved over millions of years. If not available at a local bookstore or library, you may purchase the book, as an audio edition, or an eBook, at [www.SimonandSchuster.com](http://www.SimonandSchuster.com).
33. **Coppedge, James F, Ph.D. : Evolution, Possible or Impossible?** © 1973 - 2000, (eight printings). Molecular biology research analyst and holder of five college degrees. Dr. Coppedge computes the odds of accidental (evolutionary) 'creation' of a number of biological components. He shows how he computed the odds against evolving only one gene on pages 155-163.
- (You will also find the latest creation and evolution discoveries, as well as a 'gold mine' of scientific facts at Dr. Coppedge's son's site at <https://crev.info/>. I personally find this site current and absolutely fascinating!
34. **Geisler, Norman, Ph.D. : COSMOS: Carl Sagan's 'Religion' for the Scientific Mind**, © 1983. <https://www.logos.com/product/9162/cosmos-carl-sagans-religion-for-the-scientific-mind>  
Very small booklet; also downloads available for various devices.
- Complexity of the brain**, being so much greater than any man-made computer, suggests a Creator far above man. Also brain contains information = 20 million books, p. 58.
  - Comments by two famous astronomers**, Dr. Robert Jastro, founder of NASA Goddard Space Center, pp. 50, 56, and Sir Fred Hoyle's 10<sup>40,000</sup> to 1 odds against evolution. Hoyle's illustration for this, still much used today: "[Evolution is just as likely as a tornado tearing through a junkyard and 'evolving' a flyable 747 jumbo jet.](#)" I would say that some evolutionists may not only believe this very possible, but perhaps they also add that it could have, whoops, make that did include the crew and 300 passengers. But only if the tornado lasted millions of years, of course, pp. 50-59.
35. **Geisler, Norman, Ph.D., Hoffman, Paul: Why I am a Christian, Leading Thinkers Explain Why They Believe**, second edition, © 2001, 2006, Baker Books, PO 6287, Grand Rapids, MI 49516-6287. Astrophysicist Dr. Hugh Ross computes the odds that 122 of the constants that 'fine-tune' our universe were 'accidents' of evolution, p. 142. Includes the testimony of Dr. Barry Leventhal who recognized Jesus as his Jewish Messiah and is currently a professor teaching in an evangelical seminary, p. 221.
- Also included on page 253 is how Muslim Ergen Mehemet Caner also discovered that Jesus was his Messiah. Caner's book is **Unveiling Islam** published by Kregel Publications. It won the coveted Gold Medallion Book Award. Click [here](#) for another Muslim below who discovered Jesus.
36. **Darwin, Charles: Origin of Species 150<sup>th</sup> Anniversary Edition**, © 2009, Bridge-Logos Foundation, Alachua, FL 32615. Introduction by Ray Comfort. [This edition contains chapters from Darwin's original On the Origin of Species, of 1859, and The Descent of Man, published 12 years later.](#) Darwin admitted that if it could be demonstrated that any organ could not be formed by a series of tiny modifications that his theory would absolutely break down. Chapter VI, p.175. (Irreducible complexity of a designer is our answer!)
- Darwin's weaknesses of evolution:** Chapters VI, VII, and VIII elaborate on the weaknesses of evolution for which evolution had no evidence. This includes the incredible complexity of the human eye, and instincts, including migration of birds and group behavior of ants and bees. Numerous times Darwin rejects simultaneous evolutionary steps per generation and insists on only a tiny change per evolutionary generation over millions of years. (Natura non Facit Saltum: nature does not make jumps.) This makes a fully functional reproductive system developing piece-meal over millions of years absolutely impossible from the very first generation evolution. Darwin also waited until Chapter VII, page 188, first paragraph to say, in effect, ['I can't explain instinct, how the first life began, and several other major difficulties with my evolution ideas so](#)

oops, I'll just skip all that and leapfrog to a fully formed, reproduction-capable organism to begin evolution'. Again, Darwin turns his back upon God because only He could create first life and implant all the instincts required to function and survive. I also recall another passage in which Darwin admits that life may have originated in a slime pool or ocean but said, "I choose not to go there." It is then left to the reader to erroneously assume evolution really began from simple chemicals in that slime pool or ocean. Bad move. Like touch-typing in the dark but starting with your fingers in the wrong starting position. See pp. 173, 184, 188, 194.

- b. **Darwin's own proof of evolution would be 'innumerable series of transitional fossils'** not just a missing link, p. 165. Many hoaxes. 100,000,000 fossils found in museums around the world for around 250,000 species, but not one series of transitional forms for any of them, pp. 15, 22. You may also be interested in watching Dr. Stephen C. Meyers' informative video at: [www.darwinsdoubt.com](http://www.darwinsdoubt.com)
- c. **Eye complexity makes Darwin doubt** evolution could have produced it. In fact, he said that was '**absurd in the highest possible degree**' on page 174. Therefore he 'supposes' some '**mysterious unseen 'power' carefully watched over and guided evolution**', Chapter VI, pp. 174-176. Since the function of this entity is to select which 'accident' is propagated over millions of years, knowing what the original design is supposed to be, this is none other than an imaginary, mythical 'god'.

In the first 62 pages of Comfort's introduction, he will answer many of your questions on evolution. Some amazing facts supporting intelligent creation are that the retina of your eye digitizes light signals and processes around 1.5 million digital pulses every 1,000<sup>th</sup> of a second! Available at libraries, booksellers, or <https://www.livingwaters.com/>. (**PS: The 40 subsystems of the eye include the retina and its nerves with over 260 million working parts!**)

#### THE EYE'S AMAZING COMPLEXITY

<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Retina> [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rod\\_cell](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rod_cell).

**More** Darwin didn't know: **Design in the Human Eye** <sup>108</sup> by Dr. Joseph Calkin, and Dr. David Hubel's **Eye, Brain, and Vision** <sup>109</sup> including fascinating 'Vision as Data Processing'.

- 37. **Comfort, Ray: Nothing Created Everything**, © 2009, <http://wndbooks.wnd.com>. Internationally known Christian apologist and author of over 80 books. Comprehensive, often clever and humorous examination of the so-called evidence touted by evolutionists. <https://www.livingwaters.com/>
  - a. **Enormous complexity of the eye:** 40 sub-systems, 137 million light receptors, pp. 14-23.
  - b. **How Life Began** starts on page 35. (Also see Heinze's **How Life Began** below for a lot more details. Here's a summary on how life-giving DNA information could not possibly have evolved: Where did the information in cells come from? [www.creationism.org/heinze/FirstLife03InfoInCells.htm](http://www.creationism.org/heinze/FirstLife03InfoInCells.htm).)
  - c. **Debunking** so-called 'proofs' that evolution is both observable and testable, and 'missing links' later proven false or outright hoaxes. These include the widely accepted Archaeopteryx, touted for years as the 'perfect transitional fossil between dinosaurs and birds'. (Small reptiles became birds because they were tired of falling out of trees?) Others include elephant seals, and blatantly false claims of 'life created in a test tube', in Chapter 1. I would also heartily recommend Comfort's **The End Time Believer's Evidence Bible** containing a host of indexed apologetics notes including unmasking hoaxes, dealing with cults, and many tips on witnessing to all kinds of people.
- 38. **Gish, Duane, Ph.D. : EVOLUTION: the fossils STILL say NO!**, Institute for Creation Research, El Cajon, CA 92021, Professor. Dozens of specific fossils are analyzed to determine the truth of evolutionary claims. Chapter 1 explains how evolution is really a philosophy but proclaims itself a science by promoting unproven speculations to 'facts'. Clever '**Frog + kiss → prince**' example, p. 5. <https://store.icr.org/> .
- 39. **Heinze, Thomas: The Vanishing Proofs of Evolution**, © 2007, Chick Publications, Ontario, Canada. <https://www.chick.com/products/item?stk=1250>. **Fossils from all 30 categories of life** are present in the Cambrian era strata but do not show any evidence of previous evolution; the amazing trilobite eye, pp. 53-54.

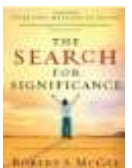
- a. **Haeckel's falsified drawings and fraudulent embryo** pp. 21-29. Evolution hoaxes: The Piltdown man hoax of 40 years, peppered moths, tiny horses, etc., pp. 11-20. Vestigial organs and evolution leftovers exposed, pp. 40-45
- b. **Fruit fly mutations:** useless extra wings, pp. 36-40; no cross-species evolution.
- c. **NOTE:** Another of Heinze's fantastic booklets is **How Life Began**, © 2002, Chick Publications. This small, inexpensive, booklet is a great resource on the origin of the first life. Chapter 1 debunks the 'life created in a test-tube' deceit. It also proves that in no way could the information in DNA and RNA have evolved. Here's an on-line excerpt about the information contained in cells: [www.creationism.org/heinze/FirstLife03InfoInCells.htm](http://www.creationism.org/heinze/FirstLife03InfoInCells.htm).
40. **Madigan, Martinko, and Parker: Brock Biology of Microorganisms**, eighth edition, Prentice Hall, 1997. Research results going back over 70 years prove that microorganisms do not develop antibiotic resistance by 'evolving', p. 332.
- You may also add Dr. John C. Sanford's **GENETIC ENTROPY** for his research on this subject which was presented at a major apologetics conference I attended.
41. **Cadwallader, Mark: CREATION Spelled Out for Us All**, © 2007, CTS Publications, Conroe, TX. Cadwallader is a scientist holding an M.S. in chemistry, and has produced over 100 articles and conference papers on geo-synthetic materials and creation science. Book may be ordered from <https://creationmoments.com/shop/books/science-creationism/creation-spelled-out-for-us-all/>. Check this website for world-wide five-minute radio broadcasts about intelligent design examples in nature. **The fruit fly evolution experiment is on p.13.** (That experiment is also in **The Evolution Handbook**, <sup>27K</sup> pp. 36, 326, 345, and in the **Vanishing Proofs of Evolution** <sup>39C</sup>, p. 36.)
42. **Flew, Antony, Ph.D. : There is ~~no~~ God: How the World's Most Notorious Atheist Changed His Mind**, © 2007. Flew, a university professor and famous British atheist for decades, renounced atheism in favor of God in 2004. (pp. 11-12) In his own words, "I just had to go where the evidence led." Fifty years of DNA research created a strong argument for design as opposed to evolution. Original source is Rich Deems' "One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest?" at [www.godandscience.org/apologetics/flew.html](http://www.godandscience.org/apologetics/flew.html). This ISBN link will take you to a website to find the book: [ISBN 978-0-06-133529-7](http://ISBN-978-0-06-133529-7). Bio and BBC interviews: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Antony\\_Flew](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Antony_Flew).)
43. **Rose Publishing :** Small inexpensive pamphlets on evolution available at your local Bible store.
- a. **Creation and Evolution** © 1999, covers six branches of science and is organized along the lines, 'What Evolutionists Say', 'What We Should See in Nature', and 'What We Actually observe.
- b. **Answers to Evolution** © 1999, 16 'pillars of evolution' and real-world facts demolish them all. More: [https://www.hendricksonrose.com/page/wl/hr/hr-pamphlets?navcocat=hendricksonrose\\_Pamphlets](https://www.hendricksonrose.com/page/wl/hr/hr-pamphlets?navcocat=hendricksonrose_Pamphlets)
44. **PROM: PROtein Music Composer** is a web-based tool that helps scientists generate music from DNA. [www.whozoo.org/mac/Music/samples.htm](http://www.whozoo.org/mac/Music/samples.htm). **A Creationist Perspective of the Human Genome** DVDs is also very good from <https://creationmoments.com/>.
45. **Meyer, Joyce: Battlefield of the Mind**, © 1995, Joyce Meyer Life in the Word, Inc., P.O. Box 655, Fenton, MO 63026. Evangelist. Her section on 'wilderness mental attitudes' that can defeat your attempts to walk with Christ is quite interesting. These parallel the Israelites' journey of 40 years that could've been made in only 11 days instead because they failed to trust God. Also see <https://joycemeyer.org/offers/botm> and <https://joycemeyer.org/>.
46. **Greene, Brian:** *Listening to the Big Bang*, © 2014, Smithsonian journal. Theoretical physicist, Professor of Physics at Columbia University. Very clear explanation of the Cosmological Standard Model: how evolution supposedly created our universe without God, explained by America's most popular science writer.
- Also see the much more technical <https://arxiv.org/abs/1212.5225> from Cornell University with results from the nine-year mission of the WMAP space probe as well as this in-depth presentation: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Age\\_of\\_the\\_universe](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Age_of_the_universe). (Apparent spaces are underlines instead.)

47. **Maxwell, James Clerk:** *Man of science, man of God:* <https://crev.info/?scientists=james-clerk-maxwell>  
James Clerk Maxwell, Cambridge professor and noted 19<sup>th</sup> century scientist, was also a contemporary of Darwin. He rejected Darwin's evolution idea as 'anti-science' and wrote powerful scientific refutations of it. He also proved mathematically that stars were not formed by condensation of the primordial hot gas/dust cloud so they cannot cool to become planets as today's Cosmological Standard Model asserts:
- Maxwell was said by Einstein 'to have made more contributions to physics than anyone since Isaac Newton'. Therefore it's obvious Einstein esteemed Maxwell to be the greatest scientist since Newton. Among Maxwell's contributions were color photography and his electrodynamics theory that mathematically predicted the existence of radio, radar, X-rays, as well as other types of radiation years before they were discovered. His prediction of the character of the rings of Saturn was confirmed by Voyager in 1981, roughly a hundred years later. Richard Feynman, perhaps the greatest physicist of our day, said, '10,000 years from today Maxwell's discovery of the laws of electrodynamics would still be the most significant event of the 19<sup>th</sup> century!' <https://creationmoments.com/sermons/james-clerk-maxwell-creation-scientist/>
48. **EYE of GOD:** Ring (Helix) Nebula and white dwarfs. Quantum Fluctuation rebuttal. <http://hubblesite.org/newscenter/archive/releases/2003/11/image/a/>  
NASA, NOAO, ESA. The Hubble Helix Team M. Mexner (STsci) and T.A. Rector(NRAO) STsci PRC03 11a  
<http://amazing-space.stsci.edu/>  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/White\\_dwarf](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/White_dwarf) (That's an underline before dwarf, not a space.)
49. **The GOD PARTICLE:** (Higgs Boson), **Scientific American Special: Extreme Physics**, p. 4  
**These links from scientists cast serious doubt if this discovery is genuine.**  
<http://www.ras.org.uk/news-and-press/2469-should-the-higgs-boson-have-caused-our-universe-to-collapse>  
<http://rt.com/news/168004-higgs-boson-universe-collapse/>  
<http://crev.info/2014/06/existence-of-universe-is-highly-improbable/>  
<http://rt.com/news/168004-higgs-boson-universe-collapse/>
50. **Behe, Michael, Ph.D. :** DVD: **Unlocking the Mystery of Life**, and FREE VIDEO CLIPS: <https://illustramedia.com/>. A group of leading scientists with advanced degrees, including noted biochemist, Dr. Michael Behe, discuss evolution versus intelligent design. The DVD opens with fantastic 'molecular machines' Darwin could never have even dreamed of. Outstanding is a molecule-sized 'outboard motor' of 40 parts that rotates the whip of a bacteria at around 100,000 rpm!
- Also you'll hear from Dr. Dean Kenyon and a colleague who thought they had shown how life could have evolved directly from raw chemicals in their **Biochemical Predestination**. After a number of other discoveries came to light over the years, they repudiated their ideas and their book.
- This fantastic online video takes us on a spectacular animated trip inside a cell where we learn how DNA, present in every nucleated cell of every life form, constructs proteins. You'll find the video here:* <http://www.unlockingthemysteryoflife.com/>.
51. **DEMBSKI, William, Ph.D. :** **The Design Inference**, © 2006 Cambridge University Press, 32 Avenue of the Americas. Professor of Mathematics at Baylor University. New York NY 10013-2473. <http://www.cambridge.org/> Detailed mathematical methods that help to determine if an event was a chance event or the result of intelligent design.



52. **Behe, Michael, Ph.D. :** DVD: **Darwin's Dilemma**, *Illustramedia*. Darwin's unexplainable dilemma is that his idea of evolution cannot explain why most phyla (families of life) appeared suddenly with no previous evolution in the Cambrian Period strata: <http://www.darwinsdilemma.org/>. Watch this YouTube video: [www.youtube.com/watch?v=7-1nXb5uH8Q](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7-1nXb5uH8Q). This has 12 other links to creation evidence videos!
53. **Morris, Henry, Ph.D. :** **Men of Science, Men of God: Great Scientists Who Believed the Bible**, © 1982, 1998. **21<sup>st</sup> printing** 2012. Founder of Institute for Creation Research. Master Books, Inc., P.O. Box 727, Green Forest, AK 72638. Mini-bios of 108 famous scientists who were also men of God. These include Da Vinci, Kepler, Galileo, Newton, Maxwell, Pasteur, Reimann, and Fleming (who discovered penicillin) plus 16 more recent scientists. (Available at Amazon for around \$8 and a Kindle download for only \$2.99!)

54. **Livio, Mario, Ph.D. :** **Brilliant Blunders**, © 2013, Simon & Schuster Paperbacks, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020 Astrophysicist at the Space Telescope Science Institute. Excellent documentation of modern godless evolution. It includes good summaries of the laws of genetics and DNA. Livio fairly presents excellent evidence, both pro and con, yet always finds some way to 'bend' it towards evolution without supporting evidence. Page 13 states that as of September, 2009, there were officially cataloged 1.9 million species. However, this does not include most microorganisms and invertebrates. Therefore estimates run from 50 – 100 million with the more reasonable being 5 to 10 million. The most recent studies estimate 8.7 million species of life. [Other sources like page 16 of Ray Comfort's anniversary publication of Darwin's Origins specify 100 million fossils representing 250,000 species cataloged in Museums, not total number of species.] English geneticist Sir Cyril Darlington, discoverer of the chromosome, states that almost all mutations are harmful. In fact I have read of one source that stated that, though natural mutations are rare to begin with, only 1 of 10,000 is either neutral or beneficial. Another source stated 1 of 8,000. Our cells have an auto-correct feature to prevent mutations including causing a defective cell to die. cancer is the result if the self-correct feature fails.
- Evolution is unable to explain how miraculous bird eggshells 'evolved'. They could not have!  
<https://evolutionnews.org/2018/04/eggshells-remarkable-design-a-tribute-to-mindless-evolution/>
55. **UCDAVIS** Health System, UC Davis researchers discover complexities of DNA repair, NEWS, October 23, 2011, University of California: <http://www.ucdmc.ucdavis.edu/publish/news/newsroom/5851>
- Eight additional scientific research papers supporting the UC Davis findings related to 'self-repair' of DNA, which would make evolution impossible, are to be found in the first article at this link: [http://www.evolutionnews.org/2017/01/quality\\_control\\_3103426.html](http://www.evolutionnews.org/2017/01/quality_control_3103426.html) Protein and other self-checks:
56. **Bailey, Ney:** **Faith is Not a Feeling**, How life's tragedies and challenges lead us to the all-important decision about how we will relate to God and also find true meaning in life: <http://www.crustore.org/catalog/Faith-Is-Not-a-Feeling.html> and also this one is good: <http://www.neybailey.com>.
57. **McGee, Robert:** **The Search for Significance: Seeing Your True Worth Through God's Eyes**. Our true worth not based on accomplishments or the opinions of others. Highly recommended by Billy Graham. <https://amazon.com>
58. **Nessim, Ruth:** **The Passover Lamb**, © 2011, CJF Ministries, P.O. Box 345, San Antonio, TX 78292 Jewish believer who immigrated to Israel decades ago. She and her husband Albert established a messianic Christian congregation there. She also authored **Musings from Galilee**, a collection of poems reflecting her life and experiences as a Jewish believer in Israel. It's beautifully illustrated. (The Nessims were our colleagues in Jewish ministry in Italy.)
59. **Metaxas, Eric:** Science and the Case for God, Decision magazine (Billy Graham). <https://www.wsj.com/articles/eric-metaxas-science-increasingly-makes-the-case-for-god-1419544568> More sources for cosmic fine-tuning, without which there would be no universe, include Queen Elizabeth's Astronomer Royal, astrophysicist Dr. Martin Rees: <http://discovermagazine.com/2000/nov/cover/>.
60. **Carter, Robert, Ph.D.:** DVD: **The High Tech Cell**. Genetic 'shock and awe' presentation of DNA as the most complex computer in the universe and its incredible functioning in four dimensions! Preview the DVD and read reviews by 45 other scientists here: <https://creation.com/four-dimensional-genome>
61. **Sanford, John, Ph.D. et al:** Sanford Scientists **Discover Astounding DNA Complexity**, FMS Foundation, 2014. The genetic code in DNA contains double information since it can also be read backwards! [http://media.wix.com/ugd/a704d4\\_43295b5fe0e548f69dca984314e4f925.pdf](http://media.wix.com/ugd/a704d4_43295b5fe0e548f69dca984314e4f925.pdf). More amazing DNA facts in the previous citation: **The High Tech Cell**.
62. **Cahn, Rabbi Jonathan:** **The Passover Mysteries** (9 CD/DVD SET), MORNINGSIDE, PO BX 9330, Branson MO, 65615 417/779-9000. Volume 3: Messiah and the Hidden Writings of 30 A.D. The Talmud records strange happenings in the Jewish Temple during the 40 years following Jesus' crucifixion and resurrection. It's also online: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Menorah\\_\(Temple\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Menorah_(Temple)).
63. **REES, Martin, Ph.D.:** **Just Six Numbers**, © 2000, <https://www.perseusbooks.com/> Dr. Rees is Royal Society Research Professor at Cambridge University and holds the title of



Astronomer Royal of England. He is an international leader in cosmology and has published a number of other books on the subject. Our universe can only exist within the narrow parameters of six mathematical equations.

64. **Geologic Column discrepancies:**

<https://answersingenesis.org/geology/geologic-time-scale/geologic-column/>. Shows the theoretical Standard Geologic Column of evolution and why it's still unproven. The last three paragraphs include strong evidence for the universal flood.

65. **Laughlin, Robert, Ph.D.: A Different Universe**, © 2008, Basic Books, Perseus Books Group, Cambridge, MA 02142. **Nobel Laureate**, professor of physics and applied physics at Stanford University. Laughlin wrote, "I am concerned that much present-day biological knowledge is ideological and cannot be tested. Evolution by natural selection, for instance, has lately come to function more as an anti-theory, called upon to cover up embarrassing experimental shortcomings and legitimize findings that are at best questionable."



66. **Pugyao, Nard:** DVD: *Celebrating God's Word in Isnag*, JAARS Gift Shop, Waxhaw, NC. <https://www.jaars.org/>. How Bible translation transformed the Isnag tribe in the Philippines and how Nard, an eight year-old 'jungle boy', as he calls himself, eventually became a missionary pilot that delivered the first Bibles ever translated back to his village years later!

67. **BBN Radio:** Broadcast Transcript: Musical Reflections of January 25, 2014. Miraculous transformation of cannibalistic tribes in Fiji, Samoa, and Tonga celebrated by a combined gathering of over 5,000! This event inspired the writing of the great hymn *Jesus Shall Reign* in 1862. Later I found this same story on page 374 of *Amazing Grace*, by Kenneth W. Osbeck. (Over 275,000 in print) See this site for a radio schedule for anywhere in the world: <https://bbn1.bbnradio.org/>.

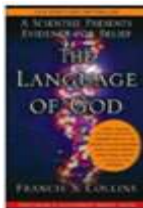
68. **Ross, Hugh, Ph.D. h: The Fingerprint of God**, © 1991, Promise Publishing Co., Orange, CA 92667 Still available on <https://Amazon.com>. Astrophysicist Ross has documented scientific evidence of intelligent creation in a thorough but interesting manner. Among many dazzling facts is his computation of the probability that the approximately 150 mathematical constants that direct nature could have evolved or not. Though a bit older than some other books, **the information is timeless like** the law of gravity, still in effect.



Dr. Ross' fantastic DVD, **Cosmic Evidences for Christ**, documents cosmological measurements and observations presented at Purdue University proving the **intelligent design** present in our universe is **observable, testable, and predictable** which qualifies it as scientifically valid, unlike evolution. Also he shares the 'Big Bang' was in the Bible centuries ago and that the 'intelligent designer' was personal, not just some force. Available along with other amazing scientific documentation at <https://www.reasons.org>.



69. **Collins, Francis, Ph.D.: The Language of God: A Scientist Presents Evidence for Belief**, © 2007 Free Press. Dr. Collins, who led the historic Human Genome Project that sequenced human DNA for the first time, has appeared publicly on TV and was quoted in Time magazine that the complexity of DNA affirms his strong belief in intelligent creation as opposed to evolution. However, he seems to be a 'theistic evolutionist'. What's that? Click [here](#). This book made the New York Times 'best seller' list. Online review: '**The Language of God provides the best argument for the integration of faith and logic since C. S. Lewis's Mere Christianity!**' His later 2011 book is also very interesting:



**The Language of Life: DNA and the Revolution in Personalized Medicine.**

70. **Jeffrey, Grant: The Signature of God**, (Revised 2010) Word Publishing, Nashville, TN. Well known apologist, saw God's hand in all of nature. Previously on the New York Times 'best seller' list. Also available as an audio book. Also see his **The Handwriting of God**. After decades of research, Jeffrey offers this book as '**conclusive proof that every teaching, every command, every promise in the Bible is true!**'



71. **Bracket, Grace:** The Size of Creation, teaching notes. A former missionary colleague and teacher at the Missionary Training Centre, Thornton Heath, Croydon, Surrey, England



72. Elliot, Elisabeth: **Reflections on Trusting God**, © 2006, Baker Publishing Group, POB 6287, Grand Rapids, MI 49516-6287. Wife of martyr Jim Elliot. This book is a great collection of brief but inspiring devotional thoughts on suffering. One of the outstanding women of Christianity today, she also has a great radio program and has written more than 20 books including this classic, **On Asking God Why**.

73. Ten Boom, Corrie: **Each New Day**, © 2003, Fleming H. Revell, Division of Baker Book House Company, Box 6287, Grand Rapids, MI 49516-6287. Nazi prison camp survivor, author of 20 books, former international speaker in 64 countries for 33 years, and subject of the movie and book, **The Hiding Place**. Also we would cite her leaflet, *I'm Still Learning to Forgive*, in which she details a face-to-face meeting with one of her former cruel SS prison guards after the war.

74. **Livio, Mario, Ph.D.: Is God a Mathematician?** © 2009, Simon and Schuster, 1230 Avenue of the Americas, New York, NY 10020. Senior astrophysicist, the Hubble Space Telescope Institute, Baltimore, Maryland. Dr. Livio demonstrates fascinating mathematical relationships in nature all pointing to intelligent design by God. You may also like his **Golden Ratio**, related to the geometry of DNA in Appendix F-1, and the **Cosmological Constant**, related to Einstein's greatest blunder in Chapter 3. (For more, see **The Mathematics of Life** by Ian Stewart at this citation. <sup>110</sup>)



**LATE BREAKING BOMBHELL:** World famous physicist, Dr. Michio Kaku, a creator and developer of the revolutionary String Theory, announced he's found more proof of God. Dr. Kaku said, **"To me it's clear that we exist in a plan governed by rules that were created, shaped by a universal intelligence and not by chance."** Like Albert Einstein and Dr. Mario Livio above, Kaku said, **"God is like a mathematician."** The article concluded with, "These ideas will make atheist's heads explode, because the more intelligent people that accept that there is a God, the more atheists look foolish." <http://conservativetribune.com/physicist/bombshell-god> (Site no longer active.)



75. *Reader's Digest*: November 2015, p. 126 quoting *USA Today*. Between 1999 and 2015, there were 346 mass shootings with 1,700 dead. You'll see a drastic recent increase in school shootings at this site which documenting shootings going back to the 1800s:

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List\\_of\\_school\\_shootings\\_in\\_the\\_United\\_States](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_school_shootings_in_the_United_States)

More: CNN reports a school shooting on average every 12 days in the year following the Parkland, Florida shooting: <https://www.cnn.com/2019/02/14/us/school-shootings-since-parkland-trnd/index.html>

Prison population has quadrupled since 1980 and \$20 billion of our taxes are spent each year to incarcerate two million prisoners. Two thirds are returned to prison within three years. A major exception is Chuck Colson's Prison Fellowship which has the lowest relapse rate of any program. They introduce prisoners to Jesus Christ who becomes their new guide! (PBS Newcast 6 PM, 10/15/15)

76. Leonard, Dr. Wendy: **The Utterly, Completely Useless, and Totally Useless SCIENCE FACT-O-PEDIA**, HarperCollins Publishers for Barnes and Noble, © 2012. Leonard is with the Public Health Association and is the medical anchor for [mocofox.com](http://mocofox.com). Many interesting facts like these: Our 100 billion brain neurons would reach 600 miles high if stacked one above the other (p. 153). Also the heart pumps 4,000 gallons of blood per day (?) (p. 82), (I believe this is a misprint and should be around 2.5 days. See 'Your Body 100 things...' in the next paragraph for the math.)

**Your Body 100 things you never knew**, National Geographic, Time Inc. Specials. At 72 beats per minute, the heart (weighing only a half pound) pumps 2 oz. 103,680 times/day through 60,000 miles of vessels, including microscopic capillaries, which = 207,360 oz. per day. Divided by 128 oz. in a gallon = 1620 gallons per day! So 4,000 gallons is pumped in roughly 2.5 days! (p. 74) About 10,000 liters of air pass through our lungs daily. (p.82) A liter is (1.057 quarts.) From another source, if all the alveoli (air sacks) of our lungs were spread out, they'd cover a tennis court.

77. **Bannister, Andy, Ph.D.: The Atheist that Didn't Exist or The Dreadful Consequences of Bad Arguments.** Armed with humor, logic, and facts, Dr. Bannister exposes the illogical, bad arguments for atheism. Chapter 1 begins with atheist Richard Dawkins' billboard on London busses, **"There's probably no God. Now stop worrying and enjoy your life."** Another major flawed argument, that religion has caused most of the wars, is thoroughly demolished on pp. 103-108. The argument that Christians only follow God out a childhood delusion thrust upon them by their parents is rebutted on

pp. 78-79 by surveys showing **over half came to Christ after age 15 through reason and experience**. This great book has rebuttals to a multitude of 'lame logic' excuses of atheistic but smart 'college geniuses'. World-class logician and apologist Ravi Zacharias wrote the encouraging Forward praising the book. Ravi delights in bravely confronting whole auditoriums full of atheistic college students on campus. Dr. Bannister tweets at [@andygbannister](#).

78. **Schroeder, Gerald, Ph.D.: Believe in God in 5 Minutes:** five-minute video by a physics professor at M.I.T. It documents evidence from the nine-year WMAP space probe that analyzed the 'echo' from the Big Bang that brought our universe into existence. Just keep clicking 'Skip ads': <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eQVm8RokoBA&noredirect=1>.

There are **20 other videos** at this site with related 'evidence of God' including some moving testimonies of how some found the real God through near-death experiences. Other videos include: **Has Science Discovered God?** and several '**Christian vs Atheist**' debates.

79. **He, Dongshan: A Mathematical Proof our Universe Could Have Formed Spontaneously from Nothing;** Wuhan Institute of Physics and Mathematics, China; Cornell University Library. This 'proof' of the '**could have**' (not 'did') above is based on the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle. (As you will see, that speaks volumes about this 'proof'!) This mathematician and his colleagues claim new solutions to the Wheeler-DeWitt quantum-relativity equation. These 'new solutions' allow for the possibility of the probabilistic (uncertain) formation of a 'quantum bubble' (not explained) in the vacuum (nothingness) of space. (**Comment: What part of 'nothing' do you not understand?** Since your Wheeler-DeWitt quantum relativity equation is the 'nothing' that created everything, this looks to me like 'nothing' but a deceptive logical contradiction. On the other hand, since most of us do not understand the mathematics of quantum theory, we cannot dispute your claim so you think we must accept it as true?)

**If** the small quantum bubble forms and **if** it chooses to expand and **if** it expands rapidly enough, voila! A universe explodes into existence! (They failed to say where the bubble material came from in the vacuum of space as well as where all the laws came from that directed all this. Since everyone already 'knows' that pigs can fly, I'm sure they could also come up with a mathematical 'proof' allowing for the possibility that pigs can indeed fly without wings or aircraft.) Their quantum mathematics is claimed to prove all these 'ifs' are possible but I didn't see any proofs to validate their equations or any citations for peer reviews. Is proving a series of 'ifs' proof? There were four responses to this, all very negative, some with good rebuttals to the utter impossibility of this: <https://medium.com/the-physics-arxiv-blog/a-mathematical-proof-that-the-universe-could-have-formed-spontaneously-from-nothing-ed7ed0f304a3#.6jvlxg6p2>.

80. **Human Fertilized Egg** The owner of this website granted permission to use the human egg photo but declined to have her site associated with 'religion'. <https://www.cbsnews.com/pictures/human-eggs-9-fascinating-facts/>  
<https://www.dailymail.co.uk/health/article-1025956/Pictured-The-moment-human-egg-emerged-ovary.html>  
(Don't click this URL. Instead copy it into your Internet browser and will work fine like the one above.)
81. **Van Susteren, Greta**, Interview with Pastor Saeed Abedini, U.S. Pastor recently released from three and a half years of torture and imprisonment for his faith. Complete story from Family Research Council posted several years ago at <https://www.frc.org/get.cfm?i=WA16A27>. Here are some inspiring reports of Christians suffering extreme Islamic persecution in several countries in **i am n** at [www.i-am-n.com](http://www.i-am-n.com).
82. **A Scientific Dissent From Darwinism:** A 23-page list of 927 scientists who are skeptical of claims that random mutation and natural selection account for the complexity of life. Their professional qualifications and location are also given. Almost all hold a Ph.D. and/or a university professorship. They are from 38 countries, including the Middle East. They may be religious or non-religious but reject Darwinism solely on scientific evidence, or the lack of it. I recognized the authors of several citations in this book on the list. [www.dissentfromdarwin.org](http://www.dissentfromdarwin.org) (Last updated January, 2016.)
83. **Hitchens, Peter: Rage Against God**, ebook. Search at <https://Zondervan.com/ebooks>. Hitchens, a former 'raging Bible-burning atheist', is the brother of one of the world's leading modern atheists, Christopher Hitchens. As an international journalist, he observed the suffering from cruelty, thievery, and ugly behavior of the common people practicing atheism in several atheistic countries.

Hitchens' 'freedom from God' practiced by whole nations turned out to be a great disappointment. Add ruthless murder gangs in Somalia where there was no law. Instead of crying, "If there's a God, why doesn't He stop this?" Hitchens said, "This is the end result of freedom FROM God and these people desperately need Him!" Later he himself came to Christ in a very unusual way on page 102.)

84. **Hawking, Stephen, Ph.D.:** 'The Beginning of Time', lecture by the world's leading cosmologist: <http://www.hawking.org.uk/the-beginning-of-time.html>.
85. **Ellenberg, Jordan, Ph.D.:** **How NOT to Be Wrong**, © 2014 Penguin Books, NYC., NY. Here's another absurd, yet 'logically correct', proof using Bayesian grids, that it's more likely we were created by 'gods' instead of God but much more likely we are only electronic creatures simulated in an ultra-computer. While logically correct, the data used is not factual but purely arbitrary rendering it scientifically meaningless.
86. **Snively, Mike, DVD:** **Aunt Lucy? Hominids, Apemen, and Other Fables**, (© 2006). Host of Trinity Broadcasting Network's International Studios, Dallas, Texas. [https://www.missionimperative.org/store/p9/Aunt\\_Lucy%3F\\_%2A.html](https://www.missionimperative.org/store/p9/Aunt_Lucy%3F_%2A.html). This exposes the bias (and cheating) of the eight major series of hominid fossils that are said to be the foundation of man's evolution. 
87. **Fruchtenbaum, Arnold, Ph.D. :** **Jesus Was a Jew**, © 2014, Ariel Ministries, <https://www.ariel.org/>. Chapter 6 covers the great differences between fragmented modern Judaism and ancient Judaism with answers to many Jewish questions. A number of Messianic Jewish testimonies are shared in Chapter 8. Many prophecies from the Tenakh of the two comings of Messiah are presented in detail in earlier chapters.
88. **Rose Publishing B:** Torrance, CA 90503, <https://www.hendricksonrose.com/>. Great plasticized foldout summaries under \$5 each. (We found these at a local Bible store for \$3.99.)  
 -100 Prophecies Fulfilled by Jesus (Unfortunately, this omits 15 prophecies found in Isaiah 53)  
 -The Twelve Disciples  
 -The Harmony of the Gospels  
 -Bible Translations Comparisons: Compare 20 Popular Versions of the Bible  
 -Evidence for the Resurrection: Skeptic's seven objections refuted  
 -The Statue in the Book of Daniel, Prophecy of the four world kingdoms in Daniel 2.
89. **Rose Publishing C:** Torrance, CA 90503, <https://www.hendricksonrose.com/>. Great plasticized foldouts under \$5 each. Summaries in side-by-side comparison chart form.  
 -Christianity Cults & Religions, 20 groups: Buddhism, Meditation, Hinduism, Bahai, Meditation, etc.  
 -10 Questions & Answers on Jehovah's Witnesses  
 -10 Questions & Answers on Mormonism  
 -Islam and Christianity, Reaching out to Muslims, answering misunderstandings  
 -Essential Doctrine Made Easy, Key Christian Beliefs  
 -Denominations Comparison, 12 major denominations
90. **McDowell, Sean:** **The Apologetics Study Bible FOR Students**, © 2014, Holman Bible Publishers, Nashville, TN. Surveys show that over 2/3 of Christian youth lose their faith in college. Falling into sin would be a primary cause but may be caused by not being prepared to answer deceptively logical objections to Christianity. This Bible is literally a seminary course in apologetics with answers to demolish hundreds of faith-destroying questions, a tactical guide to six types of attacks to watch out for, and over 60 'twisted Scriptures' to counter. Masterfully done by the son of one of the great apologists of our day, Josh MacDowell, whose **Evidence Demands a Verdict** <sup>13</sup>, set the pace decades ago.
91. **Film on DVD:** Directed by Lad Allen, **ORIGIN: Design, Chance and the First Life on Earth**, Amazon.com. Spectacular animation, traveling through a molecular universe, demonstrates divine engineering far above human imagination! Presented at a National Apologetics Conference in 2016.
92. **Mathematics in Nature:**  
 Divine Ratio and Fibonacci Series in nature on the Internet  
[www.pbs.org/wgbh/nova/physics/describing-nature-math.html](http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/nova/physics/describing-nature-math.html)  
[www.goldennumber.net/solar-system](http://www.goldennumber.net/solar-system) and [www.goldennumber.net/dna](http://www.goldennumber.net/dna) **WOW!**

Golden Ratio, Phi, 1.618, and Fibonacci in Math, Nature, Art, Design, Beauty and DNA.  
One source with over 100 articles and latest findings.



93. **Hodges, Tom L.:** *Atheist Engineer's Flight Toward Suicide*, evangelistic leaflets, free of charge, from [EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com](mailto:EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com). True seekers will appreciate the superscripts in the leaflet which take you to more answers in specific chapters of the free companion ebook: *ATHEIST ENGINEER FINDS EVIDENCE GOD'S REAL!*
94. **Hodges, Tom L.:** *15-minute DVD testimony* interview of the author, a former atheistic field engineer with three Navy fighter squadrons, who found Christ while contemplating suicide. He and his wife Irene are celebrating 52 years of missionary service!
95. Cowart, John W.: *Strangers on the Earth*, © 2014 <https://www.amazon.com/> Chapter 6 calls the Auca Indians, 'The Worst People On Earth!' This book is an amazing account of how the most evil tribe known came to Christ following the martyrdom of five missionaries in 1956. They renamed their tribe to Waorani and many are still living for Christ today!
96. **Comfort, Ray:** *The Atheist Delusion, Why Millions Deny the Obvious*, 2016, This presentation includes 5-minute interviews with young university atheists and a professor of theoretical physics defending their atheism and Ray Comfort's rebuttals. Fast forward to elapsed time 10:26 to see TV/movie comedian Tim Allen and famous atheist Richard Dawkins explain how our universe created itself from nothing without God: "Very simple"! But watch the audience reaction! (Dawkins wrote probably the most widely read book defending atheism, *The God Delusion*.)
- You might like to try <https://www.livingwaters.com/movies/> which has 20 videos of leading defenders of the faith like Lee Strobel, Hugh Ross, Ravi Zacharias and others with scientific proofs of God and problems of evolution. The site has had over 15 million views! We'd also highly recommend this You Tube site of 'Christian vs. Atheist' debates. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ChWiZ3iXWwM>
97. **Share Jesus Without Fear, Personal Evangelism New Testament**, © 2003, Holman Christian Standard Bible, <https://www.christianbook.com> . This is inexpensive (\$6.99), pocket sized, and very useful. A basic 'question/listen' approach is presented on page xiii and answers to 36 objections or problem reactions which begin on page 442. (The Holman Bible is fairly recent and was diligently done by 100 translators.)
- TACTICS: A game plan for discussing your Christian faith** is a fantastic companion to the witnessing New Testament above by Gregory Koukl. It uses the same 'question/listen' technique and has a multitude of actual examples of how to share Christ without fear or causing offense by using reason and logic to make the gospel clear and handle all kinds of objections. It's a Zondervan publication © 2009 by Gregory Koukl, a leading apologist. For more information you may go to *Stand to Reason: [www.str.org](http://www.str.org)*.
98. **Crowner, Robert P.:** *The Decent of Evolution*, Crowner, an engineer, has assembled, in my opinion, the briefest, scientifically compelling evidence demolishing the theory of evolution in favor of divine creation on only three pages! Eighteen world-class authorities are cited which are followed by 10 pages of reader comments. Feel free to add yours, positive or negative. [http://www.worldmag.com/2016/02/the\\_descent\\_of\\_evolution](http://www.worldmag.com/2016/02/the_descent_of_evolution) (blanks may be underlines)
99. **PBS VIDEO:** THE ORIGAMI REVOLUTION, <https://www.pbs.org/video/nova-origami-revolution-episode/> *Amazing discovery that proteins must be folded precisely in a 'lock and key' configuration in order to join to other proteins, else they're useless, in spite of a perfect chemical structure. Scientists are using this property to lock specially designed proteins to the surfaces of viruses which disables them.*
100. Garofalo, Steven: *All Roads Don't Lead to Heaven*, © TriedStone Publishing Company, Charlotte, NC. Author, speaker, and founder of Reason for Truth ([ReasonforTruth.org](http://ReasonforTruth.org)). Garafalo's book is commended by a host of noted Christian apologists including Josh McDowell.
101. **Tegmark, Max, Ph.D.:** *Our Mathematical Universe*, © 2014 hardback by Max Tegmark. Professor of Physics at M.I.T., Publishers: Albert A. Knopf, New York City, NY and Toronto, Canada. [www.aaknopf.com](http://www.aaknopf.com) 2015 paper-back also available.

102. **Darwin, Charles: Life and Letters**, 1887, Vol. 2, p. 229  
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Life\\_and\\_Letters\\_of\\_Charles\\_Darwin](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Life_and_Letters_of_Charles_Darwin)
103. **Rana, Fazale, Ph.D.: How to Build the Case for Biochemical Design**, DVD & video:  
<https://shop.reasons.org/> (Topic: Biochemical Design) Fascinatingly complex chart of cellular operations and details of a microscopic *physical* cellular motor! You'll also find his brief testimony as a former Muslim evolutionist at <http://www.reasons.org/about/who-we-are/fazale-rana>.
104. **Rogers, Thomas W, Graham McLennan, Ph.D.: Darwin's Replacement, Lifetime Reference Guides**, P.O. Box 51613, RPO Park Royal, West Vancouver, BC, Canada V7T VX9, [www.lifetimereferenceguides.com](http://www.lifetimereferenceguides.com) 'Atomic Biology', is a new life-science it is hoped will eventually replace evolution in educational systems. Highlights include the functions of 17 components of a cell portrayed as parts of a complex city demonstrating that life is by design, not accidental evolution. Half the book presents how God has guided the nations of Canada, The U.S., Britain, and Australia, plus how all need to again enthrone Him. A *terrific* book!
105. **Siino, Denise: Guerrilla Hostage**, © 1999 Baker Book House, Co. P.O. Box 6287, Grand Rapids, MI, 49516. Missionary Ray Rising's courage during his 810-day captivity in the Colombian jungle.
106. **Jacob, Jim: A Jewish Lawyer's Case for the Resurrection**, © 2016, Self-published. Jacob has been admitted to practice law before the United States Supreme Court and was selected for membership in the Outstanding Lawyers of America. In this small booklet, he asks, "Was Yeshua a liar, lunatic, or Lord?" Evidence pro and con is presented. You decide. <https://messianicjewish.net/>
- 
107. **Simmons, Geoffrey: What Darwin Didn't Know**. Though Darwin was a brilliant observer in late 1850s, DNA, the laws of genetics, and other breakthroughs had not yet been discovered so his theory of evolution had a very poor scientific foundation and is therefore mostly speculation. PDF only \$4.95: <https://shop.reasons.org/product/405/what-darwin-didn-t-know-pdf>
108. **Culkins, Joseph, Ph.D.: Design in the Human Eye**. Professor of Ophthalmology at Johns Hopkins. Every second, each of the **27 MILLION** cells in your retina, makes around a billion computations before sending the image data to the brain. The fastest man-made mega-computer would require hours to do what one retina cell does in one second!  
<https://creationmoments.com/sermons/the-eyes-computer/>  
**More:** Go to <https://creationmoments.com>, search for 'design of the eye' and you'll get many more articles with amazing facts testifying to intelligent design in the eye!
109. **Hubel, David Ph.D.: Eye, Brain, and Vision**. HARVARD University School of Medicine, biochemical and neurological functions. <https://e-booksdirectory.com/details.php?ebook=2600>  
 Fascinating **Vision as Data Processing will be found here:**  
<http://im-possible.info/english/articles/the-eye-beguiled/2-vision-as-data-processing.html>
110. **Stewart, Ian: The Mathematics of Life**, © 2011, Jost Enterprises, Basic Books, 387 Park Avenue South, NY, NY 10016-8810. Noted prize-winning professor and author of five math text books and 30 other popular math books. **Professor Stewart's Cabinet of Mathematical Curiosities**, by the same publisher, is also a great collection for the mathematically curious.
111. Young, Sarah: **JESUS TODAY**, © 2012, Thomas Nelson (since 1798) Nashville, Dallas, Mexico City, Rio de Janeiro. 'Experience Hope Through His Presence' The very best daily devotion book I've ever had. Written as if God speaks directly to you. Companion book **JESUS LIVES**. Available on Amazon.

\*\*\*\*\*

### ADDITIONAL RESOURCES

Reminder: To return from a 'jump': hold ALT and press ←left arrow (not <).

- A. Whitley, Pam: **Not a Glimmer of Hope**, © 1993, Spirit Press & Publication, P.O. Box 15742, Del City, OK 73155 'Learning to follow the Shepherd when the path seems impossible' is the subtitle of this inspiring book written by a mother who raised a brain-damaged child. Read how she clung to the 'Shepherd's Life Rope' in the heavy fog of despair when she could no longer feel the presence of her Divine Shepherd. My mom cared for her child over many years in the church nursery and greatly encouraged this stressed-out young mother. Pam autographed Mom's copy of this book

with: "I may not have had the courage to continue if you had not encouraged me so much."

- B. Gibbs, Terri; *OUR DAILY BREAD, Collector's Edition*, Thomas Nelson Book Group, Nashville, TN 37214** A wonderful, even classic, collection of the best daily devotions published over the years by RBC ministries. Other very good devotional books include ***Each New Day*** by Nazi concentration camp survivor Corrie Ten Boom and ***Pearls of Great Price*** by paraplegic Christian celebrity, Joni Eareckson Tada. You may also subscribe to receive, free of charge, a quarterly Our Daily Bread booklet of daily devotions or read a brief new devotion each day online at <https://www.odb.org/>.

If we called the three previous devotional books 'delightful appetizers' we could call Wesley Duewel's ***Let God Guide You Daily*** the main course. It goes very deeply into God's guidance for your Christian life. Duewel was a missionary for many years in India. His video sermons and audio downloads are found here. <http://www.sermonindex.net/modules/myvideo/viewcat.php?cid=143>

### **C. BIBLE QUESTIONS ANSWERED and OTHER HELPS ONLINE**

#### **1. GENERAL BIBLE QUESTIONS:**

Josh McDowell (ex-atheist): <https://www.josh.org/>.

Hank Hanegraaff, ***The Bible Answer Man***: <https://www.equip.org/>.

**Radio broadcast archives, books, software, phone-in questions.**

#### **2. EVOLUTION:**

Wide variety of latest discoveries and comments: <https://crev.info/>. (More in Evidence Resources.) Large article archive and a 'Creation Museum' with special effects: <https://answersingenesis.org/>.

- 3. BIBLE RELIABILITY: Broadcasts and Downloads:** Erwin Lutzer, Pastor of Moody Church. <https://www.oneplace.com/ministries/running-to-win/>.

- 4. BBN RADIO broadcasts** worldwide in many languages will help you keep in touch with God each day. Men, tune in while you shave first thing in the morning. Women, listen while you're putting on make-up. Tune in any time during their 24-hour broadcast schedule. (BBN has helped me to get through more than one sleepless night, especially during my several hospitalizations.) You'll hear encouraging half-hour messages including many by authors in the Evidence Resources. In between speakers are sparkling piano music, rousing trumpets, even stirring symphony orchestras playing Christian music 24 hours a day, enhanced by inspiring comments between songs. Schedule is at <https://bbn1.bbnradio.org/>. UNSHACKLED is my favorite program, with true testimonies of drug addicts, criminals, etc. transformed by Christ. Transworld Radio also has great programming on short wave for your friends overseas. <sup>o</sup>

- 5. Bible Suite by Biblios.** This free website, includes 16 Bible study 'help' buttons, translations in over 38 languages including the original Hebrew and Greek Scriptures. Also parallel comparisons of various Bible versions, lexicon, Bible atlas, Bible dictionary, concordance, Bible encyclopedia, commentaries, even devotions and an on-line Christian library, much downloadable free. Liberty University, a well-known Christian college, and the Central Christian College of Kansas seem to be contributors to these fantastic resources: <http://biblehub.com/> and <http://biblios.com/>.

Here's another free website to look up Bible passages in 63 languages and 185 versions: <https://www.biblegateway.com/passages/>.

- 6. Hanegraaff, Hank: *The Bible Answer Book*, © 2004, Pocket-sized hardback, Thomas Nelson, Nashville, TN 37214.** The Bible Answer Man has been on radio for many years with answers to questions about God, the Bible, and life. Also see <https://www.equip.org/>.
- 7. Hanegraaff, Hank: *The Creation Answer Book*, © 2012, Pocket-sized hardback, Thomas Nelson, Nashville, TN 37214.** Also see <https://www.equip.org/> for 81 questions and brief answers on creation and evolution.
- 8. Sala, Harold, Ph.D. : *God Said That, So What?*** Biblical reliability, more on the Dead Sea Scrolls. Five-minute broadcast 'Take a Minute' on BBN Radio <https://bbn1.bbnradio.org/>.

9. Comfort, Ray: **The Atheist Test**, Living Waters Publications, <https://www.livingwaters.com/>. Tiny shirt-pocket booklet that's humorous, but very informative, extracted from Ray Comfort's book, **God Doesn't Believe in Atheists**, © 2009, Kindle edition and printed editions available from <https://www.amazon.com/>. (The Atheist Test is sooo good I just had to repeat it from above.)
10. Swindoll, Chuck: **ANSWERS for the world's tough questions PASSPORT**, © 2009, Insight for Living, [www.insight.org](http://www.insight.org) and <https://insightworld.org/>. Terrific pocket-sized treasury of how to answer 381 hard questions by skeptics, the suffering, and those seeking Christ. <http://store.insight.org/p-381-answers-for-the-worlds-tough-questions-passport-ndashemby-insight-for-living-ministriesem.aspx>
- D. **Water, Mark: The Bible & Science Made Easy**, © 2001, Henderson Publishers, Peabody, MA 01961-3473. Great pocket-sized booklet available from local Christian book stores. It's packed with interesting scientific evidence including curiosities from nature, which clearly point to God: <https://www.amazon.com/Bible-Science-Made-Easy-Understand/dp/1565636198>
- E. Warren, Rick: **The Purpose Driven Life: 'What on Earth Am I Here For?'** © 2002, 2012, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI 49530. Publishers Weekly calls it the best-selling non-fiction hardback in history with 32 million copies sold. It's also available on Kindle or as an audio book:
- Watch! 50 Days of Transformation**, a wonderful way to get on a solid track following Jesus: Copy title into search box at: <https://saddleback.com/watch/50-days-of-transformation>
- F. Loving, Aretta: **Together We Can**, Volume 1, © 2007, Harvest Day Books, 10300 E. Leelanau Court, Traverse City, MI 49684. Bible translator. Amazing stories of miracle conversions and fantastic manifestations of God's power in lives worldwide. (On page 47 of Aretta's book you also will read of the miraculous way in which this author (**Atheist Engineer's Flight** <sup>93</sup>) became involved in Bible translation technology.)
- Chapter 5 includes an account of how David Berkowitz, the infamous 'Son of Sam' serial killer, found Christ in prison, and what he's doing now. Here are more details 40 years later: <https://www.biography.com/news/son-of-sam-david-berkowitz-biography-facts>
- G. Loving, Aretta: **Immersed in Jesus Christ**, © 2013, Gazelle Press, PO Box 101540, Mobile, AL 36619. Bible translator. Be encouraged and challenged by this collection of testimonies including Jewish rebel Sam Nadler, on pg. 8: 'Religious, Rebellious, and Redeemed'. His wife's testimony follows. More true stories include an African bomb-maker on pg. 1, Kenyan Naphtaly Mattah on pg. 71: From Serving the Devil to Serving God in Bible Translation, and how a fighter pilot kept his sanity during seven years captivity in a prison camp, page 129.
- On page. 22 and 41 are some vignettes from the Loving's 15 years translating for the Awa in Papua New Guinea , witnessing experiences, and a brief article about the author of this this book. (NOTE: Contact me if book unavailable from the printer: [EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com](mailto:EvidenceGodsReal@gmail.com).)
- (Aretta has also written a delightful, and often humorous, devotional book based on their family's experiences on the mission field, **Slices of Life**, Youth with a Mission Publishing, © 2000, POB 55787, Seattle, WA 98115.)
- H. **Bruce, F. F., Ph.D.**: **The New Testament Documents: Are they Reliable?** © 2011. D.D., F.B.A., Rylands Professor of Biblical Criticism and Exegesis, University of Manchester, England. <https://www.ivpress.com/the-new-testament-documents-are-they-reliable>
- I. **Van Voorst, Robert E.**: **Jesus Outside the New Testament**, © 2000, Eerdmans Publishing Co., 235 Jefferson Ave. S.E., Grand Rapids, MI 49503. Seminary Professor.
- J. Richardson, Don: **Eternity in their Hearts**, © 1984, Bible translator, author, spokesman for World Team missions. Many examples of how God spoke to primitive people even before missionaries came. <https://www.amazon.com/Eternity-Their-Hearts-Don-Richardson/dp/0764215582>
- K. Hodges, Tom L.: Speech Tools for Translators, JAARS BEYOND, Volume 30, Number 4 and Thankful for Technology, BEYOND, Volume 32, Number 1, JAARS, Inc., Box 248, Waxhaw, NC 28173.



L. Davis, Jean: **Keep on Keeping On**, © 2008, [www.xulonpress.com](http://www.xulonpress.com). Inspiring story of how Jean and her husband Brooks learned to forgive and to endure the anguish over their son's 18-year struggle with drug addiction followed by his murder and decapitation. As if that were not enough, it was seven years before the case even came to trial and it then dragged on for an additional painful year. Available at Amazon. A Kindle version is also available. You may contact Jean at her website, <http://www.keeponkeepingonbook.com/>.



M. Tomlinson, Howard and Jeanne: **Hope For Those Who Hurt**, © 2002, Master Plan Productions, 19635 Green Mountain Drive, Newhall, CA 91321. A biographical devotional-type 'book of hope' showing how Christ sustained this couple through many heart-rending trials. These included Howard's five brain tumor surgeries and a paralyzing stroke. Jeanne's brother, David Coppedge, had to finish the book because she succumbed to cancer only 70 days after diagnosis. Joni Eareckson Tada commented that the Tomlinsons were "truly inspiring:" <https://www.amazon.com>.

(You may also read about Jeanne's brother David's current inspiring struggle over several years with terminal cancer at <http://davidcoppedge.com>. He is also an advocate of intelligent design.

See his terrific site at: <http://crev.info>.)

N. White, James Emory: **Can We Believe in God?** © 2010, Intervarsity Press. Small \$1.20, 30-page booklet. Every one of the trillions of cells in our body has over 200,000 amino acids arranged in a precise way. To have happened by accidental evolution, it would've taken over 293.5 times the age of our earth estimated by evolutionists. Clearly impossible! White quotes Hoyle's comparison of the likelihood for this to have evolved to an explosion in a warehouse producing a copy of Windows 10 software: <https://www.ivpress.com/Search?q=can+we+believe+in+god>.

O. **Trans World Radio** short-wave broadcasts are heard in 230 languages and dialects spoken in 160 countries. See [www.twr.org/](http://www.twr.org/). Their byline: *Speaking Hope to the World!* While in Italy, and before having learned the language in the '60s, I was very much encouraged during dark times by the daily "Back to the Bible" broadcasts in English from TWR, Monte Carlo, around 400 miles away. That megawatt station was originally the most powerful station in Europe and was built by Hitler to communicate with his Afrika Korps. To the glory of God it now broadcasts Christ's message of hope to much of the world!

P. Piper, John: **Don't Waste Your Life**, © 2003, 2007, Crossway Books, Good News Publishers, 1300 Crescent Street, Wheaton, Illinois 60187. Chancellor of Bethlehem College and Seminary. Available in 22 languages from Arabic to Spanish. Find free PDF download, inexpensive paperback, and Kindle editions at: <http://www.desiringgod.org/resource-library/books/dont-waste-your-life>. Here's a short video clip 'wake-up' call: <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Sh1wmPQA0QA>.

Q. Rose Publishing: Inexpensive pamphlets available at your local Bible store or from <https://www.hendricksonrose.com/>:

1. Geisler, Norman: *Essential Doctrine Made Easy*, © 2007
2. Paul Carden, *Christianity, Cults, and Religions*, © 1996
3. Bowman, Robert, MA.: *Denominations Comparison*. © 2007

R. **English, Bridget A.**: Beyond our Galaxy, special publication of the National Geographic, © 2014, National Geographic Society, Washington, DC. A survey of fascinating up-to-date astronomical information assembled from many leading scientists. On page 113 is an admission that there is **no data available before 10<sup>-43</sup> seconds AFTER the 'Big Bang'** (Planck Time) when our universe and time came into existence. Therefore evolutionists' speculations about what may have been before the Big Bang (hot particles, quantum theory, etc.) cannot be declared as a fact. This leaves evolutionists with no valid scientific evidence to prove a Creator was not needed! You'll also find innumerable articles online under 'Planck time' confirming 'no data possible before Planck time after the Big Bang'. Also the Astronomy magazine. March, 2016, page 27 details the failure of BICEP2 to find pre-Big Bang data in the CMB Big Bang echoes after two years.

S. Smalling, Roger, Ph.D.: **How to Grow in Faith**, © 2010. The Smallings have been long time missionary colleagues of ours for over 50 years. Among other ministries, Roger is a guest teacher at several Latin American seminaries where some of his books are used as texts. His wife, Dianne, ministers to pastors' wives both in the US and in Latin America. You'll be blessed by visiting the





Smalling's home page at <http://visionreal.info/>.

- T.** Strobel, Lee, **The Case for Faith**, © 2000, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI 49. As an investigative reporter and legal editor for the Chicago Tribune, Strobel spent the last two of his 15 years there as a hardened atheist searching for real evidence for the foundation of the claims of Christ. In this book, also available as an audio book, Strobel answers the top eight toughest challenges to Christianity, including 'If Suffering and Evil, there's no God'. Many other challenges are vicious attacks upon God's existence, character, and purposes hurled by well-known skeptics, and even apostates. The latter includes Charles Templeton, a former preaching colleague of Billy Graham, who renounced Christ in his book, **Farewell to Faith**.
- U.** **Muncaster, Ralph O.: Dismantling Evolution**, © 2003, Harvest House Publishers, part of the **Examine the Evidence** series, Zondervan. Adjunct Professor at Vanguard University. Between pages 139 and 143, Muncaster, a former '**hard-core atheist**' engineer for 15 years, shares how he computed the probability of life arising spontaneously without a Creator. This refutes the speculations by noted atheist Carl Sagan and agnostic DNA Nobel Prize winner, Sir Francis Crick.
- Page 26 reports Sir Fred Hoyle's anti-evolution calculation that life could've originated by accident:  $10^{40,000}$  to 1 against! The estimate of the total number of atoms in the universe is reported to be only around  $10^{80}$  though other sources estimate  $10^{108}$ . Either way, Sir Fred Hoyle's calculation is magnitudes greater than either figure.
- Great detailed evidence of the enormous complexity of the cell that demands **intelligent creation** is found beginning on page 123. Unreliability of dates from the Standard Geologic Column, p. 73. Muncaster, founded the ministry, **Strong Basis to Believe**. His brief bio, **A Skeptic's Search for God**: [http://www.bibleone.net/print\\_SF1.html](http://www.bibleone.net/print_SF1.html) Another great Muncaster book: **18**
- V.** **Jackson, Wayne: Creation, Evolution, and the Age of the Earth**, © 2003, Courier Publishing, 7809 N. Pershing, Stockton CA 95207. Editor of the Christian Courier. Chapters 3 and 4 of this great little paperback includes information about three unproven assumptions regarding radioactive dating and the Standard Geologic Column. (Modern errors including dating a living mollusk at 2,300 years and a freshly killed seal at 1,300 years.)
- W.** Dr. Davis, Evelyn: **Prayer and Reflections, Life Tasks: Strength for the Journey**, © SIL, Dallas, TX Moved to CREDITS. Is related to citation CC. (Page 45 states which quotes are in the public domain.)
- X.** Vujicic, Nick: **Life Without Limbs**, ©, and five other books, including a great devotional book. International evangelist: <https://www.lifewithoutlimbs.org/>, [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nick\\_Vujicic](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nick_Vujicic). Also this DVD is available: **No Arms, No Legs, No Worries!**
- Y.** Cole, Arnie and Michael Ross: **Unstuck**. Dr. Cole, CEO of the popular Back to the Bible Broadcast and his associate, have put together a very good book to help bored Christians to get 'unstuck' and directed to a fresh, vibrant walk with Christ: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2xUD1UjXvzq>
- Z.** **Lanier, Mark: Christianity on Trial**, ©, Intervarsity Press.  
**Does the Christian faith hold up under scrutiny?** Mark Lanier, one of America's top trial lawyers, uses his experienced legal eye to examine the plausibility of the Christian faith. Bringing science, current knowledge, and common sense together in a courtroom approach, this "trial" elucidates a rich understanding of God and a strong foundation for Christian faith: <https://www.ivpress.com/Search?q=christianity+on+trial>
- AA.** Zamperini, Captain Louis: **Captured by Grace**, ©, Billy Graham Evangelistic Association, 1 Billy Graham Parkway, Charlotte, NC 28201. Order from <https://billygraham.org/?s=CAPTURED+BY+GRACE>.  
The inspiring spiritual ministry of Zamperini, an Army Air Force navigator. After years of torture in a Japanese prison camp during WWII, his life was devastated by alcoholism and PTSD. He later found Christ at a Billy Graham Crusade, then returned to Japan to tell his captors they were forgiven as he was. Following that, he was a major spiritual speaker for young people. All this was omitted from the book and movie Unbroken, so get 'the rest of the story' here.
- BB.** Robinson, Ashley Smith: **Unlikely Angel: For those who need hope but don't know where to find it**. HarperCollins e-book, <https://www.amazon.com/>. The 'Unlikely Angel' was a gunman who had murdered a judge and several others before taking Ashley hostage for seven hours. During this

crisis, Ashley read him Chapter 32 of Rick Warren's book, **The Purpose Driven Life**, which also spoke to her, motivating her to give up her long-standing drug habit. Widow of a murdered husband, today she has remarried, has three children, and is an inspirational speaker for CRSU helping other addicts recover. More at: <http://www.wrdw.com/home/headlines/10-years-later-Ashley-Smith-Robinson-recalls-hostage-story-328119371.html> and <http://www.gwinnettdaily.com/news/2015/mar/11/the-killer-and-the-captive-brian-nichols8217/>.

**CC.** Davis, Evelyn, Ph.D. : *Prayer and Reflection, Our Time of Need*, © 2012, Evelyn Davis, Ed.D., SIL International. A collection of inspiring and encouraging devotional thoughts with questions to encourage Christian growth and maturity. 'Delays are not Denials', on page 42, speaks to frustration when God seems to let us down.

**DD.** **Always Be Ready Apologetics Ministry** has a great site where you can quickly look up any subject related to answering questions by skeptics or other inquirers'. (1 Peter 3:15) You must have Internet Explorer browser 11 or equivalent for this: <https://www.alwaysbeready.com/>. If you do not have the '11' version, you'll get a 'not found'. Enter the URL into your browser search box, then click on the site that appears in the search screen. It should be the first one. Worked for me multiple times.



**EE.** Anonymous: **Man in the Mirror**. If you're a parent with wayward children, you'll be encouraged! Free from: [gseedsowers@gmail.com](mailto:gseedsowers@gmail.com).

**FF.** Qureshi, Nabeel, Ph.D.: **Seeking Allah, Finding Jesus**, © 2014, 2016, paper-back or e-book at <https://www.zondervan.com/search-results/?keyword=SEEKING+ALLAH+FINDING+JESUS> A Muslim doctor and zealot, with 23 years Islamic training, studies Christianity to refute it but evidence proved Christianity true! This was a New York Times bestseller. His YouTube testimony begins with, "Would you want to know the truth if you had to give up everything to follow God?": <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nGCsx2cdCo0I>. My faith was considerably strengthened! Click [here](#) for a similar testimony above of Muslim Ergen Caner (end of citation <sup>35</sup>).

**GG.** Young, Lynda T., MRE, MEd: **Hope for Families of Children with Cancer**, © 2008, Kindred Press, LLC, Division of Kindred Spirits International, Snellville, GA, [kindredspiritsintl@yahoo.com](mailto:kindredspiritsintl@yahoo.com). Lynda is co-founder of this ministry and national author and speaker. Her husband John has done cancer research 45 years and she is an ardent children's hospitals volunteer.

Help down the difficult path of children with cancer includes prayer suggestions for coping with family, friends, and the hospital; tips; comforting Scripture; humor; and stories from the front lines. With hospital chaplain Jonathan Ward. Part of the YOU ARE NOT ALONE Book Series.

**HH.** Young, Lynda T., MRE, MEd: **Hope for Families of Children on the Autistic Spectrum**, © 2011, Leafwood Publishers, Abilene University Press, Abilene, TX 79601. If you've ever felt overwhelmed, isolated, or alone as a parent or educator of a child on the Autistic Spectrum, then this is the book for you. Lynda offers comfort support, and resources to help you to understand children on the spectrum, while also showing how God is with you every step of the way and that you are not alone. This book is also part of the YOU ARE NOT ALONE Book Series

**II.** Hemphill, Joel: **He's Still Workin' on Me**; © 1980, Hemphill Music Company and Family and Friends Music, Benson Music Company Love the second line of the chorus: 'Don't judge me yet, there's an unfinished part!' You may purchase a copy of the sheet music for piano at: <https://www.musicnotes.com/sheetmusic/mtd.asp?ppn=MN0058892&intcmp=Recommended>  
\*\*\*\*\*

### PHOTO and OTHER CREDITS

Credits below which mention 'purchased' or 'permission' are copyrighted! Therefore they should not be copied or changed in any way or reproduced in any form, stored, transmitted by computer or electronic means without written permission from the copyright owner. Therefore, readers can use the 'free' or 'public domain' sites listed below but you must assume that all other photos and articles in this book may be copyrighted and are not to be used until proven otherwise or you are granted permission by the owner.

### OPENING PAGES:

Photo: F4 Phantom II fighter, Radar Intercept Operator cockpit, by the author at Carolinas Air Museum airshow: <https://www.carolinasaviation.org/>.

Photo: USS Ranger, sailing under the Golden Gate Bridge  
Purchased aboard the USS Ranger, 1961. Ship decommissioned, no publisher found.

Poem: *Reverse Thinking* by kind permission of Pastor David D. Dietrich, <http://www.dvmfilm.com/blog>.  
This has been widely circulated on the Internet under a different title with no author credited so I'm very happy to be able to correct this.

### 1. PRE-FLIGHT

Photo: Tom and Irene Hodges portrait: *Images R Yours*, out of business.

Cartoon: Serge-ant source unknown

'Music, Light, Promise, Hope' Christmas card: [drcarolynlhilt@gmail.com](mailto:drcarolynlhilt@gmail.com).  
from the pen and heart of Dr. Carolyn Hilt by permission.

God's Recall: [http://dedeswalkwithgod.com/Gods\\_Recall\\_Notice.html](http://dedeswalkwithgod.com/Gods_Recall_Notice.html).

### 2. THE FLIGHT

Photos: F3 McDonnell Demon aircraft, radar display, and Squadron VF-92 emblem  
by kind permission and courtesy of Robert Newlin, [www.f3hdcemonguys.org](http://www.f3hdcemonguys.org). (May, 2019 inactive.)

Photo: Author in Marine Sergeant uniform. From 1954, Hawaii photographer unknown.

### 3. PENETRATING HEAVY OVERCAST of DOUBT but ONLY to 99%

Cartoon: Blue Computer: Word clip-art

Photo: Bronze cuckoo: by kind permission and courtesy of James Niland of Brisbane, Queensland, Australia. Disclaimer: Mr. Niland does not endorse any publication that uses this picture.

DVD: *Celebrating God's Word in Israg*, Nard Pugao. JAARS, Box 248, Waxhaw, NC 28173.

BBN Radio, Musical Reflections for 11pm 1/25/14. How *Jesus Shall Reign* came to be written:

<https://bbn1.bbnradio.org/>.

Photo: Rev. Richard Wurmbbrand and Italian converts by the author

Photo: **Colossus** from pamphlet X555: *The Statue in the Book of Daniel*, 2005, Hendrickson Publishers, Peabody, Massachusetts. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Photo: 01-easter-tomb-sun-crosses\_credit-shutterstock

### 4. SURPRISING FINAL 1% to BREAK-THROUGH INTO SUNNY SKIES

Photo: Sunrise/Sunset above overcast: (free download)

<http://www.free-hdwallpapers.com/wallpaper/nature/sunshine/13905>. (5/2019: no longer active)

<http://www.freehdwallpapers.com/>

Dear Santa sign: Great for your kids all year!. Available at Cracker Barrel, Rock Hill, SC. :

Cartoon: Bee: (free download) <http://mewarnai.us/520476-cartoon-bee-clip-art>. (5/2019: no longer active)

Cartoon: 'Faith-Promises-Feelings' train was taken from the booklet "Good News" written by Bill Bright © 1970, 2015, used with kind permission of Campus Crusade for Christ Inc.

Bright Media Foundation. <http://www.cru.org/>.

Rainbow Explosion: (free download )

<http://www.free-hdwallpapers.com/wallpaper/nature/radial-rainbow/4847>. (5/2019: no longer active)

<http://www.freehdwallpapers.com/>

Photo: Potato Clock: Purchased at Radio Shack by author.

### 5. THE MYSTERY of the AGES--FOUND

Cartoon: Raggedy Teddy Bear: Purchased \$20 license

<http://www.oliviaandco.com/shop/wonder-bear#.UtxNvE4o5Ow>. (5/2019: no longer active)

Cartoon: Parachute Man: (Free clip art)

Shimmering Reflections quote courtesy of Dr. Evelyn Davis of SIL.

### 6. CALLED to MISSIONS! WHO US?

Photo: The Hodges holding the Dhao scarf: photo by the author.

Yellow triangle, public domain:

[www.clker.com/clipart-warning-exclamation-triangle.html](http://www.clker.com/clipart-warning-exclamation-triangle.html).

Photo: Buddha statuesintempleonJejudo.jpg-Wikimedia: Microsoft Clip-Art with WORD 2010

Cartoon: Turtle on a fence post: source unknown

Photo: Easter Sunrise: *'In glory He rose, In love He called, In faith we go'*

by kind permission and courtesy of Bruce Johnson, Director SIM, Serving in Mission.

### APPENDIX A

Clip-art: Happy bee and scraggly bee: Microsoft Clip-Art with WORD 2010

Photo: Onzui Ravine, Wikipedia Commons, Microsoft Clip-Art with WORD 2010

'Life's but a stepping stone' poem: *Devotion by Kim Quiggle, 8/03/17*

Puppet cartoon: Microsoft WORD Clip-ART.

Monkey eating banana cartoon. Googled 'free monkey clip-art'. Bing free images. (URL is 4 lines long)

Man with wheelbarrow. Googled 'wheelbarrow free clipart'. Bing free images. (URL is 4 lines long)

## APPENDIX B

Photo: TruroCathedralWest[1].jpg, Microsoft Word Clip-Art

Photo: Bluebird and rainbow: (5/2019: no longer active)

[http://growingbolder.com/media/living/beauty/blue\\_bird\\_rainbow\\_bmp\\_428276.html](http://growingbolder.com/media/living/beauty/blue_bird_rainbow_bmp_428276.html).

Photo: Microsoft Clip Art: Onzui Ravine, Wikipedia Commons.

Photo: David Coppedge and crew with their Cassini Space Probe that went to Saturn.

By kind permission and courtesy of David Coppedge. <http://crev.info>.

Photo: Joni Eareckson Tada: [http://www.joniandfriends.org/blog/category/jonis\\_posts/](http://www.joniandfriends.org/blog/category/jonis_posts/).

(5/2019: no longer active)

Photo: Pleiades (stars): (free download)

[www.freehdwallpapers.com/cauta.php?cauta=STARS&x=0&y=0](http://www.freehdwallpapers.com/cauta.php?cauta=STARS&x=0&y=0).

Donnie: by kind permission and courtesy: *Decision* magazine for September, 1991,

Charmaine Brazda, Billy Graham Evangelical Association.

Faith quote: [The Quote Garden: www.quote-garden.com/faith.html](http://www.quote-garden.com/faith.html). (5/2019: no longer active)

Author is unknown but there are many great quotes here.

Photo: <http://eoimages.gsfc.nasa.gov/images/imagerecords/57000/67723/glob>. (5/2019: no longer active)

Microsoft Word Clip-art

Personal permission from Dr. Evelyn Davis for citation CC: *Prayer and Reflections, Life Tasks: Strength for the Journey*, © SIL, Dallas, TX. (Also Page 45 states which quotes are in the public domain.)

## APPENDIX C

Photo: Sergeant Jacob DeShazar: U.S. Army, public domain.

Molech drawing: Wikipedia common license: wiki-offering-to-molech2.jpg

## APPENDIX D

Chief Tariri painting: kind permission of Lorrie Anderson, Bible translator to his headhunting tribe, the Candoshi-Shapra of Peru. (Peruvian artist painting, gift from Lorrie)

## APPENDIX E

Cartoon: Penguin, free clip-art from [www.cliparthut.com](http://www.cliparthut.com)

Cartoon: Roman Soldier: Word clip art

Example: Climber rappelling down to a cliff-side cave: adapted from a 2016 TV sermon by Rev. Earl Davis, interim pastor Viewmont Baptist Church, Hickory, NC.

Climber clip-art: Microsoft Word 2010 Clip Art

"Life, with His love, is God's gift to us ... " in text box adapted from –Leo Buscaglia

Photo: Microsoft Word Clip Art: Man and Child Walking Near Bushes During Daytime Free

Cartoon: Serge-ant: source unknown

Photo: 'Harry the hang-in-there' hamster' (my title): (free download)

## APPENDIX F-1

Photo: *Eye of God (Helix Nebula)*, Public News release (public domain),

<http://hubblesite.org/newscenter/archive/releases/2003/11/image/a/>.

**Credit:** NASA, NOAO, ESA, the Hubble Helix Nebula Team, M. Meixner (STScI), and T.A. Rector (NRAO)

Photo: Scientists only understand 4% of our universe, gravitational lensing evidence photo

NASA public domain: "Gravitationell-lins-4" by NASA, N. Benitez (JHU),

T. Broadhurst (Racah Institute of Physics/The Hebrew University), H. Ford (JHU), M. Clampin

(STScI), G. Hartig (STScI), G. Illingworth (UCO/Lick Observatory), the ACS Science Team and

ESA: <http://hubblesite.org/newscenter/newsdesk/archive/releases/2003/01/image/a/>.

Licensed under Public Domain Commons: -

<https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Gravitationell-lins-4.jpg#/media/File:Gravitationell-lins-4.jpg>.

Photo: James Clerk Maxwell: kind permission and courtesy of David Coppedge, <http://crev.info>.

Photo: Hedgehog baby: this former website, [rawnature.com](http://rawnature.com), may no longer exist.

As of 3/29/15 I discovered this website is up for sale.

Documented in *Hedgehog Site Up For Sale.jpg*

Photo: Orange seeds: <https://www.bing.com/images/search?view=...>

cdn2.freepik.com/free-photo/\_2886581.jpg (Googled: free clipart orange seeds)

Cartoon: Man at Computer: Word Clip-Art

Cartoon: Frog Prince: GL Stock Images, cthoman, Image 1014329, purchased.

Cartoon: Cell Phone Ancestry, by kind permission and courtesy of Dave Coverly:

[www.speedbump.com](http://www.speedbump.com).

## APPENDIX F-2

Photo: Cow with a map of the world on its hide. Courtesy of Creation Moments.com, 7/09/15

Subject: *Don't Have a Cow, Man!* <https://creationmoments.com/sermons/dont-have-a-cow-man/>

5-06-19:Notes: <https://creationmoments.com/node/5205>. Photo: Photoshop artist unknown.

Photo: Dr. Michael Behe and the author at an apologetics conference by kind permission of Dr. Behe.  
Photo: Fertilized Egg cell photo. Web blog owner granted permission to use the photo but did not want to be identified with a religious site.  
Photo: Shell Refueler: Original uploader, Lommer at en.wikipedia. Later version(s) were uploaded by Ian Dunster at en.wikipedia. Transferred from en.wikipedia. Licensed under CC BY-SA 3.0 via Commons.

[https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Shell\\_Refueller.JPG#/media/File:Shell\\_Refueller.JPG](https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Shell_Refueller.JPG#/media/File:Shell_Refueller.JPG).

Hemoglobin molecule and sub-structure diagrams: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hemoglobin>.

<https://commons.wikimedia.org/w/index.php?curid=2300973>

Wikipedia Common License (GNU) and Public Domain respectively

Glucose molecule by NEUROtiker, Public Domain:

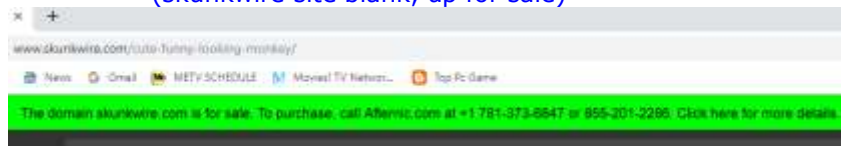
Insulin diagram: <https://k8irelandactive.com/2016/03/04/be-more-sensitive-to-insulin/>

Diagram of retina cone cell: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rod\\_cell](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rod_cell).

Creative Commons Attribution-Share Alike 3.0 Unported License

## APPENDIX G

Photo: Baby Orang Utan (free): <http://www.skunkwire.com/cute-funny-looking-monkey/>.  
(skunkwire site blank, up for sale)



Converting probability to odds:

[http://www.math-magic.com/probability/prob\\_to\\_odds.htm](http://www.math-magic.com/probability/prob_to_odds.htm). (5/2019 Up for sale)

How to Grow Your Delightful Spiritual Garden. Anonymous on Facebook, re-sequenced by the author.

Christ's Bell: Author unknown with a few tweaks by the author.

## APPENDIX H

All pictures are from Microsoft Word 2010 Clip-Art.

## EVIDENCE RESOURCES

Cartoon: Baloney Detector: by kind permission and courtesy of David Coppedge, *Creation-Evolution Headlines*, <https://crev.info>. This website's free subscription is a great way to keep up with the very latest creation and evolution discoveries. It also has a massive indexed archive of apologetic information and the latest discovered for both evolution and creation.

## Scriptures

NKV and NKJV: Thomas Nelson Publishers, Nashville, TN 37214

Single quotes are a condensed version, Double quotes are direct quotes.

Rev. 7/25/19 0050